"A book that is shut is but a block"

GOVT. OF INDIA
Department of Archaeology
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book clean and moving.

S. B., 148. N. DELHI.



ERRATA. us add ground at a) social

traces, and the the time of Shall and the State how could the

to the Experimences a tell may a rail away from the that affect of the trapellation of the which thought a same of an included the trapellation of the trapellation of

Page 9 (note), for "or at the end of a syllable" read "when connected with the preceding; or as a medial, when connected with the preceding and separate from the following letter."

" 193 for "siderian" read "sidereal."

" 228 " "ancient edifice" read "an ancient edifice."

" 231 " on read qx.

" 234 " "divinity of the Sidonians" read " gods of the Sidonians."

יי יי יי דעישא read אשישא.

In Vol. iv. No. 2.

Page 343. For "Edward" read "Edmund."

" xvii. Supply the name of John R. Bartlett in the list of Corporate Members.

be imported to supported by the originates fast they are not per the

planetty, the aword of ma

life of the Homeric age, contain but one disputed and doubtful allusion to the art of writing. And once more, a people who had wandered for ages almost round the Mediterranean, must have acquired a stock of geographical information, more extensive and accurate than that represented in the poems of Homer. If, for instance, the Ionians were conversant with the Delta of the Nile for several centuries, and as late as the time of Shishak, about 950, how could the author of the Odyssey place the island of Pharos, which stood close to the Egyptian coast, a full day's sail away from it? And what shall we say of the "speciosa miracula" which Horace admires, "Antiphaten, Scyllamque, et cum Cyclope Charybdin?" How could such notions prevail among a people, who had colonized western Sicily and western Italy as far up as the Tiber, and even the remoter island of Sardinia?

We are aware, that the foregoing discussion does very imperfect justice to a theory, the strength of which, in its author's own view, lies not in a few decisive arguments, but in the simple, natural connection, which it gives to many scattered facts. We wish, also, to acknowledge, in the fullest manner, the ability and learning with which it is supported. We admit that it throws light upon important points in Greek antiquity. We cannot, however, help feeling, that the case is not yet made out in its favor, and that it would be unsafe to accept it, until further discussion and the progress of knowledge shall have weakened the objections which now present themselves, and set the evidence for it in a clearer light. It is just to add, that this theory is propounded by its author with all becoming modesty. He recognizes the obscurities and perplexities which environ his subject; and declares that his object in publishing his views, is to determine from the discussion they call out, how far he can himself hold fast to them as established truth. His views may be imperfectly supported by the evidence: but they are not put forward with that offensive dogmatism, which is perhaps nowhere more common than in fields like this, where hardly anything whatever can be known with certainty.

the ancient Greek mind. Why then should Athenians, returning to that mother country, forget the respect and attachment which they had before cherished! why should they forget their original connection with a country which had now become their own home? If in everything else the tradition lost its hold upon these primitive Ionians, we should expect, that it would have retained them in connection with the Ionian Migration. How could it carry these wanderers across the Aegean, without remembering the capital circumstance, that they went, not to aliens or enemies, but to their own friends, countrymen and kindred? There is a singular unanimity in this forgetfulness. Among a large number of cities, scattered along a wide extent of sea-coast, we might have expected, that some one at least would remember a fact so important in its early history. But there is no single exception to the general obliviousness. It has a greater extent, indeed, than we have yet noticed; the Cyclades share in it. If the view of Curtius be true, these islands must have received their Greek population from the East, from Asia Minor. But here again tradition is no less distinct and uniform in referring the beginnings of Greek occupancy to colonization from the west, from

European Greece.

I will only notice further some particulars in the early Epic literature, which seem inconsistent with this theory. Almost all critics are agreed now in referring the Homeric poems to a date earlier than the year 800. They were composed then within two centuries from the Ionian Migration, perhaps not more than a century after that event. If we were to put the Ionian Migration at about 950, and the composition of the Iliad and Odyssey at about 850, these dates would perhaps correspond as nearly to the collective probabilities of the case, as any that could be assigned. Now the remarkable absence of allusions to Ionia, its places and people, in the Iliad and Odyssey, which does not seem to be fully accounted for by the Achaean subjects and Aeolian scenes of those poems, is naturally explained by the recent arrival of the Ionians in that country. Their beginnings in Asia were still matters of historic recollection; there was still a conscious newness about their places and their doings, which interposed a wide gulf between them and the ancient traditions of Achaeans and Dardans. But the theory of Curtius supplies an immemorial past for the Ionians in Asia, and thus renders the phenomenon in question far more difficult of explanation. Again, a people who had for centuries followed the Phoenicians in a career of maritime enterprise, competing with them and in many places supplanting them as traders, must have become familiar with the use of letters: and this, if true, would render still more unaccountable the fact, already sufficiently perplexing, that these two long poems, with their innumerable references to everything in the public and private

57

The strong point of this theory is the fact of its affording an explanation for the peculiar position which the Ionians appear to have had in early Greece. The argument may be stated thus. A people scattered far and wide along the sea coast, and found in the interior only where they might have come by following a river-course back from the sea-such a people are not likely to have reached their seats by an overland emigration. The Ionians in Greece, then, must have come there by sea, and in all probability from the east; immediately from the Aegean islands, remotely from Asia Minor. But it is not likely, that a whole people settled on the Asiatic coast would a float over the sea in this way. Their wide diffusion in Greece makes it probable, that there were successive expeditions, with a considerable interval of time from first to last. As they were thus established in large numbers and for a long time on the coast of Asia, it is likely that a numerous people remained there, after the last expedition set sail toward Greece; enough to maintain themselves in that position, until after the lapse of centuries, they welcomed back their returning brethren from the west. I will not stop to criticise the probabilities in this argument. But I must not close without observing, that, whatever advantages the theory under consideration may give us in explaining the early times of Greece, they are not gained without drawback : we encumber ourselves with some new and serious difficulties. One of these has been already alluded to; the complete forgetfulness of Greek tradition as to the existence of these primitive Ionians of Asia. If the tradition, as our author holds, has preserved some memory of their names and actions, it has at any rate forgotten that they were Ionians. This is the more strange, as the national pride of Ionians, living and flourishing in the same seats, might naturally have clung with more tenacity to the ancient renown of their ancestors. Why should they give up their own Cecrops and Danaus and Cadmus to the Egyptians and Phoenicians? Why should they remember so much about their early neighbors, and nothing about their early selves! Why should they remember so much about Dardanians, Phrygians, Lycians, Carians in western Asia, and nothing about Ionians there? Or why should they remember so much about Ionians in Attica and Peloponnesus, and nothing about that people in their own Asia Minor? Why should a people whose forefathers, born on the same soil, had run a career of wide-reaching activity and enterprise, forget its connection with those forefathers, and attach itself instead to the distant and less distinguished ancestors of a part only of its members? Athens, according to this view, was the daughter of an Asiatic mother. So long as there were Ionians in Asia, the Athenians must have looked to them as colonists to the inhabitants of the mother country, with feelings of respectful attachment, which were peculiarly strong in

considerable portion of its citizens in a war with the Carians, it received a large reinforcement from Miletus, headed by a son of Neileus, the Ionian founder of the latter city. Iasus, then, appears in the same class with other Greek cities of Asia, which referred their origin to European Greece: there can be no reason, why it should be distinguished from the rest, as furnishing clearer evidence of a

primitive Ionian population in western Asia.

Curtius argues from the immediate and great prosperity of the settlements established by the Ionian Migration, that they could not have been planted among an alien people, on coasts before occupied only by barbarians. But the Greek cities of Sicily and Southern Italy were founded centuries later in regions where the previous inhabitants were entirely and unquestionably barbarian: yet, notwithstanding this original disadvantage, such was their progress, that in the time of Xerxes, Hiero of Syracuse was the greatest power in the independent Grecian world, and perhaps a match for all others put together. And later, we find the Greeks of Sicily maintaining their ground, though with difficulty, in a long continued struggle against the Carthaginians, a power which proved almost an overmatch for Rome, when mistress of all Italy. Our author evidently feels that this parallel progress of the Italiot Greeks tells against his argument: and, to weaken its force, asserts that the progress of the Asiatic Ionians was different and more remarkable in three particulars. 1. They established a confederacy of their cities. But the want of cooperation in the other case serves rather to increase the marvel. 2. They developed a civilization more purely Hellenic. This, however, may be accounted for by the fact, which probably all would admit, that the barbarians of western Asia Minor were much more like the Greeks than the barbarians of Southern Italy and Sicily; so that the extraneous influences were more nearly Hellenic in the former case than in the latter. Nor does this general similarity of Carians, Lycians, Phrygians, &c., to the Greeks require us to suppose that they had been in previous uninterrupted communication with Greeks on the same shores, as our author assumes. He maintains, in fact, that the two sections of the Greek people preserved their essential identity notwithstanding a separation for centuries by the waters of the Aegean. 3. The Ionians of Asia made higher attainments in art and literature. True: but would the colonists of Sicily have gone higher in these respects, if on their first landing they had found the island half peopled by their countrymen? Their attainments, in fact, if inferior to those of the Ionians, may compare with the attainments of Dorians and Aeolians in Asia, though these latter, as Curtius supposes, had the advantage of settling among an old established population of their countrymen.

by the natives of the country; who may have abandoned them before the time of the Ionian colonization; or, in other instances, may have been dispossessed and driven out by the colonists themselves; or, again, may have remained where they were, submitting to the

new-comers and fusing with them into one community.

Again, he urges that the worship of Apollo Didymaeus in his sanctuary near Miletus-a worship common to all the Ioniansappears in tradition as older than the planting of the Ionian colony in Miletus. In like manner, the Delian sanctuary of Apollo was the Mother-sanctuary for all the stations of Apollo-worship in Greece, and must therefore have existed earlier than the Ionian Migration, though tradition very distinctly represents the island of Delos as having at that time received its Greek population in place of the Carians, its earlier inhabitants. I would not say there is no force in the argument derived from these facts. Yet the question must be raised; granting, in accordance with the tradition, the primitive antiquity of these places as stations of Apollo worship, how far may we infer, what is not expressed in the tradition, that the primitive worshippers were Ionians! Curtius himself does not suppose that the worship of Apollo was confined to the Greeks: he will not venture to say, that it originated with them; he believes it to have been extensively diffused among the non-Hellenic tribes of western Asia. There is no strong improbability against the supposition, that the Ionians, instead of founding the establishments referred to, were only the successors of their founders. It is well known that the nations of antiquity regarded it as a point of great importance to keep up local rites of worship even in conquered places. Curtius mentions, that when the Ionians were driven out by the Achaeans from northern Peloponnesus, some of their families were retained in Helice in order to continue there the former worship of Poseidon. And, apart from this general feeling, the Ionians were little likely to neglect any old and celebrated sanctuary of Apollo, a divinity whom they honored with peculiar veneration.

For further proof of primitive Ionian occupancy, we find our author referring to the city of Iasus, situated on a small island near the coast of Caria. No tradition, he observes, was able to refer this Carian place to any settlement proceeding from the west, and yet Iasus with its entire environment was, in more than name alone, a genuine, primitive portion of Ionia. Now the Greek character of this place, and even its Ionian character, will be readily admitted. But we know not how to explain the statement, that no tradition could refer it to a settlement proceeding from the west. For Polybius (xvi. 11), in a passage which we can imagine no reason for discrediting, tella us expressly, that Iasus, according to the assertion of its people, was settled by a colony of Argives, though, having afterwards lost a

from the fact, that in a Theban tomb the bearers of the two Egyptian shields are plainly distinguished from the other seven by their red complexion and peculiar hair-dress. These are the statements. If they really prove that Ionian settlements were made in Egypt as early as fourteen or fifteen centuries before Christ, they doubtless serve to confirm the theory of Curtius. It does not appear, indeed, that the monuments give any direct indication as to what part of the world these Uinen (if they are rightly read so) come from. But it is certainly more probable, that such Ionian settlements, if actually made in Egypt, should have been made from Asia Minor, than from European Greece. But we seem to have here, what may eventually turn out to be a good argument, rather than what we can now receive and rely upon as such. Even Curtius does not appear to expeet that it will produce general conviction. "Every first attempt," he says, "to connect Greek and Egyptian history with one another, to supplement the beginnings of one by materials drawn from the other, must, however cautiously undertaken, encounter manifold objection, consisting either in a vague and general want of confidence, or in scientific doubts as to the correctness of the method and the certainty of the facts made use of." In the present case our suspicions are stronger from the obscurity which rests on other names of conquered nations found upon the monuments of these ancient Pharaohs; hardly two or three of them, it is said, have been identified with certainty. We must add, however, that Lepsius accepts without hesitation the views of Curtius upon this point: he has no doubt that the name in question refers to Ionian Greeks settled in Egypt, "so that as early as the sixteenth and fifteenth centuries, Ionians, that is, a part at least, a considerable colony of that people were dependent on the Egyptian sovereigns."

We turn now from Oriental testimonies to inquire how far the known facts of Grecian history support the theory in question. Curtius asserts, that in particular localities on the coast of Asia and the neighboring islands, there are traces of Ionian occupancy before the time of the Ionian Migration. It is to be regretted that he has not drawn out more at length this part of his argument. As it is, the few brief indications which he gives hardly suffice to make a definite and satisfactory impression. Miletus and Ephesus, he says, were even in name nothing but renewals of older settlements; and the same fact is expressly attested in regard to Erythrae, Chios and Samos. Admitting now the correctness of these traditionary notices, granting that the places mentioned were inhabited before the Ionian Migration, are we authorized to assume, what is not contained in the traditions, that these earlier occupants were Ionians? What more natural than to find, that among the numerous places settled by these colonists from Europe, some had been previously occupied

pian Sea. Yet it is certain, that even the first invading hordes, which entered Europe under the successors of Genghiz Khan, were not composed wholly nor principally of Tartars properly so called. Because the French give the name of Allemands to all the Germans, it surely does not follow that their ancestors for a long time were acquainted with no Germans except those included in the Alemannic confederacy. As to the case in hand, we can only say (assuming that the Phoenicians were the first who used Ionian for Greek), that either the Ionians were the first Greeks known to the Phoenicians, or they were somehow, from greater proximity, or closer intercourse, or some one of many other possible reasons, more prominently present to the view of the Phoenicians, when this use of the

name originated.

A second testimony is supposed to be furnished by early Egyptian records. On the celebrated Rosetta stone and on other monuments of the Macedonian and Roman periods, the idea "Greek" is represented by a hieroglyphic group, consisting first, of three papyrus plants standing side by side, and secondly, of three baskets placed one above another. These elements, it is said, give the meaning "Lords of the North." The pronunciation of the group, as determined by a comparison of the demotic characters in the Rosetta inscription, is said to be unquestionably Uinen, which we have just seen to be the Coptic name for the Greeks. Now the same hieroglyphic group is found upon a series of monuments belonging to the early Pharaohs, and always in reference to a people described as subject to the kings of Egypt. Of these kings some-as Amenophis II, Sethos I or Sesonchis I-belong to the great heroic dynasties of Thebes, the eighteenth and nineteenth dynasties, in the fifteenth and fourteenth centuries: others to the twenty-second dynasty and the tenth century, as Sesonchis, the Shishak of the Old Testament, the conqueror of Jerusalem. It would seem, therefore, that several of the early Egyptian sovereigns claimed to be masters of the Uinen, Ionians or Greeks. Curtius does not suppose, what indeed would be in the highest degree improbable, that these records refer to expeditions by sea or land sent out from Egypt to the western border of Asia Minor, and there subduing or pretending to subdue the Ionian population of the country. He considers them as referring to Ionians of Egypt, settled in the Delta of the Nile, who may at various times have been attacked and perhaps reduced to submission, more or less complete, by native sovereigns of the country. It appears from the researches of Lepsius, that this name belongs to a group containing nine names of nations, which recur in the same fixed order, the supposed Uinen standing first among them, and Egypt itself, upper and lower, being included in the series. That all the others beside Egypt belong to foreign nations is inferred

explained on any other supposition. But it is confessedly true, that the traditions conveyed no such idea to the ancient Greeks who had them; certainly not, after they had assumed the forms in which

they have come down to us.

· In looking at the evidence on which our author relies, to sustain a proposition of which no memory is found in the most ancient literature and tradition of Greece, it is natural to inquire first, whether any testimony can be gleaned from early Oriental sources. Here Curtius finds a confirmation of his views in the name given to the Greeks by all the ancient nations of the East. It is well known that the common form lores is made by a contraction of the earlier 'Moves; and there is great reason to believe that this latter form had originally a medial Digamma and was pronounced 'IdFores, sing, The For. Now the Greeks are called by the Indians Javanas, by the Hebrews Javan, by the Persians Juna or Jauna, in Aramaic Jaunojo, in Arabie Jaunani, in Armenian Juin, and in Coptic Uinin. It can hardly be doubted, that these are all forms of one and the same name; and that this is no other than 'laFor or 'laFores, the special name of the Ionian Greeks. We may not unreasonably suppose, that it was the Phoenicians who first applied this name as a common designation for the whole Greek people, and that the widely-extended commerce of the Phoenicians was the means of its diffusion throughout Asia. It is further probable, that the Phoenicians had the name in this use of it before the time of the Ionian Migration. We find it in the tenth chapter of the book of Genesis, in the list of Noachids, where it undoubtedly refers, not to a part of the Greeks, but to the whole people. This document, if of Mosaic origin, is at least thirteen centuries older than the Christian Era: while even among those who deny its Mosaic origin, it is allowed by all the sounder critics to be older than the division of the Hebrew Monarchy. But this occurred about 1000 B.C., perhaps at the same time with the Ionian Migration, probably not later than that event. What shall we conclude, then, from this early use of the Ionian name as a designation for the whole Hellenic people? Curtius replies-the fact is inexplicable unless we assume, that of all the Grecian tribes the Ionian was the first which became known to the Orientals; it must have existed as their neighbor and carried on intercourse with them by land and water, not simply as early or a little earlier than Aeolians and Dorians, but long before all other Greeks. It appears to me that this language overstates the case. On the coast of Syria at the present day all Europeans are Franks. Yet other nations of Europe beside the French were represented in the first crusade, and still more in the second, which, followed only a half century later. On the other hand, the Europeans have given the common name of Tartars to the nomadic tribes east of the Cascolonization; their mythic heroes, as Jason and Sisyphus, are representatives of Asiatic culture.

Second, the Achaeans are likewise in many ways closely connected with the Ionians, as the mythus intimates, when it makes both Ion and Achaeus sons of Apollo. Yet the military exaltation of the Achaeans is the first great blow to Ionian preponderance in Greece. While the Achaeans of Phthiotis press on toward the sea coast of Thessaly, the other branch of that people conquer the Peloponnesus, form new states there hostile to the Ionians, whom they expel from Troezen and other parts of Argolis, and with fleets of their own begin those struggles with the tribes of Asia Minor, which are commemorated in the legends of the Trojan war—a war in which the Ionian peoples, as the Athenians, take scarcely any part, while heroes akin to the Ionians, as Palamedes and Odysseus, enter into it with reluctance.

Third, the Dorians, a people much more alien to the Ionians and much more independent of their influence; a people who adhere with tenacity to their original peculiarities of life and character; in them was first seen the full native vigor of the mountain tribes. Breaking up from their seats in Mt. Octa, they cross the Corinthian Gulf, by a gradual conquest overthrow the Achaean power, and make themselves masters of nearly all Peloponnesus. As they advance, the Ionians everywhere lose ground; on all sides they are driven back to their ships: and now begins a great retreat of the Ionians from their settlements in the west; a great return to their mother country on the east of the Aegean Sea. Only in Attica do they at last succeed in making an effectual stand; thus maintaining a foothold in European Greece, and preventing Hellenic history from being again divided, as it had been, ages before, between two distinct races upon opposite sides of the Aegean. Even in Asia Minor they are not by themselves. Achaean and Dorian colonies reproduce there the collisions of western Greece, keeping up a restless activity of mind, by which Ionian art is stimulated to a rapid development, until it puts forth its fairest blossom in the Homeric Epos. Still in the Dorian and Aeolian districts of Asia Minor, the basis of population remained essentially Ionian: and in the Ionian revolt, as it is called, the whole people of the western coast, from Lycia to the Propontis, rose as one people against the barbarian conqueror.

Such is the theory of this ingenious and strikingly written essay. Before taking up any points in the argument on which it rests, we must observe that this idea of Ionians in Asia previous to the Ionian Migration, is wholly foreign to the mythic or semi-historical traditions of the Greeks themselves. It may be shown, perhaps, that in those traditions there are statements which imply the existence of a primitive Ionian people in that region; statements which cannot be

The most conspicuous result is the formation of the celebrated Amphictyonic League, the oldest and largest and most influential of the Grecian Amphietyonies. It is a religious association of Thessalian tribes (neighbors to one another, 'Augustions;) for the common worship of the god Apollo. The Ionians, after being for a long time worshippers preëminently of the god Poseidon, of whom the western Greeks at that time knew as little as of the element he ruled, had in their eastern home received the Apollo-worship-a new religion, as Curtius calls it, which every where exercised a transforming and inspiring influence on its converts. Zealously devoted to its propagation, they introduced it among their brethren of Thessaly. Thus in the Amphietyonic deity we find a proof of Ionian influence; which appears further in the frequently-recurring Ionian number twelve, as that of the confederate tribes. The Amphictyonic League, though primarily a religious organization, expressed political aspirations, and worked toward political results. It produced a feeling of closer union and of common brotherhood among its members, which led to the adoption of the Hellenic name as a common designation for the united Amphictyonic people. Hellen in the myths is either father or brother of Amphictyon. Hence the tribes of Macedonia and Epirus, however closely resembling the Hellenes, never received the Hellenic name, which belongs only to the Amphictyonic tribes, and the districts which come under their control or influence.

Although Ionian influence, as we have seen, was predominant in the origin of the Delphic Amphictyony, that first reunion and organization of the Greek races, yet the relative weight of parties did not always remain the same. A reaction at length commenced—a reaction of the older tribes in the interior against the newer occupants of the sea board—of the western Greeks against their emigrant brethren from the east. The ruder tribes of Thessaly, receiving the imported civilization of the Ionians, come at length to feel themselves the equals of their late instructors, and can no longer brook the ascendancy to which they at first submitted. Hence a decided revolution in the political state of Greece, proceeding from Thessaly, and having for its ultimate result the almost complete expulsion of the Ionians from European Greece. But this revolution is the work of ages, and has its different epochs, according to the different races,

who successively appear to carry it forward.

First, the Aeolians, who are represented in the traditions as arising from a mixture of the inland tribes with the maritime population of the sea board. Though in fact supplanting the Ionians, they do not appear as their opponents or even as their rivals. The Aeolids are themselves bearers of Ionian cultivation and the worship of Poscidon; their royal seats, as Ioleos and Corinth, are stations of Ionian

Throughout the course of these migrations the Ionians carry with them the culture of the vine and the worship of the wine-god Dionysus. Every where we find them settling along the coasts, and showing an especial preference for the rich, though marshy, alluvium at the mouth of rivers. Occasionally, however, they follow up a rivervalley quite into the interior of a district, as in Boeotia, where the Asopus leads them to the inland city of Thebes. Everywhere wandering in ships, they wander without women; and hence their colonization appears as the establishment of a few foreign settlers among a native population, whom they do not attempt to dispossess, but exercise over them the natural ascendancy of superior ability and civilization. Thus in Attica there is no change of population: the primitive people, whom Greek tradition names Pelasgi, remain in their old seats, unchanged except as they are civilized, lonized by the foreigners from Asia. The Egyptian Cecrops, the mythic author of civilization in Attica, is no proper Egyptian, but an Ionian, who had become domiciled in Egypt. A similar view is taken of Danaus the Egyptian founder of Argos. These traditions of early connections between Egypt and Greece are, in the view of Curtius, too deeply rooted and too widely ramified, to have sprung up, as K. O. Müller assumed, after the comparatively recent period when the Egyptians under Psammetichus came into closer relations with the Greeks. Yet on the other hand, it seems equally evident, that no influence strictly and properly Egyptian, could have had a leading part in moulding the civilization, substantially homogeneous and independent, of early Greece. The difficulty finds its solution in the view. that these Egyptian settlers, who figure in tradition, were Ionians, who had found a residence in Egypt and came from thence to Greece, The Phoenician Cadmus and his colonization of Thebes are treated in the same way. Curtius does not deny indeed, that there were in Greece, to a greater or less extent, ancient settlements of native Phoenicians; but he maintains confidently that no such alien Semitic settlers could have gained historic importance as founders of royal or sacerdotal families. It is of course still easier to connect the Phrygian Pelops, and his immigration into the peninsula which took his name, with the colonial extension of the Ionian race. The Argonautic expedition is a story of Ionian adventure. Its leader, who comes into Thessaly an unknown wanderer, bears a name, Jason 'Iaowr, which stamps him as Ionian: and its Thessalian starting-point, Ioleos or Iaoleos, is with great probability explained as meaning 'the naval station of the Ionians.'

Here on the coast of Thessaly the Ionians are again brought into contact with their brethren of Aeolo-Dorian descent. After a local separation of generations and centuries, these long-sundered sections of the Grecian people are brought once more into local connection. connected here by proximity and by intercourse with other tribes, such as the Dardanians, Lycians, Carians, Leleges, from whom in fact they are not separated by any broad lines of ethnical distinction. Under these circumstances they enter upon a career of activity and culture, which appears to have received its impulse from the Phoenicians and to have been shared in, more or less, by the other tribes just mentioned. Visited at first by the Phoenicians for the purposes of trade, they soon learned from them the art of navigation, and set up business on their own account, as the rivals of their late masters. Associated with the Phoenicians in many parts of the Aegean, and supplanting them in others, they have become inextricably confused with them in the traditions of the Greeks. The Ionian myth which represents Byblus, one of the oldest Phoenician cities, as the daughter of Miletus, shows perhaps that the Ionians gained a foothold even on the coast of Syria; at any rate it is a proof of close connection between these two maritime peoples. There is clearer evidence to show that the Ionians visited the coast of Egypt, and even established settlements, more or less permanent, in the marshy Delta of the Nile. This was regarded by the Egyptians themselves almost as foreign territory; since we find that Psammetichus-the same prince, who, perhaps a thousand years later, opened the whole country to the Greeks-when banished from Egypt, took refuge in the Delta. And the men of brass, who were announced to Psammetichus, while there, as having just made their appearance, and who proved to be a party of Ionian rovers recently landed, were but a specimen of their own countrymen, who, a thousand years earlier, made repeated descents upon the same coast for the mingled purposes of traffic and plunder. But the attention of the Ionians was naturally directed more to the west. Crossing the Aegean Sea, they occupy first the Cyclades, and then Euboea and Attica. They establish their settlements on the Pagasaean Gulf, and on both sides of the Euripus. Traces of them are found along the whole eastern coast of Peloponnesus, in Corinth, Epidaurus, Troezen, Argos, and even in the island of Cythera. Passing over the Isthmus, they appear in the Corinthian Gulf, where we find them in southern Phocis, and much more in northern Peloponnesus, in the district afterward called Achaia. From thence they spread southward over Elis and Messene in western Peloponnesus: and having thus reached the Ionian Sea, they occupy the Ithacan islands, and extend themselves northward to the island of Corcyra, and the coasts of Epirus and Illyria. More than this: in the mythic wanderings of Aeneas, Curtius would recognize a traditionary representation of Ionian settlement, which must then have stretched along the western coast of Italy from Eryx to the mouth of the Tiber. Even in Sardinia, he considers the name of a people called the Iolaeans, and of their founder Iolaes, as giving evidence of early Ionian colonization.

Greece—and not only that, but a land which had never ceased to be occupied by the same race, by a people of Ionian name and lineage. They found on arriving in Asia, not only Dardanians, Carians, Lycians and other tribes, which Curtius regards as differing not very widely from Ionians in language and culture: but they found there Ionians, identified with themselves by virtue of the common name, origin and traditions. They found in fact the Ionians—the principal branch as well as the elder of their race—who in these Asiatic seats had risen to a height of achievement and reputation, not yet equalled by any Greeks of Europe. Let us, however, trace the theory more in detail, going back to its remote starting point in the past, beyond the reach of history, beyond the reach even of mythus, where only ethnographic science can furnish any glimmering of light.

The primitive Arian colonization, flowing westward from Armenia into Asia Minor, filled the elevated plateaux of that peninsula with Phrygian races. Here the Greeks, long identified with the Phrygian stock, first begin to be distinguished as Greeks, with a stamp and nationality of their own. Here they develope what must be considered as the common type of Hellenism in language and character. But almost from the beginning they divide themselves into two great sections. The one is that afterwards known in history as the Ionian. The other includes the remaining fractions of the Greek nation: we might call it Hellenic in a narrower sense, as being first to assume the Hellenic name: it is sometimes called Acolo-Dorian from the designations of its leading members in the historic period. After a time these sections part company. The latter or Hellenic section break up from Asia, cross the Hellespont and Propontis, and find new seats in the mountains of Thrace and Macedonia. Here they remain in isolated Alpine valleys, forming their separate local constitutions, until, dislodged by new movements of population, and pressed southward, they make their appearance in different masses, as Aeolians, Dorians, Achaeans, in Northern Greece. Here again in the course of time new causes arise, which carry portions at least of these tribes still further in the same direction, into Central and Southern Greece. Hence the occupation of Peloponnesus by the Achaeans, whom the Homeric poems represent to us as seated in that territory and exercising full ascendancy. And hence too the later and far more important conquest of the same territory by the Dorians and their auxilaries.

The Ionians meanwhile remain in Asia Minor, but no longer in the highlands of the interior. Descending gradually along the great river valleys, they at length reach the Aegean sea, and then spreading themselves northward and southward, occupy the whole western coast—possessing thus a territory distinguished alike for the richness of its soil, and the genial beauty of its climate. They are closely

devotion of their king Codrus, they gave up the enterprise and returned home. The Athenians on the death of Codrus abolished the kingship; but his descendants for several generations held the supreme power as archons for life. His two sons, Medon and Neileus, having quarreled about the succession, the Delphian oracle decided in favor of the former; whereupon the latter, affronted at the preference, resolved to seek a new home. There were at this moment many dispossessed sections of Greeks, and an adventitious population accumulated in Athens, who were anxious for settlements beyond sea. The expeditions which now set forth to cross the Aegean, chiefly under the conduct of members of the Codrid family, composed collectively the memorable Ionic Emigration, of which the Ionians, recently expelled from Peloponnesus, formed only a part; for we hear of many quite distinct races, some renowned in legend, who withdrew from Greece amidst this assemblage of colonists. The Kadmeians, the Minyae of Orchomenus, the Abantes of Euboea, the Dryopes; the Molossi, the Phokians, the Boeotians, the Arcadian Pelasgians, and even the Dorians of Epidaurus-are represented as furnishing each a proportion of the crews of those emigrant vessels. At the same time other mythic families beside the Codrids, the lineage of Neleus and Nestor, took part in the expedition. Herodotus mentions Lykian chiefs, descendants of Glaukus, and Pausanias tells us of Philotas a descendant of Peneleos, who went at the head of a body of Thebans. Prokles, the chief who conducted the Ionic emigrants from Epidaurus to Samos, was said to be of the lineage of Ion son of Xuthus. The results were not unworthy of this great gathering of chiefs and races. The Cyclades were colonized, as also the large islands of Samos and Chios near the Asiatic shore, while ten different cities on the coast of Asia Minor, from Miletus on the south to Phokaea on the north, were founded, and all adopted the Ionic name. Athens was the metropolis or mother city of all of them: Androklus and Neileus, the Oekists of Ephesus and Miletus, and probably other Oekists also, started from the Prytaneium at Athens with those solemnities religious and political, which usually marked the departure of a swarm of Grecian colonists." Such is the traditional account. The main fact contained in it, may be regarded as certain -that after the Dorian conquest of southern Greece and in consequence of that event, large bodies of Greeks, the most important part of them Ionians, set forth, chiefly from the coast of Attica, to cross the Aegean sea. The time of this migration may be set down by a loose approximation at 1000 years before our Era.

Now the principal thesis of Curtius in his Essay, is this; that in the migration just described, the Ionians of Greece were going home, to their own country and kindred. It was the returning emigration to a land, from which, ages before, their fathers had passed over into III. THE IONIANS BEFORE THE IONIAN MIGRATION.

(Read before the Society, Oct. 9, 1856.)

Die Ionier vor der Ionischen Wanderung, von Ernst Curtius. Berlin, 1855. 8vo. pp. 56.

The name of Ernst Curtius is well known to American scholars from his excellent volumes on the geography of Peloponnesus, as well as several smaller works. His essay, published last year under the title above given, presents novel and interesting views in regard to the earliest times of Greece. I propose in this article to give a brief statement of those views, with some criticism of the arguments by which they are supported. It will appear as I proceed that the subject, though belonging to Greek history, is one which has its

claims upon the attention of an Oriental Society.

At the outset of authentic Greek history, we find the western coast of Asia Minor, with the neighboring islands, occupied by Greeks, undoubted members of the Hellenic body. Of these the largest portion, extending on the mainland from the mouth of the Hermus to that of the Maeander, and holding the important islands of Chios and Samos, called themselves Ionians-a name which belonged to them in common with the inhabitants of Attica and Euboes on the west of the Aegean, as well as the island group of the Cyclades in the centre of that sea. The Asiatic Ionians, after passing through a long career of independence and prosperity, were incorporated about 550 B. C. into the kingdom of the Lydian Croesus, along with which they came only a few years later into the more comprehensive and permanent empire of the Persian Cyrus. This was the close of their independent existence. For its commencement we must go back to the mythic period-at least to a period lying on the debatable ground between history and mythus. In the traditions of the Greeks as to their own early times, we find the origin of the Asiatic Ionians traced up to an ancient colonization from the west, by emigrants who came from European Greece. This emigration is represented as one consequence, among many, of the great event, which stands on the threshhold of Greek history, itself obscurely seen, but sufficiently recognized as the cause or occasion of almost all we see in early Greece—the invasion and conquest of Peloponnesus by the Dorians. The story is briefly this: I condense from Grote. "A multitude of refugees from various parts of Greece, fleeing before the Dorian invaders, sought shelter in Attica. Alarmed by the growing population of that territory, the Dorians of Peloponnesus marched against it with a powerful army; but finding that victory had been assured to the Athenians by the generous selfclicks proposed by Rev. Mr. Schreuder [see as above, p. 436], and by Prof. Gibbs [do., p. 472], and in the Arabic letters suggested by

the latter [do., p. 470].

Against the method of indicating the differences of the letters by means of marks or dots detached from them, and placed above or below them, I have the objection to make, that this easily gives rise to difficulties. It is known that in our ordinary writing the dot over the letter i is often omitted; this is, it is true, but a very slight inconvenience, because i is in our alphabet the only letter provided with a dot. But if we take notice of the Arabic mode of writing, in which numerous discritical points are employed, we see that the omission or the placing wrongly of these points often causes great embarrassment. We see that conscientious writers, in order to prevent misunderstandings, after a proper name, ordinarily describe at great length the mode in which it is to be written. We should expose the Africans to like difficulties, if we should encumber their alphabet with too many points and marks. I regard as preferable lined letters (des lettres barrées), even crossed by two lines, if necessary. Such letters are already in use in many alphabets, as the Lettish, the Lapp, and the Norwegian. [The instances cited are necessarily omitted.

As to the clicks, Messrs. Grout and Gibbs propose four varieties of form for each of them. I do not doubt the existence of that number of perceptible varieties of sound, but I doubt the necessity of making use of so many signs in order to express them all. It is the case in every language that a letter exhibits certain differences of pronunciation, caused by its contact with other letters, but it may nevertheless always be written with the same sign, without leading to confusion. If the varieties of the clicks have this origin, it is superfluous to multiply signs for them. If, on the other hand, there are in these languages words, or forms of words, which would be confounded, if the signs of the clicks were not varied, I acknowl-

edge that it would be necessary to vary them.

2nd. That certain slight additions to the ordinary letters should be employed to express the sounds which approach those of these letters, but are not identical with them.

3rd. That simple signs are to be made use of to express simple sounds, and that accordingly the complex signs which have been

wont to be used for this purpose should be avoided.

The points which still remain undecided are:

1st. The form of the additions to be made to the letters which express sounds resembling those of the African languages.

2nd. The form and number of the letters which shall be used to

express African sounds unknown to the ordinary alphabet.

In order to make known my opinion with regard to these two points, I will pass in review the attempts of the writers who are known to me, omitting the letters about which opinions are already

agreed.

Here follows, in the original, a table giving the different characters proposed by Rev. Messrs. Schreuder, Krapf, and Grout, and by Prof. Gibbs, to represent certain sounds in the African languages, and likewise those which the author himself would prefer to see employed. The type necessary for expressing the latter not having been provided, it is not possible to give the table here. The signs approved by the author are for the most part those proposed by Rev. Mr. Grout (see this Journal, vol. iii. p. 465, etc.), the following only being exceptions: for the aspirated lingual mutes he would use the Anglo Saxon characters recommended by Prof. Gibbs (see as above, p. 471); for the click c he proposes a character which nearly resembles z of the common German current hand; for the click q. the same sign with a prefixed straight mark, constituting a part of it; for the click x the same sign, as last modified, with the addition of a horizontal mark across the tail of the letter; for ij, (as above, p. 465, No. 16) he proposes fi; for the sound of ch in church, c; for j (as above, No. 17), g with a horizontal mark across the tail of the letter; for k or k (No. 20), k with a line drawn at right angles across its lower slanting limb; for k (No. 19), the same letter with a horizontal line across its upper portion; for [(No. 22), I with a wave-line (') across it; for I (No. 23), I with two such lines across it; for r (No. 33), r with a horizontal line drawn through it; for s, etc. (as above, p. 466, No. 35), a long s (1) with a wave-line across it.]

It is to be hoped that the South-Africans will some day rise high enough in the scale of civilization to be able to write their languages; and therefore, in constructing an alphabet for them, we must not lose sight of the fact that it is intended as well for writing as for printing: the letters ought, then, to have such forms that they may flow easily from the pen, and connect without difficulty with one another. But this is a quality which is wanting in the signs for the

of every letter, and of every flaw in the stone, are represented with the greatest exactness. These fac-similes comprise both the complete inscription on the top of the sarcophagus, and the imperfect one which runs round its head. The former measures two feet nine inches from top to bottom, and the sixth line is two feet nine and a half inches in length. The partial inscription is four feet seven inches long: the letters are rather smaller, slenderer, and neater than those of the full inscription.

These fac-similes, exhibiting as they do the very "form and pressure" of the letters traced and engraved by Phenician hands, are in-

tensely interesting.

II. Ideas respecting an Alphabet suited to the Languages of Southern Africa. By Prof. C. A. Holmboe, of Christiania, Norway.

[This essay, with the letter accompanying it, was not received in New Haven until Dec. 1855, having been detained upon the way; which is the cause of its appearing so long after being composed.]

Christiania, Feb. 15th, 1854.

Six months ago, I received from a committee of American missionaries in the neighborhood of Port Natal, in Southern Africa, an invitation to act as member of a committee composed of Professors Salisbury and Gibbs of Yale College, of Professor Pott at Halle, and of one English and one French gentleman, who were not yet designated, to invent and establish an alphabet suitable to all the languages of Southern Africa. The distance of the members from one another makes oral discussion impracticable: the only possible method of contributing anything to the important object will be, then, to communicate mutually our ideas in writing. Accordingly I take the liberty of sending you annexed my ideas respecting a South-African alphabet, begging you to receive them favorably, and to make such use of them as shall seem good to you.

It appears that those who have written on this subject, are agreed

with respect to the following points:

1st. That the alphabet of the civilized nations of Europe ought to be employed for all the sounds which occur in the South-African languages.

4. From a Letter from Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Orumiah.

Seir, Oroomiah, July 8th, 1856.

I should be exceedingly thankful for a review of my Grammar [of the Modern Syriae Language; see above, pp. 1-180] by a competent person, which should point out its defects, which I am myself sensible are not few. They are perhaps, however, not more numerous than might be expected from one who had had no previous experience in this kind of composition, and whose time and thoughts are mainly engrossed with other pursuits. I regret much that the book was not divided into paragraphs and sections, so as to admit of frequent and easy reference from one part to another. An arrangement of this kind would have rendered many passages plain, which are now more or less obscure, and would have greatly facili-

tated the student's progress.

The educated Jew, who was with us for a time, has now left the Seminary, and I rarely come in contact with him, so that I have not finished preparing the sketch of the modern Jews' language of Persia which I undertook some time ago. It will be my aim to forward it to you in the course of the next winter. If possible, I shall get the Jew above mentioned to write out all the forms in the Hebrew character, and shall then myself, while listening to his pronunciation of each word, write it down in the Syriac character. If either the Hebrew or the Syriac character should be used alone, I fear that, with many readers, this would go far toward determining the unsettled and really difficult question, whether the language is to be referred to the Chaldee or to the ancient Syriac. It is very likely, however, that a thorough investigation will show that it is not strictly a descendant of either of those languages, but rather derived from the Aramæan, from which they themselves sprang.

5. From a Letter from W. W. Turner, Esq.

Washington, D. C., Aug. 28, 1856.

The Smithsonian Institution has at length received the volume and the fac-similes [of the Phenician inscription of Sidon] presented to it by the Duc de Luynes, in compliance with our joint request. The fac-similes are of stout white paper, produced, I suppose, by dampening the paper, laying it on the marble, and rubbing it with a hard point into all the depressions, so that the outline and depth establishment.) 7. The French language. This language is studied by the Shah himself, who receives lessons from his private physician, who is a Frenchman. Many young officers of the government have acquired a respectable knowledge of that tongue. One of them has nearly completed the translation of Telemaque into Persian.

2. From a Letter of Rev. W. M. Thomson to Dr. DeForest.

Sidon, Nov. 30, 1855.

Sidon is now all in a state of excitement about Phenician antiquities, being dug up at Magharet Tubloon. That whole neighborhood is being cut up with trenches, in search of these antiquities. The Alellas [f] and French consul are the chief diggers. They are finding beantiful marble sarcophagi, with exquisite figures carved on the lids, like that with the inscription on it, but none of those recently found have any writing on them. They are, however, very curious, and what is still more curious is the immense depth of these rooms. I examined a room yesterday afternoon from which two of these beautiful sarcophagi have been taken. A square shaft was sunk through the rock at least twenty feet deep; from it, low doors lead into rooms, where the coffins were placed in niches below the floor, which was of strong hojarieh [cement]. No one would suspect that anything lay buried beneath this hojarich, and the effort to conceal the tembs was successful up to this day; these sarcophagi had never been disturbed. I was present at the opening of one. Two sanburiehs [baskets] of rotten bones were gathered out of it. There were small bits of gold among them, but nothing of value. There seems to be no end to these rooms; chambers lie over chambers, and no one yet knows to what depth they may be found. You would be astonished to see the excitement which these things create in our usually quiet community.

3. From a Letter from Prof. C. Lassen, of Bonn.

Bonn, 12th Jan., 1856.

You will be glad to learn that the printing of the first Part of the third volume of my Indische Alterthumskunde, which has been so long deferred, is about to begin, so that I hope that it will come forth in the course of this summer. The knowledge of Chemistry is confined to those who pretend to transmute the baser metals into gold. It is universally believed in the country that this is practicable, and also that there are some persons who possess the secret. They are said to be wandering Dervishes, going about in the garb of extreme poverty, for fear of the civil authorities, who might force them to reveal their secret, if they were known to possess it. There are many in all parts of the country, who spend their lives and waste their means, in the vain pursuit of a universal solvent.

Astronomy as a science is cultivated by a few persons. The old Ptolemaic theory, making the earth the centre, around which the heavenly bodies revolve, is still universally maintained. Eclipses are calculated, and almanacs constructed. Until recently the almanacs were all manuscripts, and but a few copies were prepared, which were purchased only by the rich and noble. For some years they have been printed at Tabreez, and scattered over the country at a very cheap rate. Astrology forms a leading department in the almanac. Events for the year are foretold, peace or war, plenty or famine, &c. Favorable hours are also indicated for starting on a journey, laying the foundations of a house, for the tailor to cut out a garment, &c.

The Persians are excessively fond of poetry, and venerate those who have a reputation for poetic talent. The Shah has his favorite poet, who is called the *Shems-i-Shuar*, the Sun of Poets. His attempts are mostly confined to the composition of short pieces, which are recited in public on festival occasions, and consist of praises of God, praises of Mohammed, and fulsome flattery of the Shah. At the present time there are no poets of great distinction in the country; Saadi, Hafiz, and Firdusi remain unrivalled.

You have heard of the Government College at Tehran called the Dar-el-f'noon, the Door of the Sciences. It is not intended for the benefit of the community at large. It is wholly a government institution, the object of which is to raise up government servants. The pupils, now numbering a hundred, all receive a stipend from the public treasury, and as soon as they are qualified they are taken into active service. The yearly expenses of the College are about forty thousand dollars. Seven professors are employed in it, four of whom are Austrian subjects, one a Frenchman, one a Neapolitan, and one a Persian. Their departments are as follows. 1. Infantry tacties. 2. Cavalry tacties. 3. Artillery tactics. (The three professors in charge of these departments also drill the Persian troops, many of whom are always assembled at the Capital.) 4. Engineering, including Mathematics, Geometry, etc. 5. The Theory and Practice of Medicine and Surgery. 6. Materia Medica. (The teacher in this department has charge of the government apothecary

I. EXTRACTS FROM CORRESPONDENCE.

1. From a Letter from Rev. A. H. Wright, M. D., of Oramiah.

Oroomiah, Persia, Aug. 21st, 1855.

In a recent letter to Mr. Perkins, you intimated that some intelligence relative to the state of education in Persia would be interesting to you. A friend residing in Tabreez has furnished me with information on the subject, relative to that place, which may be taken as a standard for most of the large towns in the country.

The population of Tabreez is about one hundred thousand, of whom my friend supposes that two-thirds are able to read and write the Persian language. He gives the number of schools of all kinds in the place as one hundred, that is, one school to every thousand of the population. Of this number ten are seminaries of a high order, containing from eighty to a hundred pupils each. These are public institutions, free to all who wish to attend. The instruction is given by learned men as a charitable act, or by those who have received an allowance from some wealthy persons for this object.

There are fifty schools attached to the Mosques, the pupils of each numbering from thirty to fifty. The teachers in these schools are supported by an assessment of from ten to twenty-five cents a month on each scholar, the amount varying according to the studies.

The remaining forty schools are of a private character, consisting each of from ten to fifteen pupils. They are connected with private families of rank and wealth, who employ a teacher for their own children. Often a few children of their relatives, dependents, or

neighbors are allowed to attend the school.

The course of study throughout all the schools of the country is essentially the same. In all the primary schools it is as follows, viz.

1. The reading of the Korân in Arabic, without any attempt to understand its meaning.

2. The Gulistân of Sandi in Persian in the same manner; subsequently it is read again, and translated into Turkish.

3. The writings of Hâfiz.

4. Certain works in Persian on the mode of performing the prescribed prayers, and of purifying the body.

5. Certain historical works in Persian celebrated for elegance of style.

6. The elements of Grammar in Arabic.

7. Syntax, Etymology, and Prosody, also in Arabic.

In the schools of a higher grade, the studies are Logic, Law, civil and religious, Interpretation, Tradition, Medicine, Mathematics.

Astronomy and Geometry.

MISCELLANIES.

In xx. 70. 6 is a case of an antithesis with an-an. vi-vo, which, as in xviii. 1. 16, cited above (p. 401), is incomplete,

the second verb being left to be supplied.

The passage xx. 55. I appears to be another instance of an incompletely stated antithesis, only the former of the two particles w, ca, being expressed. It may be compared with i, 17, 2c, d, and v. 12, 1 (cited on pages 412 and 413).

A distinct antithesis is exhibited in xx. 56. 3d; "Whom, on the one hand, wilt thou slay? whom, on the other, set in the midst of wealth?" and the usual effect of such a construction is seen in the accenting of the former verb.

In xx. 16, 11d, the former of the two verbs is accented by the action of the same principle. In xx. 8.1c; 89.5, we have two cases closely akin with v. 18. 4 (see above, p. 407). the correctness of the accentuation in which passage may be looked upon as clearly established by their analogy.

In xx. 67. 7d, we have a case of the irregular accenting of a verb after a vocative, in a like situation as in i. 20. I

of its own clause, the division

92 8, 16; 95 8; 117 1; 187,

(cited above, p. 410).

In the passage xx. 5. 5, z. was made a to about add night at

र्कीमस्य द्रवा पिर्व ा ने हैं है है है है है है है है है।

é'hl''m asya drava piba. est a sval en all al xx el

"Come hither now, of this [Soma], run, drink," the introduction of za, drava, in parenthesis, between faz, piba, and its object, has so broken the continuity of the sentence that the latter verb can no longer be made enclitic, but is suffered

to retain an independent accent.

It thus appears that in that portion of the Rik text (about a thirteenth part of the whole) of which the concluding book of the Atharvan is composed, there are no phenomena of verbal accentuation inconsistent with the rules which have been given above, nor any that require other principles for their explanation. Whether, in the whole body of the Rik, phenomena of a different character may be found, must remain to be decided by examination. Considering the greater amount of material which the older Veda presents, as wellas the superior accuracy of its text as fixed by tradition, its speedy examination with a view to this subject is greatly to be desired, in order to the full elucidation of the latter.

of the principles already laid down, which, by the aid of the material furnished by the Atharvan alone, we have not discovered.

We have thus passed in review all the cases occurring in the first nineteen books of the Atharvan, in which the accent of the verb was determined by other than the most general rules, and which accordingly either threw light upon the theory of verbal accentuation, or required especial treatment, as being of an exceptional and anomalous character. I have not included with them the instances derivable from the twentieth and concluding book, because the more proper occasion for presenting these would seem to be a discussion of the accentual rules as illustrated by the Rig-Veda; since the book in question forms really no part of the Atharvan, and is only a collection of extracts from the Rik.* For the sake of completeness, however, I append here a brief statement of the passages in it which are of like character with those already given for the other books.

Instances of a verb accented because standing at the head of its own clause, the division of the sentence taking place within the limits of a påda, are xx.,3.1; 8.1a, b; 11.10; 16.11d; 27, 2; 35.2; 46.3; 54.1; 65.1; 67.5; 91.12;

92. 8, 16; 95. 3; 117. 1; 137. 8.

In xx. 16. 11c, we have a case of accentuation of the verb regarded as directly construed with the following, in-

stead of with the preceding object.

In xx. 20. 6, the particle $\frac{1}{3}$, ca, indicates the conditionality of the clause, whose verb accordingly remains orthotone. In 113. 1, we either have another similar case, or the word $\frac{1}{3}$ $\frac{1}{3}$, $\frac{1}{3}$, $\frac{1}{3}$, we either have another similar case, or the word $\frac{1}{3}$ $\frac{1}{3}$, $\frac{1}{3}$, $\frac{1}{3}$, with which the verse begins, is a general introduction to it, and not specially connected with the following verb, which is then left accented in virtue of its initial position: as, "Both these two things—let Indra hear our voice... and let him come hither," etc.

The particle afan, kuvit, accents the verb in xx. 24. 2, 4,

the only instances of its occurrence.

^{*} From this statement should be excepted, of course, the few peculiar passages found in connection with those extracts: yet they also were not to be made use of in an investigation like the present; their accentuation in the manuscripts is too corrupt to be of any authority; the editors have had to accent them anew in accordance with rules and analogies elsewhere established.

by giving it to others which were not properly entitled to it.

There are, however, two or three passages, in which signs of a real emphasis are perhaps discoverable. Thus, in ii. 7.4,

श्ररातिनी मा तारीनमा नेस्तारिषुर्भिमीतवः निमान

dratir no ma' tarin ma' nas tarishar abhimatayah,
the second verb may be accented because the difference of
its form from that of the first struck the sense, and seemed
to call for a special notice. Yet this is quite doubtful, since
we have seen hitherto that, in the case of two correlative
and contrasted sentences, the tendency of the language was
to accent the verb of the first, and not of the second.

We have, again, in iv. 18. 6, and repeated in v. 31. 11,

यश्चकार् न शशाक कर्तुम्

yác caká ra ná cacá ka kártum,

"He who hath done, hath not been able to do;" i. e., "He who hath attempted, hath not been able to accomplish." Here we may plausibly suppose the accent laid upon the second verb to be an emphatic one.

Once more, in xii. 3. 26, we read

शुद्धाः सुतीस्ता उ शुस्र्येन ठ्व वा वा वा वा वा वा वा

çuddhâ'h satî's tâ' u çûmbhanta evá.

In this passage, as in the last but one, the verb is perhaps marked with its independent accent in order to indicate more strongly its distinction from the preceding participle.

Whether the evidence of these few passages, themselves in part doubtful, and capable of a different explanation, will be considered of so much weight that we may found upon it the assertion, that the Sanskrit tends to accent the verb in a sentence which is meant to be expressed with peculiar energy, or where the sense lays a peculiar force upon it, is very questionable. The existence of such a tendency must remain doubtful until new support shall be found for it from the other accented texts. It is not unlikely that these will furnish parallel passages which shall explain many of those which have occasioned us difficulty, by showing them to be referable to new principles, or to new modes of action

ममेदसस्यं केवेलो नान्यासीं कीर्तयाश्चन

mamé 'd ásas tvám kévalo ná' 'nyá' sám kirtáyáç caná (vii. 38.4);

मामित्किल वं बनाः शाखां मधुमतीमिव विकास

mâ'm it kila tvám vánáh câ'khâm mádhumatim iva (i. 34. 4). With regard to up, aha, it is to be remarked, that it nowhere else in the Atharvan occurs in such connection as to show whether it possesses a general power to accent the verb. But, of six passages in which it is found in the first Ashtaka of the Rik, there is but one in which it exercises such a power. As for the first line given, there is room for suspecting an antithesis (certainly not less than in xix. 31. 6, cited above); or the partial analogies of iii. 25.5. vi. 42.3 may have had some influence upon its accentuation. In the second instance, a very slight change of place of the last accent-sign would rob the verb of its accent." The particle 27, it, is of very frequent occurrence in the text, but nowhere else influences the accent of a verb, unless when in composition with ₹, ca, and ₹, na, as before explained. And for the third passage also, the analogy of the parallel passage vii. 37. 1 may not have been without effect. The particle fact, kila, occurs in two other places in the Atharvan, viz. in iv. 7. 3. xviii. 1, 15, as also in Rik i. 32. 4, without rendering the verb orthotone: I am not able at present to refer to any other passages illustrating its use.

In these four instances, the accent of the verbs certainly is not of the nature of what we call emphasis; there exists no reason why a distinguishing stress of voice should be laid upon them; in each case, some other word than the verb is the emphatic one. If the verbs are indeed accented in them in virtue of the influence of the asseverative particles, it must be as the utterance of the whole clause takes place with so much additional force, that the verb also shares in it, to the extent of having its lost accent restored to it. And yet it would seem as if this effect of increased energy of enunciation would better express itself by laving a stronger stress upon the already accented syllables, than

And this change has actually been made in the published text.

cented at the end of a pada; I only offer it as the most

plausible one which I am able to suggest.

It will be noticed that no other general principle of verbal accentuation than that first enunciated has been regarded as established, or even suggested, by the passages which we have cited. Some, indeed,* have been inclined to assume that the verb was occasionally suffered to retain its accent when it was sought to give especial force to the expression, or else when a peculiar emphasis, or distinctive stress of voice, was by the sense required to be laid upon the verb itself. But although it seems highly plausible that such causes should sometimes produce such an effect, there is almost no distinct evidence to be derived from the text of the Atharvan that they do produce it. It might not be quite impossible to force such a explanation upon some of the cases which we have looked upon above as problematical, while yet it would be hard to find in them any reason for accenting the verb which would not equally apply to a great many passages in the text which are actually left to be accented according to the general rules. And it is reasonable to require that such a principle be established upon the evidence of a sufficient number of unambiguous passages, before we make use of it to explain doubtful and difficult cases.

But there are a few passages in the Atharvan, for whose explanation we are tempted to suppose the existence and efficiency in the language of this principle of energetic or emphatic accentuation. Thus we have, in the first place, four verses, in which the asseverative particles us, aha, and it, and then, kila, appear to accent the verbs in connection with which they are taken. They are the following:

ममेद्रु ऋतावसो मर्म चित्तमुपार्यसि

mûmê 'd ûha krátûv ûso mûma cittûm upû'yasi (i. e. upa-û'-ayasî) (i. 34. 2);

म्रहं वदामि नेचं सभायामङ् वं वदं

ahám vadámi nét tvám sabhá'yám áha tvám váda (vii. 38. 4);

And purposes "So Benfey, Vollst. Sanskr. Gr., § 1290 in Vict. Sd. at

ग्रमित्रेषु समीवार्यन् वर्षा वरमा वर्षा वर्या वर्षा वर्रा वर्षा वर

amîtreshu samîkshâyan, which can hardly be translated otherwise than "may they show themselves among our enemies;" so that the accent should be, according to general analogies, which is something especial and unusual about this phrase, inserted each time, as it is, where it seems not particularly in place; and it may have some relation or significance which I have not discovered. At present I am compelled to pass by the accent as problematical.

There are three passages in which the word spen, babhava, is accented, at the end of the line, in a manner which is not accounted for by any general rule. They are as follows:

.... स्वम ऋषीणां भूतकृतां वभूवं

svása r'skinám bhûtakr'tûm babhû'va (vi. 133. 4);

.... मधुमन्मध्यं वीरुधां बभूवं

mádhuman mádhyam virúdham babhú'va (viii. 7. 12);

···· ग्रदंब्धचनुः परि विश्वं बभूवं

ádabdhacakshuh pári vícvam babhû'va (xiii. 2. 44). In neither of these cases is the clause a dependent one, or a member of an antithesis, nor am I able to discover any special ground for the accent of the verbs. It is to be noted, however, that the verbal form here in question stands in the Atharvan very often, indeed, in almost every case in which it occurs at all, at the end of a pada; and that in numerous instances (seventeen in all) it receives an accent in that position; not without a distinct reason, it is true, in each case, such as is wanting in the three passages now under consideration; yet it may be that the frequent occurrence of that ending led to the transference of its accentuation to these three passages: the tonic cadence was familiar to the ear, and was accordingly intruded upon a few lines to which it did not properly belong. This explanation, however, I do not regard as very satisfactory, especially as there are also in the text nineteen cases of the same word standing unac-

This seems to be an incomplete construction of the kind noted above, where an antithesis sufficient to accent the verb of the former clause is produced by the particles --ca-ca, "both-and." In this case the second clause contains, instead of a, ca, 37, it, but the effect may be looked upon as being virtually the same.

A similar case, perhaps, in found in v. 12. 1, and become

ग्रा च वर्क मित्रमक्श्विकिवान्वं हुतः कविरेसि प्रचैताः

á' ca váha mitramahac cikitvá'n tvám důtáh kavír asi prácetáh. Here the accent of the first verb is at any rate assured to it by the fact that the corresponding Rik passage (x. 110, 1) has the same reading. We might possibly conjecture, as the cause of it, such an incomplete antithesis as was supposed in the last case, the completion of the construction being broken off by an anacolouthon. Or we may assign to the particle a, ca, such an office as fig, hi, would fill, if used in place of it (compare vi. 27, 2, viii, 1, 6.); "bring hither, etc.; [in that case, or if thou so dost] thou art our messenger, etc." Again, in vii. 85. 1c, d, was standed of beliates od bloom

इदं राष्ट्रं पिपृह्नि सौभेगाय विश्वं रूनमन् मद्तु देवाः

idám ráshtrám piprhi sálubhagáya víçva enam ánu madantu devá h.

the accenting of the verb in the first pada seems to be the effect of the assumption of an antithesis between the two clauses, which is facilitated, perhaps, by the more distinct antithetical construction of the preceding line of the couplet.

In viii. 7. 21, we find

उज्जिक्षेधे स्तनवत्यभिक्रन्दत्योषधीः

ig jihidhve stanayaty abhikrandaty oshadhih, while will and abhi krandati, would seem to be the easier and more natural reading. We cannot well assume here an error of transcription, nor can we plausibly regard the two verbal forms as locatives of the present participle. I do not understand the reason of the accent as it stands.

In xi. 9. 9, 11, 25, we have, three times repeated, the words

युवं ब्रह्मणे उनुमन्यमानी ब्रह्मस्यते माकमिन्द्रं अद्तम्

ywam brahmáne s numányamánáu br haspate sákám indruç ca

dattam.

Here the structure of the sentence appears to be understood as if the words between the vocative and the verb in the second pâda were a kind of parenthesis merely, so that the latter is accented as if it immediately followed the former. 4 Do ye two . . . O Brhaspati, Indra also along with you, grant."

Again, in xi. 2. 2,

शुने क्रोष्ट्रे मा शरीराणि कर्तमिललेवेग्यः

cone kroshtre mat carirani kartam aliklavebhyah, etc., we have the verb accented, as it seems to me, by an irregular application of the rule allowing the verb to be treated as if directly construed with the following, instead of with the preceding object. The first two words of this passage do indeed stand in the same relation to the verb as the last one, and, so far as they alone were concerned, the verb would be entitled to remain accented: but the introduction of the other two limiting words alters the case, and should render it encline again: this, however, appears to have been overlooked, or else deliberately neglected. I do not see any other way of accounting for the accent of the verb here.

Again, in xviii. 4. 54, we have

उत्ती भागो य इमं जजानाष्ट्रमात्रीनामाधिपत्यं जगामे

ûrjó bhûgó yá imám jajû'nû' 'çmû' 'nnûnâm â'dhipatyam jagû'ma. The meaning and connection of this passage are very obscure; I do not understand them sufflicently to be able to say whether the last verb is correctly accented, as being of the same construction with the first, or whether it should rather be made enclitic, as belonging to an independent clause, or whether its accentuation is to be accounted for in some other manner.

Again, in i. 17. 2c, d, is read

किनिष्ठिका च तिष्ठति तिष्ठादिङमिर्निर्म्ही

kanishthika ca tishthati tishthad id dhamanir mahl.

र्दं जनासो विद्यं मरुइस्रं विद्यिति

idám janaso vidátha mahád bráhma vadishyati. The reading taza, vidátha, may be looked upon as somewhat suspicious here, since the sense requires rather an imperative form than an indicative, and since the Atharvan offers no other instance of a form in the present tense of either mood from this root, as conjugated after the manner of the sixth conjugation-class. But neither consideration is conclusive against the genuineness of the reading, for analogous forms occur in the Rik, and the substitution in the Veda of indicative for imperative is by no means unknown. And the passage is so closely analogous to xx. 127. 1,

र्दं जेना उर्प श्रुत नाराशंस स्तंविष्यते

idám janá úpa cruta nârācansā stavishyate, that it seems better to retain the word in question unchanged, and not to amend it to विद्या, vidátham, as it would be very easy to do, making a fair sense. The accenting of the form would be, as in the preceding case, an irregular extension of the rule for accenting after a vocative. We might possibly understand इंद्र, idam, as a mere exclamation, translating "See here, ye people! hear!" which would account for the accent; but the analogy of ii. 12. 2, इंद्र हेवा: भूगान, idam devâh crnuta, is against it, nor do I know any other instance of such a use of इंद्रम, idam.

Again, in i. 30. 1,

विश्वे देवा वसंवो र चीतेममुतादित्या जागृत यूयमस्मिन्

viçve devâ vásavo rákshate 'mám utâ' "dityā jāgrtā yūyām asmín, the accenting of the verb in the second clause may be looked upon as of kindred character with that in the two passages last treated of. Yet the sentence may be also so divided as to make the verb virtually the first word in its clause; if, namely, we translate "All ye gods, ye Vasus, guard this person; and ye Adityas likewise, watch ye over him."

Again, in xiv. 2. 42, we have

VOL. V.

and suspect the true reading to be miles, krann thá, a sign of accent having been lost in the manuscripts.

Again, in xix. 31. 6,

ग्रहं पंश्रुनामंधिया ग्रसीनि मयि पुष्टं पुष्टपतिर्द्धातु

aham paçuna'm adhipà' asami mayi pushtam pushtapatir dadhatu, it seems very uncertain whether the antithesis can be regarded as being distinct enough to warrant the accenting of the verb in the first pada. And it is moreover to be noticed, that in the nineteenth book of the text the manuscripts are most especially faulty, so that their authority in doubtful and difficult cases is of almost no weight whatever. I have not pretended to give above all the instances in which we have amended in this book the accentuation of verbs: a record of them may be found among the foot-notes to each page. We need not, then, hesitate to amend to statist, asami, if it shall seem desirable, in the passage now under consideration.

In the passages thus far treated, we have been inclined to suspect an error in the tradition of the text, where the verbal accent has not appeared to be explainable by ordinary rules and analogies. But there are others in which we seem to discover irregular and anomalous applications of some of the rules previously stated; which we can hardly regard as errors of transcription, but which may possibly be, at least in part, errors of apprehension on the part of those who established the text. Whether they are to be understood in this way, or whether they are true and faithfully recorded phenomena of the Vedic language, only of a sporadic character, and not reducible to strict rule, may be better determined when we have before us cases of a like character from the other accented texts also.

We have, in i. 20. 1, goods and to draw and to promote und

ग्रुस्मिन्युत्ते म्हतो मुउता नः

asmín yajíté maruto mrdátá nah.

Here the verb is accented as immediately following a vocative, although the latter does not stand at the head of a pâda, and has not itself an accent, as ought to be the case, if the verb is to remain orthotone.

aport as of kindred obstacing the state of

A similar case is found in i. 32. 1:

Again, in vi. 128. 1,

र्दं राष्ट्रमसादिति

idám ráshtrám ásád íti,

we are perhaps to assume that an accent-sign has been omitted under the syllable #, ma, the restoration of which would leave the verb unaccented.

Again, in viii. 10. 1,

र्यमेवेदं भविष्यतीति

iyam evé 'dam bhavishyati' 'ti,

it may be that the last horizontal accent sign has been slipped away from its place, and that we have to amend to is warning.

bhavishyati' 'ti.

Had we these two instances only, of clauses cited by means of the particle of quotation 3 rd, iti, we should be inclined to regard them as cases of the accenting of the verb in a dependent clause; since a quoted sentence is in fact a kind of dependent sentence, and is so treated in some languages, being distinguished in German, for instance, by the use of the subjunctive instead of the indicative mood. And perhaps we may be allowed to explain thus the accent of the two clauses under consideration, even though no other analogous passages can be adduced to support this explanation. For, of all the numerous cases in the text (more than thirty), where a clause containing a verb is cited by the particle इति, iti, these two are the only ones in which the verb receives an accent. Elsewhere, the quotation is made in the form of an independent sentence, just as it would be spoken; and that, whether it be the direct object of a verb of speaking, as in i. 7. 4, or whether it indicate the "reason why," or the "end for which" (which was its use in the two passages last quoted), as in x. 2. 5. Other instances are iv. 17. 4; 20. 6. v. 19. 9; 23. 1, etc., etc.

Again, in xiv. 1. 32,

विश्वे देवाः ऋतिक् वो मनांसि

viçue devá h kránn ihá vo mánánsi, I can discover no reason why the verb should be accented, Here, too, it may be made a question whether we are to find a sufficient antithesis to account for the accent of the verb, or whether we are to suppose that the accent-sign has been slipped away from the va, stha, to the succeeding syllable. I incline to prefer the former.

Again, in vi. 32. 1, the printed text gives

अन्दिवि जुंडता स्वेईतत्

antardávé juhutá sv etát,

but it is by an error of the press, for gga, juhuta, which is the reading of the manuscripts. But I conceive this to be a reversal of the original error by which the verb got its accent in the manuscripts, as I am unable to find any reason why it should be left orthotone.

In the passage vi. 60. 2,

ग्रङ्गो न्वंर्यमञ्जस्या ग्रन्याः समन्नमार्वति

angó nv àryamann asyá' anyá'h sámanam á'yati, the pada-text divides the last word चाउचर्यता, á-áyati, thus giving the verb an accent. But I do not see how the form, which is elsewhere always singular, can be borne as a plural; it may, perhaps, be amended to चार्यन्ति, that is, चाउचरिता, á' ayanti.

A similar case is vi. 131. 3,

ततस्वं पुनरावंसि

tátas tvám púnar á'yasi, which the pada-text understands to be बाडबर्गसि।, बै-áyasi, whereas it is rather बाडबर्गसि।, बै' ayasi.

Again, in vi. 78. 2,

र्या सङ्संवर्चसेनी स्तामनुपितती

rayyû' sahûsravarcase 'mû'u stâ'm ûnupakshitûu, I can discover no ground for preserving to the verb its accent, and believe the accent-sign to have become lost from under it. I would read स्ताम°, stûm, etc. it is very hard to see why the verb should have in this pâda an accent which it lacks in the preceding one, where the construction seems to be the same. Probably we have to amend to sten, askabhâyad.

In verse 7 of the same hymn, in the last pada,

कविदेवो न द्रभायत्स्वधावीन्

kavir devô ná dábhâyat svadhâ'vân, we seem, indeed, to have an accented verbal form; but it is only in seeming; for zinan, dábhâyat, is unquestionably to be amended to zina, dábhâya, dative of zi, dabha; and the passage means, he "is not for a harming," i. e. "is not one who can be harmed." This construction, frequent enough in the Rik, is quite rare in the Atharvan, and in one or two other instances has been badly blundered over by the establishers of the text. If we had here, it may be remarked, a verbal form requiring accent, it would have to be accented zinan, dabhâyát.

Again, in iv. 19. 2,

न तर्त्र भयमस्ति यत्रं प्राष्ट्रोध्योषधे

ná tátra bhayám ásti yátra prápnóshy oshadhe, I am inclined to attribute the hardly otherwise explainable accent of the first verb to an original error of transcription, and to amend to भवनंदिन, bhayám asti.

Again, in v. 18. 4,

निर्वे नत्रं नयंति क्लि वर्चः

nír với kshatrám náyati hánti várcah, we might suspect नवित, náyati, to be an error for नवित, nayati; yet it seems better here to assume an antithesis between the two clauses, of force enough to render orthotone the verb of the first.

Again, in vi. 21. 3, we have

उत स्य केशरंक्षणीर्थी क् केशवर्धनीः

utá sthá keçadr nhanír átho ha keçavárdhaníh.

all the Atharvan manuscripts give the; id vidith: as the accent of the verb seemed in this passage quite unexplainable, we have not hesitated to amend it to an agreement with

the parallel passage of the Rik (x. 85. 16).

These are all the instances in which we have taken away from any verbal form an accent given to it by the manuscripts; excepting two, which bear plainly on their face the evidence that they are blunders, being accented upon the wrong syllable. These are i. 24. 1, and and rupain caker, for which all the manuscripts have and, caker, while the true accentuation of the form, if accented at all, would be and, caker, and xii. 4. 28, and all all, would be and, caker, and xii. 4. 28, and all all, wrycanti, in place of which the manuscripts unanimously read and, vrycanti, although only the accentuation and vrycanti, could be tolerated. It is sufficiently clear that, in both these cases, the errors are due to a slip of the pen of the scribe who copied the original manuscript from which all ours are descended, the mark of the accent being set over the wrong syllable.

In the light of these facts, which indicate clearly what allowance is to be made for inaccuracies and errors in the text, we may now proceed to examine the remaining instan-

ces of accented verbs which it presents.

In iii. 23. 5, we have

यस्तुभ्यं शमसङ्मु तस्मै वं भवं

yás túbhyam cám ásac chám u tásmái tvám bháva. The most natural ending to the verse would seem to be

शमु यस्मे वं भवंः

çám u yásmái tvám bhávah,

"and to whom thou in turn mayest be propitious;" and it is perhaps not impossible that this is felt to be virtually present in the reading as given, and that therefore the imperative is accented; yet there is room to suspect wa, bhava, to be a mere slip of the pen for wa, bhava.

Again, in iv. 1. 4c,

मकान्मकी ग्रस्कंभायदि जातः

mahá'n mahí' áskabháyad vi játáh,

preceding hymn, where it is in fact the presence of a fg, hi, that makes the verb orthotone.**

In v. 12. 2, the manuscripts have

तनूंनपात्पय ऋतस्य यानान्मधा समज्जन्स्वद्यां मुजिक्

tánûnapût pathú rtásya yá'nân mádhvá samañjánt svadáyá

sujihva,

while the printed text gives sizer, svadayā. The latter reading was adopted on the authority of the corresponding passage in the Rik (x. 110. 2), as there seemed to be no reason requiring the verb to be accented. Yet here also, it might be possible to defend the reading of the manuscripts: if the accusative in the first pâda be regarded as the object more directly of the participle than of the verb, as would be allowable, the latter might be looked upon as occupying an initial position, and therefore entitled to retain its accent.

Again, in vi. 131. 2, the edition has

यार्कृते समिदं नेमः

á'kûte sám idám namah,

while all the manuscripts agree in reading and; namah. The propriety of the emendation cannot be questioned: the false reading may have been a mere slip of the pen on the part of the scribe of the original manuscript, or the word may have been mistaken for the frequent noun and, namah.

Another very similar instance is found in xviii. 2. 36,

शं तेप मार्ति तपो अग्ने मा तन्वं तपः

çám tapa mã' 'ti tapo ágne mã' tanvàm tápah:

here, too, there seems to be no assignable reason why the last word should be accented: I suspect it to have been taken, by a blunder, for the common noun and: tápah, "penance," and would alter the reading to and are, tanvam tapah.

Once more, in xiv. 1. 16,

तदंडातय र्हिंडः

tád addhátáya id viduh,

^{*} But where, by an error of the press, praity etu stands, instead of pratystu, which the manuscripts correctly give.

Again, in iv. 31. 2, stands in the text

ग्रिप्रित्व मन्यो विषितः संकृस्व सेनानीर्नः सङ्गरे

agnir iva manyo tvishitáh sahasva senánî'r nah sahure .

क्रत र्धि

hûtá edhi,

whereas all the sanhitâ manuscripts (excepting one, which is amended to the above reading) give at a, sâhasva. The Rik (x. 84. 2) leaves the verb unaccented, which, with the pada manuscript, and the amended sanhitâ, seemed to us sufficient authority for the reading which we have adopted. Yet even here I do not regard the accenting of the verb as certainly erroneous: it might be defended by the analogy of vi. 32. 2, and of the other passages cited with the latter above, as an indistinct antithesis.

Another case, iv. 31. 7, is clearer; we read

पराजितासो ग्रप नि लंबनाम्

parajitaso apa ni layantam, spite of the authority of the manuscripts, which are unanimous in favor of minner, layantam. Here also the Rik (x. 84.7) has the former reading, nor does there seem to be any conceivable reason why the verb should be accented, nor, if it were so, could the preceding preposition maintain its accent also, as the manuscripts allow it to do. We have evidently a mere blunder of the manuscripts to deal with in this passage.

In iii. 2. 1, all the manuscripts read

ग्रियोनी ह्तः प्रत्येतुं विद्वान्

agnír no důtáh pratyétu vidvá'n,

which we have altered to quiq, prâty etu. The analogy of the first line of the preceding hymn was sufficient authority for the alteration, and it is not easy to see how the manuscripts should have come to commit the error of accenting the verb here; unless, possibly, they were led away by the fancied analogy of the last pâda of the second verse in the

have received an accent to which they were not entitled; the true point of division between the two padas of a line has been mistaken, and vocatives and verbal forms have been in consequence wrongly accented, or left unaccented, as they were wrongly supposed to stand, or not to stand, at the beginning of the second pada; the verb of a clearly dependent clause, even after a form of the relative a, ya, has been left enclitie; and so on. More than a hundred such cases have been corrected by us in the published text, and not a few which we have left untouched still call for emendation: our commentary will, of course, fully explain and account for the alterations we have made in the text offered by the manuscripts, and will point out the places where we suppose that farther alteration is demanded. It may then, of course, not very infrequently be the case, that verbal forms are erroneously accented by the manuscripts; it would be strange if it were not so, at least in some instances; yet in so much uncertainty has the subject of verbal accentuation hitherto been involved, that we have only very rarely, and in cases which seemed quite clear, ventured to take away from a verb an accent which our authorities gave to it. Sometimes, indeed, we have allowed ourselves even that liberty: I will proceed to give the instances here, in order to avoid the possibility of having omitted from this paper material which ought to be embraced in it.

Thus, in iv. 32. 1, we have read the respect to the respect

सक् ग्रोतः पुष्यति विश्वमानुषक्

sáha ójah pushyati vícvam ánushák,

while all the manuscripts give sits: gester, by be cause the former reading seems better to suit the sense, and because the Rig-Veda, in the corresponding passage (x. 83. 1), leaves the verb unaccented. It might, nevertheless, not be impossible to account for the reading as given by the Atharvan manuscripts: if we regard the two words preceding the verb as objects of the verb of the preceding pada, or, better, if we look upon the word following the verb as a noun constituting an independent object of it, translating "might, strength—he acquires everything in succession," then the verb would be entitled to be accented in virtue of its initial position.

Besides these, there are a few passages, composed each of two clauses, in the first of which the verb is left orthotone, where the antithesis is less distinctly marked than in the cases hitherto noted, while nevertheless their accentuation seems to be referable to the same principle. They are vi. 32.2; 83.1 ix.5.22; 8.10. xii. 3.18. xiii. 2.30 b. xiv.1.13. Had we these passages only, we should not venture to derive from them any such principle; but, having well established it as a tendency of the language to assume, even on slight occasion, an antithetical relation, and to accent accordingly, we are justified in presuming its extension to these cases also.

We have thus far found all the phenomena of verbal accentuation of which we have taken note to be occasioned, more or less regularly and directly, by the working of a single principle; that, namely, the verb in an independent clause is accented only when occupying the initial position, being otherwise made enclitic upon any member of the same clause by which it is preceded; while, on the other hand, it maintains in a dependent clause its own proper accent. But there are in the Atharvan a number of instances of accented verbs, which do not seem to fall so clearly within the sphere of action of this principle: either they are the effect of a wholly irregular extension of it beyond its proper limits, or they are due to the operation of some other principle, which needs to be evolved and stated, or they are isolated cases, destitute of all analogies, and on that account of doubtful authenticity. Before we proceed to the consideration of these remaining cases, we must take notice of the condition in which the accentuation of the Atharvan is presented by the manuscripts of the text now extant. The whole text is very much less accurately and correctly constructed than is that of the Rik: there are to be found in it gross blunders, of which the correction is almost at the first sight apparent, and many passages are in a very corrupt state, requiring extensive emendation. But it especially abounds in palpable errors of accentuation; many of these we have even not hesitated to amend in the published edition: thus, words of frequent occurrence have been in an instance or two accented upon the wrong syllable; nominatives have been erroneously taken for vocatives, and deprived of their accent, or vocatives have been falsely regarded as nominatives, and

where "and "here;" in xii. 2.32, 55, of "those there "and "these here;" in iv. 5. 7, of "others" and "myself;" in vi. 67. 3, of motion "away" and "hither;" in ix. 10. 9, of "today" and "yesterday;" in ix. 10. 23, of an idea and its negation. Moreover, wherever at -at, vâ-vâ, "either—or," are construed in two clauses with two separate verbs, the correlation is regarded as distinct enough to occasion the accenting of the first verb; the instances are not numerous, but they are all those in which this particle so occurs; they are v. 1. 7 (where, however, the effect of the relative in the second clause might possibly be supposed to extend back into the first), viii. 4. 9. In the following passage,

तस्य वा वं मन इहा स वा तर्व

thisya vå tvåm måna ichå' så vå tåva (xviii. 1. 16), the accent of the verb is unquestionably due to the same cause, although the sentence is incomplete, a part of the second clause, including its verb, being left to be supplied in idea from the first. More numerous are the cases in which the antithesis of $\neg\neg\neg$, ca—ca, "both—and," produces the same effect: they are ii. 6. 2; 13. 3. v. 4. 9; 23. 7 (where we have also, as in ix. 10. 23, the antithesis of an idea and its negation), vi. 110, 1. xiii. 1. 34 (ter). xvii. 6. xix. 24. 5, 6. In vii. 5. 5 is a like antithesis of $\neg\neg\neg$, uta—uta, unless we are rather to suppose the correlative force to lie in the two contrasted instrumentals. The following passage,

स्त्रियंश्व सर्वाः स्वापय शुनुश्चेन्द्रंसखा चर्न्

striyaç ca sárváh svápáya çúnaç cé 'ndrasakhâ cáran (iv. 5. 2), has been included above among the instances of initial accentuation, but is perhaps rather to be explained as an antithetical sentence of the class here treated of, of which the second member is defective, its verb requiring to be supplied from the first, as in the passage xviii. 1.16, just now cited. Several other of the passages formerly referred to may also receive a similar explanation: thus iv. 9. 9 (where arma, jambhayat, perhaps requires to be amended to arm, jambhaya), v. 27. 6. vi. 107. 1—4. vii. 4. 1. ix. 5. 37. xii. 3. 25: while vi. 106. 1. viii. 9. 13. xiii. 3. 12. xiv. 1. 64, admit of being looked upon as defective antitheses of the other kinds here treated of.

preserve the accent of the verb in the former clause. We have now farther to notice, that this principle has in the usage of the language received a somewhat inorganic extension; that it has been stretched to cover cases to which it did not in strictness apply. Such I conceive, namely, to be the explanation of the accent of the verb in a very considerable number of passages, where two clauses stand as correlatives to one another, or even where there is such a parallelism between them that they may be regarded as in a manner correlative. The coördination is treated as if it were a sub-ordination; the first of the coördinate clauses is looked upon as a protasis, to which the other constitutes an apodosis, and the verb of the former is allowed to remain orthotone.

Thus, for instance, when und und anya-anya, "the one —the other," stand opposed to one another, as subject or as object, in two like clauses, the verb of the first clause re-

tains its accent. Take as examples

दर्जं ते अन्य आवातु व्यर्थन्यो वातु यद्रपः

dáksham te anyá ává tu* vy ànyó vátu yád rápah (iv. 13. 2);

न्यर्भन्यं चिक्युर्न नि चिक्युर्न्यम्

ny ànyâm cikyâr nâ nî cikyar anyâm (ix. 10. 16). The other instances are vii. 81. 1. ix. 9. 20; 10. 26. x. 7. 42. xiii. 2. 11. Also the passage vii. 35. 1a, b, may properly be regarded as coming under this rule, although only one u-a, anya, that of the first clause, is there expressed; the other is contained in idea in the second clause.

In two cases, viz. x. 8. 36. xi. 8. 33, we have, instead of बन्दा, anya, एक – एक, eka—eka, with the same meaning, and

with a similar effect upon the accent of the verb.

In x. 8. 7, 13. xi. 4. 22, we find a like correlation produced by the use of wi-wi, ardha—ardha, "the one half—the other half."

But even where the correlation is less clearly and sharply brought out, if there is nevertheless a distinct antithesis, the same phenomenon of verbal accentuation is not infrequently presented. Thus we have in vi. 11.3 an antithesis of "else-

^{*} The reading of the printed text is false, and must be amended to agree with this.

be easy to multiply examples, but it is believed that enough has already been said to establish and illustrate that which it was our purpose to show; that the particle in question derives its power to render the verb orthotone from the weak causative signification which the usage of the lan-

guage has given it.

With regard to the particle and, net (pada-text angue, na it), usage is divided. It occurs, in connection with a verb, but four times in the Atharvan. In two passages, viz. vi. 50. 1. xiii. 1. 12, it renders the verb orthotone, as if, like the kindred particle and, cet, already treated of, it had acquired a subordinating force, and were equivalent to Latin ne, German dass nicht!; in the other two passages, viz. ii. 27. 1. xviii. 2. 58, it leaves the verb enclitic, as if the 3n, it, merely strengthened the force of the negative, as should be its most natural effect.

The three particles and, cet, and net, and net, hi, illustrate in an interesting manner each other's history. Neither of them has etymologically any relative or subordinating quality; they mean originally simply "and surely," "not surely," "surely;" but each has in the usage of the language developed out of this plain asseverative signification another which gives it the power to render the clause in which it is found dependent; and as "if," "lest," and "since," they make orthotone the verb with which they are construed.

The particle fan, kim, nowhere in the Atharvan exercises an influence upon the accent of the verb in its clause, even where, as in vii. 56. 6, 8, viii. 4. 14(?). xviii. 1. 12, 33, it appears to ask a direct question. In v. 11. 5, pâda c, a part of the manuscripts do indeed accent the verb, yet the weight of authority is in favor of the text as printed. When the particle means "what?", "why?", or "how!", as in v. 13. 7. vi. 45. 1. ix. 10. 18, etc., of course no effect upon the

accent would be expected from it.

We have thus seen that the direct subordination of one clause of a sentence to another has an effect to render orthotone the verb of the subordinated clause. We have also remarked, when treating of the particle $\frac{1}{12}$, hi, that the subordination does not always require to be absolute, but that a distinctly defined relation of two of the clauses of a sentence to one another as protasis and apodosis was sufficient to

to be unequal in force to our conjunction "for." In German, not even "for" gives to the clause which it introduces a dependent form: we say "Hilf uns, denn du bist machtig:" yet the difference between this and the dependent clause "... weil du machtig bist," "... because thou art mighty," is rather a formal than a logical one. There is a continuous scale of dependency in the phrases "thou art surely mighty," "for thou art mighty," "since thou art mighty," "because that thou art mighty," and while in German only the last is regarded as dependent, in Sanskrit the first is treated as if equivalent to any of the rest, and its verb is accented, according to the general rule for dependent clauses. We may reverse the order of the clauses in the example we have taken, and write

वलंवान्ह्यमि प्र नी ग्रव

bálaván hy ási prá no ava; and here too we have the verb accented, as if the translation were "Since thou art mighty, help us," "Da du ja mächtig bist, so hilf uns;" while, if closely interpreted, it is rather, "Thou art surely mighty, (then) help us," "Du bist ja mächtig, (also) hilf uns;" the particle hardly exercising a stronger force than to establish the relation of the two clauses as protasis and apodosis.

In almost every instance of the occurrence of & hi, in the Atharvan, it has more or less evidently this semi-condi-

tional force. Thus we have

उग्रा हि केएवजम्भेनी तामेभित्त सर्हस्वतीम्

ugrā' hi kanvajāmbhanî tâ'm abhakshi sāhasvatīm (ii. 25. 1), "Since it is a fierce destroyer of the kanva, it, the mighty, I have made use of." And again,

वि ते मुंबतां विमुचो हि मित

vi të municantam vimuco hi santi (vi. 112. 3),
"Let them release him, for they are releasers." It would

^{*} The printed text gives, on the authority of all the manuscripts, te; but the emendation as above is evidently necessary. In many other cases also, the manuscripts confound te and te.

क्षा वाचलाड्रावास

लक्में कुर्व इति मन्यते

lákshma kurva iti mányate (xii. 4. 6),

"If he thinks to himself 'I am making a mark;" yet the evidence to be derived from this is not wholly unambiguous, as it would not be altogether inadmissible to suppose the influence of the relative pronoun with which the verse be-

gins to extend itself to this part also.

It is a well known fact that, by Vedic usage, the particle te, hi, always accents the verb with which it is construed (as does also its negative, नाई, nahi). This also I ascribe to the conditional force inherent in it. It is, indeed, originally possessed of no such force; etymologically, it seems to be merely an asseverative particle, akin with 5, ha, and we, aha. It is, accordingly, in the later language not infrequently employed as an expletive, to fill out the artificial structure of the cloka; and it is sometimes, even in the Veda, found so used, having a hardly appreciable significance in the sentence in which it occurs. But it is ordinarily made use of to accompany and point out a circumstance which is put forward as the ground of, the reason for, the inducement to, some other action; and by virtue of this usage, it has acquired a certain degree of causative or conditional force. The transition of meaning may be illustrated by an example or two. If we say "Help us, thou art surely mighty," (German "Hilf uns, du bist ja mächtig,") there is no distinct subordination of the latter clause to the former, and yet the second clause is evidently alleged as the reason of the first, and it is but a step farther to say "Help us, for thou art mighty." The Sanskrit sentence

प्र नी ग्रंव बलेवान्ह्यसि

prá no ava bálaván hy ási,

would ordinarily, and with perfect correctness, be translated as equivalent to the latter form of the phrase; while it would nevertheless, strictly taken, rather correspond to the former. Indeed, as fo, hi, is never allowed to stand at the beginning of a sentence in Sanskrit, but must always follow some other word, and as it thus, although not enclitic, holds a subordinate position, it is still more clearly shown

निवन करा होता सन्दान

उदकं वाचत्युद्गावित

udakám yá'caty úd gâyatí (ix. 6. 48).

"If he offers water" (the hymn is extolling the merit of hospitable attentions paid to guests), "he sings a sâman" (that is, "it is of equal virtue with the religious action of singing a sâman"). Here the conditionality of the first clause seems to be the sufficient cause of the accent of the verb; and on the other hand, a comparison of the preceding clauses, as

ग्रभि वंदति प्र स्तीति

abla vadati prá stáuti,

"If he greets them, he utters praise," would seem to lead us to the recognition of this rule: that in such a situation the verb was left orthotone, except when compounded with a preposition, in which latter case the preposition still retained the accent." But this single passage is not sufficient to establish a general rule: it is to be hoped that material may be derived from the other accented texts which shall clear up the matter. There is, so far as I have observed, but one other passage in the Atharvan, where it seems necessary to regard a clause as conditional which contains no indicatory particle; viz:

श्तद्धो ज्योतिः पितरस्तृतीयं पत्तीदनं ब्रक्सणे जां देदाति

ctád vo jybtih pitaras trtí yam páñcâudanam brahmáne s jám

dadáti (ix. 5. 11),

"This is (i. e. wins) your third (i. e. highest) brightness, ye Fathers, that one gives to a Brahman a goat with five odanas." And here the verb is left unaccented, although not a compounded one. Whether the accentuation in either of these passages is erroneous, or how the seeming discrepancy between them is to be otherwise explained, I must leave an open question, until more light can be thrown upon the subject from other sources.

There is one other passage which might appear to re-

quire consideration in this connection:

^{*} See Benfey's Grammar, § 127. 1 (remark), 5, 9 (remark 1), 11, for instances of this difference in accentual usage between the simple and compounded verb.

been stated to be may be very satisfactorily shown. For other particles than those derived from the stem π , ya, if they have a like meaning, and possess the same power to render the sentence dependent, exercise the same influence upon the verb.

Thus चेत्, cet (which the pada-text divides into चाइतः, ca it), which means always distinctly "if," and is accordingly equivalent to चाइ, yadi, preserves, as the latter would do, the accent of the verb with which it is connected. Instances

of its occurrence are ii. 30, 2. v. 17, 3, 8, etc.

But \overline{a} , ca, itself, without always losing its proper signification "and," or meaning distinctly "if," is not very infrequently made use of to assist in indicating the conditionality of a clause, whose verb is then left orthotone. An instance is

स चीतिसृतेज्ञुंङ्गयात्र चीतिस्तेत्र बुंङ्गयात्

sá câ 'tisrjēj juhuyā'n nā câ 'tisrjēn nā juhuyāt (xv. 12. 3),
"And should he give permission, let him sacrifice; and should he not give permission, let him not sacrifice." Sometimes, indeed, the particle almost precisely equals at, yadi, as in the following passage:

किंस्ते अर्दत्ता पुरुषं याचितां च न दित्सीत

hinste údatta púrusham yacita'm ca ná ditsati (xii. 4. 13), "Ungiven she harms a man, if he will not give her when demanded." The conditionality of the clause is the main efficient cause of the accenting of the verb; whether the particle has a full conditional meaning, or is employed merely as an expedient for facilitating the expression, is a matter of minor consequence. The other Atharvan passages of this character are viii. 10. 31. xi. 3. 28, 29, 32—49a, 55, 56. xii. 4. 1, 16, 19, 25.

Whether a clause in any case, without the presence of a word conditioning or indicating its dependent character, can be in such wise dependent as that its verb should be thereby rendered orthotone, is a question for the solution of which the Atharvan hardly presents sufficient material. There is but a single passage which seems to speak clearly

with reference to this point:

VOL. V.

4. 1-6. xviii. 3. 8. In a few of these passages, however, the accent of the verb admits also of being explained in

another manner, as we shall see hereafter.

But on the other hand, it is quite as often the case in sentences of this character that the more obvious mode of division is followed, so that the verb remains unaccented. Instances are i. 12. 3. iii. 13, 6. viii. 10. 16. ix. 10. 26. xi. 9. 10. xv. 12. 5, 9. xvii. 17. xviii. 2. 7; 4. 11. xix. 10. 7; 36. 2; etc., etc.

Before proceeding to take notice of farther instances of verbal accentuation in the independent sentence, which are to be regarded as more special exceptions to the rules already stated, or as isolated and irregular cases, requiring particular explanation, we will consider the condition of the verb

in a dependent clause.

The Sanskrit, like the German, distinguishes in a marked manner its accessory and dependent from its direct and independent clauses, by its different treatment of the verb in the two cases. But while the German removes the verb of the subordinate sentence from its natural position, and places it at the end of the sentence, thus changing, for instance, "Ich habe dem Manne das Buch gegeben" to "Da ich dem Manne das Buch gegeben habe," the Sanskrit, on the other hand, alters in a similar case not the position, but the accentuation, of the verb, changing it from enclitic to orthotone. We have, accordingly, the following general rule: the Sanskrit verb retains in a dependent clause its own proper accent; and that, too, even at the cost, in case the verb be one compounded with a preposition, of the accent of the prefixed preposition.

As in German the dependent clause is wont to be introduced by some word of such signification as necessarily conditions its dependency, a relative or a subordinating conjunction, so also in Sanskrit it generally contains some form, of declension or of derivation, from the relative pronominal stem π , ya. The phenomenon, indeed, has on this account been always hitherto thus stated: "the verb is accented in a sentence which contains a form of π , ya," but it is impossible that we should remain contented with so empirical a rule as this; we must inquire in virtue of what principle it is that such words have a power to make the verb orthotone. And that the principle is indeed what it has above

But there is another class of cases in the Atharvan, in which the verb retains its accent in virtue of its initial position, while nevertheless it is only by an arbitrary division of the sentence that it comes to be looked upon and treated as occupying that position. This will be best illustrated by an example:

ग्रा नो गोषु भजता प्रजावीम्

a' no góshu bhájata' "praja'yam (vi. 55. 2),
"Upon us kine bestow upon us progeny." This is capable
of two modes of division; the comma may be placed either
before or after the verb; we may read "Upon us kine bestow, upon us progeny," or "Upon us kine, bestow upon
us progeny." The former is the more natural and easy;
but the latter is not inadmissible, even in the English translation, and is notably easier in the Sanskrit original. In
the first case the verb would be enclitic, in the second it
would be orthotone; that in the text it actually does retain
its accent shows that the sentence requires to be divided in
the second manner. Another example is

जिन्ह्या ज्या भवति कुल्मलं वाक्

jihvá' jyá' bhávati kúlmalain vá'k (v. 18. 8),

"Lingua ejus in nervum convertitur in sagittam vox;" here,
too, the verb is accented in virtue of the division "Lingua
ejus in nervum, convertitur in sagittam vox." We have,
then, the rule, that if the verb be both preceded and followed
by either a subject or an object, to each of which it equally
in idea belongs, it may be regarded as directly construed
with the latter of the two, and may accordingly receive the
accent.

Instances coming under the action of this rule are not very rare in the Atharvan. They are* iv. 5. 2; 9. 9. v. 18. 8; 27. 6. vi. 55. 2; 92. 3; 106. 1; 107. 1-4. vii. 4. 1. viii. 9. 13; 10. 12, 13, 22-29. ix. 5. 37. x. 8. 8. xii. 3. 25, 48. xiii. 1. 19; 2. 26; 3. 12. xiv. 1. 64. xv. 3. 4, 5, 10;

In a few of these passages, viz. viii. 10. 12, 13, 22-29. xv. 4. 1-6, the accent has, owing to a misunderstanding, been omitted from the verbs in the published text, and requires to be restored, in accordance with the unanimous authority of the manuscripts.

From this list I have omitted, however, all those not infrequent cases which come under the operation of the familiar rule given by the Indian grammarians, that a verb is accented if immediately preceded by another verb. It is perfectly obvious that such a case is in reality only one coming under the general rule for the accenting of a verb at the head of its own clause in the sentence: there can be but one finite verb in a single clause; if, then, any verb immediately follows another verb, it necessarily occupies the initial position, and cannot be encliticized. Thus, in the sentence

तस्मा ग्रचीम कृणवीम निष्कृतिम्

tismā arcāma krņāvāma nishkrtim (vi. 27. 1), the accent of the second verb is in no manner owing to the contiguity of the word which precedes it, but to the fact that it is followed by the only word directly connected with it in construction: it would equally require to be accented if the sentence were thus arranged;

अर्चाम् तस्मै कृणवाम् निष्कृतिम्

árcama tásmái krnáváma níshkrtím, and could be made enclitic only by having its own subject placed before it; as

तस्मा ग्रचीम निष्कृतिं कृणवाम

tásmá arcama nishkrtim krnaváma.

We might take one of the sentences previously given, and, by altering a little its arrangement, seem to bring its accentuation within the scope of the Indian rule; as

यावी पातु पातु सोमी नो ग्रंईसः

grá'vá pátu pá'tu sómo no ánhasah;

whereas in fact the second un, patu, would still continue to retain its accent for the same reason as before, and for no other. Farther illustration is unnecessary: it is only to be wondered at that a rule so empirical as that of the Indian grammars should have maintained itself so long in currency, and that the true meaning of the phenomenon should not have been sooner remarked.

And even if the object of the verb precede the latter, it does not take away its accent, provided it be also at the same time the object of another verb: thus

यात्धानस्य सामप त्राके प्रतां नयस्य च

yátudhá nasya somapa jahí prajá m náyasva ca (i. 8. 3). Here the first verb is accented as standing at the head of the pada, the second as commencing a new clause; the division of the sentence being made between the common object and the latter of the two verbs. A similar case, in which a common subject is regarded as belonging especially to the former of two verbs, and the latter one is accented, is

शृणोर्तु नः सुभगा बोधतु त्मनी

grnótu nah subhágá bódhatu tmáná (vii. 48. 1).

It is not very often that a division of the sentence into separate clauses thus takes place within the pada, and that at the same time a verb happens to stand first after the divis-And as the phenomenon is an interesting one, as indicating the necessity that the word to whose accent that of the verb is subordinated must be immediately connected in construction with the latter, and not a part of any other clause, I give here a complete list of all the instances of its occurrence found in the Atharvan. They are i. 8. 8; 17. 2. ii. 5. 4 (bis); 10. 7. iv. 5. 6; 11. 12; 21. 1. v. 2. 9. vi. 3. 1. 2; 4.2; 9.1; 44.1; 77.1; 99.3; 136.2. vii.14.4; 48.1. viii.1.12; 2.3; 4.1,13,18. ix.1.8; 6.61; 10.6. x.4.12; 8. 26. xii. 3. 31. xiii. 1. 30; 4. 48, 55. xvi. 6. 1. xviii. 1. 23. xix. 45. 5; 49. 6; 58. 4. There is no case in the text in which a verb occupying this position is not accented, unless it be the following:

तप्तो घर्मी इंद्यते वामिषे मध्

taptó gharmó duhyate vám ishé mádhu (vii. 73. 1).

If this is to be translated, as the analogy of the next verse seems to indicate, "the gharma is heated; honey is poured out to you for food," then the verb needs to be accented द्वात, duhyáte, and the reading should be so amended.

In some of these cases, the accentuation is an important indication of the way in which the structure of the sentence

is to be understood.

As regards the working of this rule, it is to be remarked that in poetry each pâda, or ultimate subdivision of the verse, is treated as if it constituted an independent clause, and a verb standing at the head of it remains orthotone, even though preceded in another pâda by words directly dependent upon it. The following is an instance:

धातुर्देवस्यं सत्येनं कृणोिमं पतिवेदंनम्

dhâtúr devásya satyéna krnómi pativédanam (ii. 36. 2).

Other cases are i. 8. 3, 4; 17. 1; 31. 1. ii. 9. 4, 5. iii. 10.

12. v. 22. 12. vi. 54. 2; 60. 3, etc., etc.

But farther, if the verb is preceded in the sentence or pâda only by a vocative, it retains its accent. The reason of this is sufficiently obvious. The vocative really forms no part of the sentence to which it is attached; it is neither subject nor predicate; it is a mere excrescence, a parenthesis; it is not, then, so connected in construction with the verb that the latter can be made dependent upon it with respect to accent. We have, accordingly,

सीते वन्दीमहे वा विश्वें देवा वसेवो रस्तिमम्

sî'te vândâmahe tvâ (iii. 17. 8); viçve devâ vâsavo râkshate 'mâm (i. 30. 1). It is unnecessary to cite more of the numerous illustrations of this principle which are to be found in the text.

By the first rule, as stated, the verb is made dependent for accent only upon some word construed directly with it. If, then, a sentence be composed of several clauses, a verb standing at the head of any one of them will keep its own accent. Instances are

पातु ग्रावा पातु सोमी नो ग्रंहंसः

pá'tu grá'vá pá'tu sómo no ánhasah (vi. 3. 2);

ग्रहा ग्ररातिमविदः स्योनम्

áhá árátim ávidah syonám (ii. 10. 7);

विश्वकर्मन्नमंस्ते पान्धर्भमान्

víçvakarman námas te pâhy àsmâ'n (equal to pâhi asmâ'n) (ii. 35. 4).

rect object, or other limiting circumstance, it takes away the accent from the verb itself. Take as instances the following clauses.

अम्बवी वस्वधंभिः

शिवा भव

ambáyo yanty ádhvabhih (i. 4. 1); çivd bhava (iii. 28. 3);

तत्कृषमो ब्रह्मं तस्यं भाजयतेहः नः

tát krnmo bráhma (iii. 30. 4); tásya bhájayate 'há nah (i. 5. 2);

ग्रुभि क्रेन्द् प्र त्रीसव ग्रा वीरो उत्रे जावताम्

abhí kranda prá trásaya (v. 21. 4); á' vîró stra jáyatám (iii. 23. 2).

Even if other unaccented words intervene between the accent and the verb, the effect upon the latter remains the same: thus

मधुना वा खनामिस नर्मस्ते हृद्र कृएमः

mádhuná tvá khanámasi (i. 34. 1); námas te rudra krnmah

(xi. 2, 3).

It is well known that, by the operation of this rule, the Sanskrit verb is in a large majority of cases deprived of its accent. Thus verbal forms of the root at kar, which are perhaps found in the Vedic texts with greater frequency and in greater variety than those of any other root, occur in the Atharvan four hundred and ninety-eight times; but only one hundred and forty-six times do they maintain their own proper accent; in the remaining three hundred and fifty-two instances they are accentless or enclitic.

If, however, the verb stands at the head of the sentence, it cannot, of course, be encliticized, but retains its accent; thus

द्र्शवं मा यातुधानान् वृश्वामि शत्रूणां वाङ्गन्

darçûya mû yûtudhû nûn (iv. 20. 6); vrçcû mi çûtrûnûm bûhû'n

(vi. 65. 2).

This is in accordance with Greek usage, by which a word usually enclitic remains orthotone, if it stands first in the sentence. As the Sanskrit has no proclitics, its sentences always commence with an accented word.

marians occupy with reference to this department of grammar the same position as to other departments also; that while they are laborious and ingenious assemblers and arrangers of particular facts, their shallow philosophy, and laboriously unnatural and arbitrary method, render them utterly unreliable guides for us to a true knowledge of the Sanskrit language, since their rules require to be explained, and limited, and re-arranged, by the light of the very facts which they attempt to classify and account for. I referred, at the close of my former remarks upon the subject, to this untrustworthiness of those who had been our chief authorities with reference to it, and expressed my opinion, that a rational and exhaustive theory of the principles producing the phenomena of verbal accentuation in Sanskrit, could only be arrived at by a careful study of the phenomena themselves, as laid before us in the various accented Vedic texts. I was then already engaged in assembling from the text of the Atharva-Veda all the material which could aid in elucidating the matter, all the passages in which the accent was not determined by, or in accordance with, the most general rules of accentuation, and which accordingly suggested more special rules, or appeared to be anomalous and exceptional cases; and as I have now completed the collection, I take this opportunity of presenting it to the Society, hoping that it will be found not without value as a contribution to the theory of Sanskrit accent. So far as was in my power, I have classified and explained the facts collected, presenting them in connection with the rules which they illustrate, and have thus been compelled to go over in part the same ground which I formerly traversed; if of a portion of them I am unable to give a satisfactory account, their statement here will at any rate tend to render possible their future explanation, by facilitating their examination by others, and their farther comparison with kindred facts, to be derived from the other accented texts.

The first and most general rule for the accentuation of the verb in the Sanskrit sentence is this. In a direct or independent sentence, or clause of a sentence, the finite verb is made enclific upon any word preceding it which is directly connected with it in construction. It matters not what part of the sentence that word may be which stands before the verb; whether subject or predicate, whether direct or indi-

CONTRIBUTIONS FROM THE ATHARVA-VEDA

TO THE

THEORY OF SANSKRIT VERBAL ACCENT.

AT a former meeting of the Society, I had the honor to lay before it, in connection with a review of a late work by Prof. Bopp, of Berlin, an attempt to state in a new and improved form the rules respecting the accentuation of the finite verb in the Sanskrit sentence.* That such an attempt was called for, will be evident enough to any one who will refer to the statement of these rules which is given in Benfey's larger Sanskrit grammar, + the latest and most elaborate work of its class, and the only one which professes to treat the subject in an exhaustive manner. It is not too much to say that the account of the phenomena of verbal accentuation which is there presented is entirely unsatisfactory, or even unintelligible; that it is plainly wanting in true method; that it is no orderly development from a central principle, subordinating the more particular to the more general, and giving each special rule its due proportion in the sum of the whole, but, on the contrary, a chaos of rules and exceptions, empirically stated and confusedly thrown together. That this is so, is not so much the fault of Prof. Benfey, as of the Indian grammarians, from whom, and not from the Sanskrit literature itself, he has drawn the materials out of which he has constructed his grammar: doubtless his statement is the best that could be derived from such sources; its imperfections only prove that the native gram-

^{*} See above, p. 213, etc.

[†] Vollständige Grammatik der Sanskritsprache, § 127, etc.

TARREST PERSONAL ACCESSES

Charles of State of the Control of t

ARTICLE IV.

CONTRIBUTIONS

FROM

THE ATHARVA-VEDA

TO THE THEORY OF

SANSKRIT VERBAL ACCENT.

BY

WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, FROFESSOR OF SANSKRIT IN TALE COLLEGE.

(Read October 8, 1856.)

A CLASSIC CONTRACTOR OF THE PARTY OF THE PARTY OF COUNTY OF THE REAL PROPERTY. The state of the s

Such are the fundamental doctrines, the moral groundwork, of the Iranian religion as reformed by Zoroaster, and no one can fail to see and acknowledge their noble and exalted character. As laid before us in the Avesta, they are not unmixed, it is true, with much that is of far inferior interest. In order to obtain a view of them thus in their native purity, we have to remove somewhat of the rubbish of ceremonial and outward observance with which they are encumbered and concealed, and to pass over in silence some features of belief not altogether worthy of them, the accretion, in part, of a later time. Yet they are really there, and do in fact constitute the basis on which the whole fabric of Iranian religion and philosophy has been reared. It would seem as if, in the right hands, they might have maintained themselves in their purity, and even have led the way to something still better and higher. But this has not been the case. That corruption and decay which has seemed to be the destiny of everything Oriental, has not spared the Zoroastrian religion. Its external rites, indeed, have maintained themselves with a tenacity truly remarkable: that little community of strangers on the western Indian coast, now the only remaining adherents of a faith which was in old times professed throughout the whole vast Iranian territory, worship still with the same forms as did their forefathers, three thousand years ago: but the spirit of the ancient religion is lost, and its practices are kept up by the Parsis rather from habit and a clannish spirit, than from any real religious sentiment, or proper understanding of the doctrines they symbolize.

by the especial presence of the divinity, were performed the

chief rites of worship.

The doctrines of the Zoroastrian religion respecting death, and the fate of mankind after death, are a very remarkable and interesting part of it, strikingly exhibiting both its weakness and its strength. On the one hand, as sickness and death were supposed to be the work of the malignant powers, the dead body itself was regarded with superstitious horror. It had been got by the demons into their own peculiar possession, and became a chief medium through which they exercised their defiling action upon the living. Everything that came into its neighborhood was unclean, and to a certain extent exposed to the influences of the malevolent spirits, until purified by the ceremonies which the law prescribed. The corpse was plainly arrayed, and removed as soon as might be from the company of living men: but where should it be deposited? neither of the pure elements, earth, fire, or water, might receive it; so to soil their purity would be the worst of crimes: it was exposed in a place prepared for the purpose, and left to be devoured by beasts and birds of prey, and only after the bones had been thoroughly stripped of flesh, and dried and bleached, was it allowed to hide them away in the ground. But while the body was thus dishonored, the different nature and separate destiny of the soul was fully believed in. If the person of whose mortal form the demons had thus obtained possession had been during life a sincere worshipper of Mazda, if he had abhorred evil, and striven after truth and purity, then the powers of evil had no hold upon his soul; this, after hovering for a time about its former tenement, hoping for a reunion with it, was supposed to pass away beyond the eastern mountains from which the sun rises, to the paradise of the holy and benevolent gods: the souls of the unbelieving and the evil-doers, however, were not deemed worthy of that blessedness, and were thought, so it seems, to be destroyed with the body.

It cannot be said, however, that this belief in immortality, and, to a certain extent, in a future state of rewards and punishments, formed a prominent feature of the Iranian religion, any more than of the Indian, or that it was made to enter into the daily practice of life as an ever-present and

powerful incentive to good conduct.

by setting up an undefined being, Zervan-akerene, "time unbounded," from which were made to originate the two hostile principles, and for which they sought to find a place among the original tenets of their religion by a misinterpre-

tation of certain passages in the sacred texts.

Such being the constitution of the universe, such the powers by which it was governed, the revelation was made by the benevolent Creator to his chosen servant for the purpose of instructing mankind with reference to their condition, and of teaching them how to aid the good, how to avoid and overcome the evil. The general features of the method by which this end was to be attained are worthy of all praise and approval. It was by sedulously maintaining purity, in thought, word, and deed; by truthfulness, temperance, chastity; by prayer and homage to Ahura-Mazda and the other beneficent powers; by the performance of good works, by the destruction of noxious creatures; by everything that could contribute to the welfare and happiness of the human race. No cringing and deprecatory worship of the powers of evil was enjoined; toward them the attitude of the worshipper of Mazda was to be one of uncompromising hostility; by the power of a pure and righteous walk he was to confound and frustrate their malevolent attempts against his peace. Fasts and penance, except as imposed by way of penalty for committed transgression. were unknown. Religious ceremonies were few and simple, for the most part an inheritance from the primitive Aryan time: they were connected chiefly with the offering of Homa (Indian Soma*), and with the fire. + The latter was to the ancient Iranians, and has remained down to the present day, the sacred symbol of divinity. An object of worship, properly so called, it never was; it was only invested with the same sanctity which belonged also to the other elements, the pure creations of Ahura-Mazda: all were invoked and addressed with homage, and it was unpardonable sin to profane them with impurity. Fire was kept constantly burning in an enclosed space; not in a temple, for idols and temples have been alike unknown throughout the whole course of Persian history: and before it, as in a spot consecrated

<sup>See this Journal, vol. iii, p. 299.
See as above, p. 817.</sup>

and the seven Amshaspands (Amesha-Openta, "Immortal Holy-ones,") whose identity with the Adityas of the Veda has been conjectured; they appear here, however, with new titles, expressive of moral attributes. The other gods of the original Aryan faith, although they have retained their ancient name of daeva (Sanskrit deva), have lost their individuality and their dignity, and have been degraded into the demons, the malignant and malevolent spirits, of the new religion; just as, when Christianity was introduced into Germany, the former objects of heathen worship were not at once and altogether set aside and forgotten, but maintained a kind of place in the popular belief as mischievous spirits of evil. The Daevas, together with other classes of beings of like character, form a body of malevolent and harmful powers corresponding to the Indian rakshas. At their head, and the chief embodiment of the spirit which inspires them, is Angra-Mainyus (Arimanius, Ahriman), the "Sinful-minded," or "Malevolent;" his name is one given him as an antithesis to the frequent epithet of Ahura-Mazda, cpento-maingus, "holy-minded," or "benevolent." This side of the religion came to receive, however, a peculiar development, which finally converted the religion itself into a dualism. Such was not its character at the period represented by the Avesta; then the demons were simply the embodiment of whatever evil influences existed in the universe, of all that man has to hate, and fear, and seek protection against. This was the Persian or Zoroastrian solution of the great problem of the origin of evil. There was wickedness, impurity, unhappiness, in the world; but this could not be the work of the holy and benevolent Creator Ahura-Mazda; the malevolence of Angra-Mainyus and his infernal legions must have produced it. Later, however, a reasoning and systematizing philosophy inquires: how came there to be such a malevolent being in the fair world of the benevolent Creator? can he have been produced by him? and why, if an inferior and subject power, is he not annihilated. or his power to harm taken away? and then arises the doctrine that the powers of good and evil are independent and equal, ever warring with one another, neither able wholly to subdue its adversary. This latter phase of belief is known to have appeared very early in the history of the Zoroastrian religion; the philosophers aided its development

a carrying out of tendencies already existing in the general religious sentiment, a reformation of the old established creed, which the time was prepared for and demanded. And so it was in the present instance. We are able, by the aid of the Indian Veda, to trace out with some distinctness the form of the original Aryan faith, held before the separation of the Indian and Persian nations. It was an almost pure nature-religion; a worship of the powers conceived to be the producers of all the various phenomena of the sensible creation, and, of course, a polytheism, as must be the first religion of any people who without higher light are striving to solve for themselves the problem of the universe. But even in the earliest Vedic religion appears a tendency toward an ethical and monotheistic development, evidenced especially by the lofty and ennobling moral attributes and authority ascribed to the god Varuna: and this tendency, afterwards unfortunately checked and rendered inoperative in the Indian branch of the race, seems to have gone on in Persia to an entire transformation of the natural religion into an ethical, of the polytheism into a monotheism; a transformation effected especially by the teachings of the religious reformer Zoroaster. It is hardly to be questioned that Varuna himself is the god out of whom the Iranians made their supreme divinity: the ancient name, however, nowhere appears in their religious records; they have given him a new title, Ahura-Mazda, "Spiritual Mighty-one," or "Wise-one" (Aura-Mazda of the Inscriptions; Oromasdes and Ormuzd of the classics and modern Persians). The name itself indicates the origin of the conception to which it is given; a popular religion does not so entitle its creations, if indeed it brings forth any of so elevated and spiritual a character. Ahura-Mazda is a purely spiritual conception; he is clothed with no external form or human attributes; he is the creator and ruler of the universe, the author of all good; he is the only being to whom the name of a god can with propriety be applied in the Iranian religion. Other beings, of subordinate rank and inferior dignity, are in some measure associated with him in the exercise of his authority; such are Mithra, the ancient sun-god, and almost inseparable companion of Varuna in the Vedic invocations,

^{*} See this Journal, vol. iii. p. 815, etc.

of belief which have prevailed upon the earth, by reason both of the influence which it has exerted, and of its own intrinsic character. It was, indeed, never propagated by missionary labors beyond the limits of Iran; we know of no people not of Persian origin who accepted it voluntarily, or upon whom it was forced; but its position on the eastern border of the Semitic races allowed it to affect and modify the various religions of Semitic origin. The later Jewish religion is believed by many to exhibit evident traces of Zoroastrian doctrines, borrowed during the captivity in Babylonia; and the creeds of some Oriental Christian sects, as well as of a portion of the adherents of Islam, have derived essential features from the same source. But the influence which its position only gave it the opportunity of exercising, was assured to it by its own exalted character. Of all the religions of Indo-European origin, of all the religions of the ancient Gentile world, it may fairly be claimed to have been the most noble and worthy of admiration, for the depth of its philosophy, the spirituality of its views and doctrines, and the purity of its morality. Valuable notices respecting it had been given by the classical writers, yet they had been altogether insufficient to convey a clear view even of its then condition in the western provinces to which it had spread, much less to illustrate its origin, and the history of its development in the land of its birth. Had the Avesta no other merit than that of laying before us a full picture of the ancient Persian religion, it would be a document of incalculable value to the student of antiquity.

A brief sketch of the characteristic features of this religion will form a not inappropriate close to a paper on the

Avesta.

By the testimony of its own scriptures, the Iranian religion is with the fullest right styled the Zoroastrian: Zoroaster is acknowledged as its founder throughout the whole of the sacred writings; these are hardly more than a record of the revelations claimed to have been made to him by the supreme divinity. It is not, then, a religion which has grown up in the mind of a whole people, as the expression of their conceptions of things supernatural; it has received its form in the mind of an individual; it has been inculcated and taught by a single sage and thinker. Yet such a religion is not wont to be an entirely new creation, but rather

superior to that of the West. It is well known that the modern Persians are in possession of a traditionary account of their race, which professes to cover its whole history. from the earliest to the latest times. This account is presented to us in the great poem of Firdusi, the Shah-Nameh, or Book of Kings, one of the earliest and most famous productions of the new era of Persian literature, and one of the most remarkable works which any Oriental literature can boast; a true epic, in which the mythic and heroic legends of the olden time, after being long preserved and handed down by tradition, laid up in the national memory, and worked over, and developed, and systematized, by the national mind, are finally reduced to form, and woven together into one connected story, by a national poet, whose version is then universally accepted, and becomes the acknowledged and credited history of the people. In this epic we read nothing of the Achaemenidan kings: that proudest period of Persian empire is passed over without a notice: in its earliest accounts figure personages respecting whom Occidental history is silent: the struggle which constitutes its central point of interest is not that between Asia and Europe for the dominion of the civilized world, but that between Iran and Turan, the Persian and Turkish races, for the possession of the Iranian territory. There was a time when this strange history was a puzzle to the student of Oriental antiquity; when, in the apprehension of some, it cast doubts upon the authenticity of the classic accounts; when attempts were made to analyze it, and extract from it a true historic element. Now the Avesta has solved the riddle; it has shown the mythic origin of many of the personages and events presented as historical, and has exhibited the motives which directed the popular mind in its selection of the circumstances which it retained, and in their combination. It has, then, at least explained the origin of the native traditionary history, and determined what part shall be asssigned to it in the reconstruction of the actual history of the race.

The proper office of the Avesta, however, is to inform us respecting the moral and religious tenets and institutions of the ancient Iranian people. And its importance in virtue of this office is not to be lightly estimated. The Zoroastrian religion is one of the most prominent among the forms

Such is the race of whose ancient language and literature the Avesta, together with the translations and related fragments accompanying it, is, save a few inscriptions, the only surviving representative. From such remains, of course, we do not look for direct contributions to the external history of Iran. Nor is that what was especially to be desired. The general features of the story were already before us, derived from other sources. What we most wanted in addition was clear and reliable information as to the genealogical relations of the Persian people, and such an insight into their native character, and such a view of their earliest institutions, as should serve for a key to the after development of both, and to the relations of their various recorded phases. When we recall with what pains-taking industry had been wont to be collected from the classic authors a scanty list of Persian words, of doubtful authenticity, for the purpose of shedding light upon the position occupied by that people among the races of men, we see clearly of what value is the abundant supply of evidence furnished by the Avesta. The modern Persian showed satisfactorily, it is true, that Iran was peopled by a race of Indo-European origin; but it is a language of so altered and modernized a form, that hardly more than this general conclusion could have been derived from it with any certainty. Its deficiencies might have been partly supplied by the Cuneiform Inscriptions of the Achæmenidan monarchs, yet it was mainly by the aid of the Avestan that these were themselves deciphered and made available. whole field of Persian ethnology and philology has been brightly illuminated by the Avesta, and made one of the best understood, as well as most instructive and interesting, of all those which are open to science in this department.

But in one or two important particulars the Avesta adds, directly and indirectly, to our knowledge even of the external history of the Iranian peoples. The classic writers had dealt almost exclusively with the western provinces, and without this new authority we should have known little of the eastern and northeastern regions of Iran: we should never have suspected that the latter were not only the most ancient home of the race, but also the birthplace of its civilization and religion; the true national centre, whose importance in the general sum of the national history, as estimated by popular recollection and tradition, was decidedly

of the condition of that primitive epoch when the Indian and Persian peoples were still dwelling together, one nation in language, institutions and territory; an epoch a thousand years more remote in the annals of the family than is

reached even by Greek tradition.

Iran itself, apart from the genealogical relations of its people, is of consequence enough to render the fullest illustration of its history a thing greatly to be desired. From the earliest commencement of recorded history down to the present time, it has been eminent among the nations of the earth. The extent of Persian empire in its period of highest glory is hardly surpassed by that which Roman dominion attained centuries later. Its overthrow by the Macedonian conqueror was but a momentary fall; we might almost say, only the overthrow of a corrupt royalty and nobility. Under the Parthian and Sassanian dynasties, Iranian nationality reasserted itself, and its new life was far from inglorious. It sank again, completely and finally, as it seemed, before the onset of Mohammedan valor and religious enthusiasm, yet it reacted powerfully upon its conquerors; the influence exerted by Persian culture upon the comparatively uncivilized Arab tribes was great and controlling; their literature and science had in a great measure a Persian origin. And once more Iran raised its head; after three hundred years of servitude, there was yet vigor of life enough left in the old race to penetrate, and animate anew with a Persian spirit, even the foreign doctrines and institutions which had been imposed upon it; its independence was at least partially recovered, and with the eleventh century commenced a new era of Persian literature, whose productions are the most brilliant flowers grown on eastern soil. The names of Firdusi, of Hafiz, of Jami, of Saadi, are worshipped in the East, and honored in the West; their works have more of that intrinsic literary merit which endears them to all times and countries than any others which Oriental nations have originated. Arms and literature have combined to extend Persian influence far beyond the limits of Iran; it is felt all the way from Constantinople to Calcutta. Turkish and Hindustânî are thickly set with Persian words; Persian is the language of courts, and of the elegantly educated, and Persian classics are the favorite models for imitation in every branch of composition.

of years have done to efface it. We have, then, before us for a task the investigation of the history of this family as a family; we have not only to follow up, so far as their records will allow, the story of each separate member; we have to strive to penetrate beyond this into the darkness of the ante-historic period, to discover the place where they dwell together, the conditions which were common to them all, the epoch of their dispersion, the wanderings and adventures of each on its way to the possession of the seat in which we finally find it established. As the materials of the investigation, we have the languages of the various nations, and such information as we can glean respecting the beginnings of their history. And, of course, the farther back we can in any instance penetrate, the nearer will be our approach to the primitive time, the more direct the light which will be thrown upon the common antiquity of the family. This shows us how we have to estimate the value of the ancient Persian history. Persia is, in a certain sense, the elder brother of the family, and deserving of especial honor from the rest, since it was the first to assume that importance in the eyes of the world which the family has ever since maintained, and promises henceforth always to maintain; the prominence of the Indo-European races, as actors in the great drama of universal history, commences with the era of Persian empire. And the Persian language, and the Persian institutions, as represented to us by the Avesta, lead us back nearer to the primitive period than do those of any other nation, with the exception only of the Indian. It is especially, however, as an auxiliary to India, that Persia offers contributions of value to general Indo-European history. It is now becoming familiarly known how much the latter depends for its illustration upon Indian archeology; how that the antiquity and wonderful conservation of the language of India, the Sanskrit, the original simplicity of its earliest recorded customs, and the primitiveness of its myths and traditions, render them more direct illustrations than any other information we possess, of the state and condition of the family prior to its dispersion. But the relation between Persia and India is so intimate that each essentially aids in the comprehension of the other; the Veda and Avesta, those two most venerable documents of Indo-European history, illuminate each other's pages, and, taken together, lay before our eyes a view

to lament and disapprove. An increased value, of course, is conferred upon any literary remains by superiority of absolute merit, when considered simply as works of the human mind, without reference to the place or period of their production; and again, if they be regarded in the light of historical documents, it is plain that the higher their character, the higher was the intellectual and moral development of the nation which originated them, and the more important will be the illustration of its history, and the more valuable the instruction to be derived therefrom. But yet the story of the human mind is hardly less full of interest in its weaknesses, imperfections, and errors, than in its successes and proudest triumphs, and lessons almost as noteworthy are to be learned in the one case as in the other. The sum of interest attaching to the history of an ancient people will depend, not solely upon the degree of culture, or the extent of empire, to which that people may have attained, but also upon its position, connections, and influence, and upon the ability of its records to throw light upon the condition and fates of other peoples in whom we also feel a high interest.

Let us take, then, briefly, such a view of Persian nationality and culture, in their history and relations, as will enable us to appreciate the value of the new illustration of

them which is furnished by the Avesta.

In the first place, the Iranian people is of our own kindred. a branch of the great Indo-European family, to which we, along with all the most highly civilized races of the present age, belong. Its history, accordingly, constitutes a part of the history of this most important division of the human race. From the separate contributions of each member is to be made up the general story of the family; and the completeness of this, and therefore the full understanding of each part of it, requires that the fates of no people of Indo-European origin should fail to be rehearsed in it. The Indo-European nations are a band of brothers, descended from one ancestor; they had all a common starting point, and, for a time, a common history, widely scattered as they now are over the face of the earth; they had common beliefs and institutions, and a common language, different as they seem to be in all these respects to one who regards only their present condition; there is a family likeness among them, distinguishing them from all other nations, much as thousands

interpretation, both in the East and in the West, from its origin down to the present time. It may now be inquired what advantages we are to derive from our possession of it; how it is to us a valuable recovery from among the lost treasures of ancient literature. Such questions were once asked in a disparaging and contemptuous spirit; Anquetil was derided by some of his contemporaries for having suffered a farrago of nonsense and puerilities to be palmed off upon him by his Parsi teachers as the works of the sage Zoroaster; for having wasted his zeal and efforts in acquiring for Europe a worthless text, which had no claim upon our regard or study. And it is true that if the object sought to be attained by bringing the Avesta to the West had been the acquisition for the latter of new treasures of profound wisdom, elevated religious sentiment, and inspired and inspiring poetry, then the undertaking could not be regarded as crowned with success. Much of the reproach of inflated emptiness brought against the work as interpreted by Anguetil belonged, it is true, only to his interpretation of it, vet the minute details of a trivial ceremonial, and the monotonous repetitions of formulas of praise and homage, of which it is actually, to a considerable extent, made up, as well as its depiction of conceptions and customs absurd or offensive, were not calculated to attract by virtue of their own intrinsic interest. Such, however, is not the point of view from which the value of a recovery like this will now be judged; such are not the aims and expectations with which we study the records of primeval thought and culture: we do not go to them to learn religion, or philosophy, or science, nor to have our hearts touched and swaved by the surpassing power of poetic thoughts and fancies; we go to read the early history of the human race, to trace out the efforts of man to comprehend, and make himself master of, his circumstances; to obtain light respecting the origin of ideas and institutions; to derive information as to the relationship, and intercourse, and mutual influence of ancient nations. It would enter into no cultivated mind now to question the high worth of writings of undoubted authenticity coming down from a remote antiquity, because they were found to be deficient in literary merit, when judged by modern standards; or because in the character of the mind they portraved, and the conditions reflected in them, there was much

labor of many students, nor can we hope to see it ever more than approximately accomplished. Now the work of presenting to a wider circle of inquirers and investigators a thoroughly reliable interpretation of the Iranian scriptures must, in the main, keep pace with this critical treatment of their text; and all results founded upon a present translation of them must be received with some degree of caution. There was a time when Anquetil's version was implicitly accepted as an authority; now that its utter unreliability is clearly proved, there is nothing to take its place in the general estimation. Spiegel would not himself claim, in behalf of his translation of the Vendidad, anything more than an approximate correctness. But there are special reasons why his work is less satisfactory than such a work might have been expected to be made even now. He has constituted himself the particular advocate and patron of the native traditional interpretation, giving it an undue prominence among the aids to the comprehension of its original; he has seemed to make it his first principle to be true to the tradition, as he understands it, and only his second to be true to the text. But all experience has shown, with regard to these so-called traditional interpretations, that they are unsafe guides, inaccurate and uncritical, accustomed to foist in upon their texts the conceptions and dogmas of a later period. Nor is there anything in the character of the Zend which should make it an exception to the general rule; it has, rather, its own especial deficiencies and difficulties, as being composed in an obscure, and hitherto only partially understood dialect. Spiegel has, as Westergaard maintains, essentially misapprehended the character of the Pehlevî, regarding as a peculiar and much more ancient language what is, in fact, only simple Parsi, disguised by a strange and artificial orthography, then it is clear that his translation of the Avesta, made chiefly through the Zend, cannot be otherwise than a very imperfect work, however much we may have to be grateful to him for his contribution toward the accomplishment of a task beset with so many and so great difficulties. When an accurate version of the Zoroastrian scriptures is at length offered to the world, it will owe not a little to the labors of Friedrich Spiegel.

We have thus reviewed the history of the Avesta, and of the labors which have been devoted to its preservation and

early history of Persian culture and religion, as also respecting the history of the Zoroastrian writings, and their introduction to the knowledge of the West. It is farther followed by three essays (Excursen), treating, respectively, of the influence of the Semitic religions upon the ancient Persian religion, of the age of the Huzvaresh or Pehlevi language, and of the composition of the Vendidad; while each chapter of the translation is prefaced by a more or less extended explication of its contents and their significance. But this translation itself, although undoubtedly a great improvement upon that of Anquetil, cannot be regarded as an entirely successful work, nor can implicit confidence be placed in it as an accurate version of its original. Indeed, to furnish a satisfactory interpretation of the Avesta is obviously a task of far greater difficulty than to prepare a first edition of its texts. For the latter, all accessible materials had been assembled: it was not to be hoped that any manuscripts of value still remained to be discovered in the Orient, still less that additions would be made to the sum of the writings already known. Western scholarship had only to assume this material as it was, and to construct from it, as a basis for farther study, the best text which its condition allowed. But this is, after all, only a first step in the process of investigation; the criticism which has hitherto attempted only to restore the original of the existing manuscripts, has now before it the harder task of bringing out the internal character and relations of the text, of separating what has been wrongly combined and re-combining what has been wrongly separated, of detecting interpolations and discovering lacunee, of recognizing corrupted passages, and either amending them into intelligibility, or condemning them as hopeless; of analyzing the whole, in short, into its component elements, and determining their source and value. And all this for a work of which the language has been for two thousand years extinct, and is to be restored to knowledge almost solely by the indirect means of a comparison with kindred and more intelligible dialects. It is somewhat as if the English had been long a dead language, and it were required to restore Milton's Paradise Lost, its only remaining record, from a few inaccurate, fragmentary, and confused manuscripts, by the aid of German and Swedish. Such an undertaking requires for its execution a long term of years, and the concurrent

general critical principles upon which Spiegel's text is constructed are much the same as those followed by Westergaard; he aims to give the best readings which are supported by manuscript authority, venturing to alter and amend only in cases where the error and its correction are alike palpable and unquestionable. He does not claim, of course, to have succeeded always in selecting the reading which will finally be found preferable to the rest, but he furnishes, in the critical apparatus given along with the text, full material for testing and correcting the latter. For the Pehlevî version no critical apparatus is given, although the text of it is in part founded upon two manuscripts presenting quite different readings, and although the very defective state of our knowledge of the language, or mode of writing, would seem to render such an aid to our study of it highly desirable, or almost indispensable. Spiegel's edition is very handsomely printed, at the Imperial Office in Vienna, but in one respect is decidedly inferior to the less elegant Copenhagen work: while the latter is evidently arranged with a view to aiding as much as possible the practical study of its contents, the other seems rather intended to look as Oriental as may be, and lacks, accordingly, all page-headings and numbered divisions of the text, so as to render it next to impossible to find a passage sought for, or to verify a citation.

No continuation of Spiegel's work has appeared since 1853, nor is any known to have been announced; it seems not unlikely, therefore, that he has given up the design of publishing farther portions of the text, as being already fully brought before the public in the edition of Westergaard. The latter has, moreover, extended his original plan so as to include the publication, in a separate volume, of the Zend, or Pehlevî version of the Avesta, excepting that part of it already made public by Spiegel, and of Neriosengh's San-

skrit translation.

The translation of the Vendidad by its German editor appeared even before the completion of the text itself, namely in 1852. It is preceded by an introduction, in which are given at some length the translator's views respecting the

Since the above was written, I have been informed, by a private letter from Germany, that a second volume of Spiegel's Avesta, in text and translation, is going through the press. The letter speaks also of a new Huzvaresh grammar, by the same author, which has not yet come to hand in America.

arrangement of the volume is very convenient and practical; the character made use of, indeed, is ungraceful, ill sustaining comparison with that employed by Burnouf and Spiegel; but the divisions of the text are distinctly marked, to facilitate reference, and all notes are given on the same page with the text to which they refer. Of the time when the appearance of the remaining volumes of the work may be looked for, we have no notice, but can only hope that it will be as soon as is consistent with their thorough and careful preparation. The community of scholars, already thankful for the complete critical text of the Avesta so long waited for, will hail with added joy and gratitude the lexicon and grammar which shall render its contents accessible to other than the

few to whom they have hitherto been confined.

The other editor is Friedrich Spiegel, Professor in the Erlangen University, in Bavaria. The numerous references already made in this paper to his various works will have indicated the prominent position which he occupies in the history of the later investigations into Iranian antiquity as connected with the Avesta. For some years, in fact, the most important contributions made to the general knowledge of the subject proceeded from him, in the form of essays communicated to the best-known German periodicals, or, in one or two-cases, of independent works of some extent. All these were, however, to be regarded as preparatory studies for the great work of the complete publication and interpretation of the Avesta, which their author was known to have in hand. His plan included the same texts, of course, as are presented in Westergaard's edition, and the manuscript material at his command was nearly the same as that made use of by the other editor. With the Avesta was to be given also its Zend, or Pehlevi interpretation, and, as a separate work, but accompanying as nearly as possible each portion of the published texts, a translation of them into German, together with explanatory notes, and essays upon special points of interest in Iranian archæology. The first volume, containing the Vendidad, has been already for some time before the world, in both forms, text and translation.* The

^{*} Avesta, die heiligen Schriften der Parsen. Zum ersten Male im Grundtexte sammt der Huxväresch-übersetzung herausgegeben von Dr. Fr. Spiegel. I. Band: der Vendidad. Wien: 1853. 8vo, pp. 28, 323, and 236: and Avesta, die_etc. Aus dem Grundtexte übersetzt, mit steter Rücksicht auf die Tradition, von Dr. Fr. Spiegel. Erster Band: der Vendidad. Leipzig: 1852.

⁸vo, pp. viii, 295.

sanian original of the existing manuscripts, a task simple and easy in its main features, but exceedingly difficult and perplexing in its details. He has made the oldest manuscripts in every case his main authorities, but has not hesitated to deviate from them when later ones have seemed to present, were it only by accident, a preferable reading; and he has even ventured upon emendations of his own, when there was an utter disagreement of authorities, evidencing a corrupt text, or when the analogy of parallel passages, or the plain requirements of the sense, seemed to authorize them. In the foot-notes to each page he has given a selection only from the various readings offered by the different manuscripts, such, namely, as appeared to him to have any value, leaving out innumerable errors of transcription, and slight and unimportant variations from the text he has adopted. In this way he has unquestionably rid his work of a great body of worthless and cumbersome matter, but, on the other hand, he may, in not a few instances, have excluded a true reading, or what might have suggested such. It is, in the present state of our knowledge of the Avestan language, a matter of some risk to allow one's self the liberty of making a sparing selection of various readings: it is difficult to say what valuable hint may not now and then be hidden in a reading apparently worthless; and then, farther, considering the unsettled condition of Avestan orthography, differences which would otherwise be insignificant may assume often a certain importance. It is the opinion of Roth, * and deserves the careful consideration of laborers in this field, that the new dress into which the Avesta was re-written at the time of its last compilation was not altogether suited to it, and that the rules of transcription were not in all points definitely established, or consistently followed, by the compilers, so that the orthographical confusion of the texts is at least in part original, and the true phonetic form of the language is yet to be restored; in accomplishing which, the metrical portions of the Yacna will render essential service. The scantiness of the critical apparatus given by Westergaard may accordingly prove to be the weak point of his edition of the Avestan texts; it would not, perhaps, be easy to find other matter in his work open to criticism. The form and

^{*}See his essay in the Allg. Monatsschrift, quoted above.

European languages, and an exhibition of their present condition and distribution. The third and concluding volume would then present a translation of all the Avestan texts, with notes on its deviations from the native interpretations as expressed in the Pehlevi and Sanskrit translations; and farthermore, a view of the civil and religious institutions of the people among whom the Avesta originated, and a complete history of the nations of Iran, down to the time of the destruction of Iranian nationality by the Mohammedans. The whole, though published in Copenhagen, was to be in the English language, which the author is able to use correctly and intelligibly, although not with elegance. The full realization of this magnificent plan, which includes not only a complete and critical presentation of the new material for the study of Persian antiquity, with all the aids that can be furnished to those wishing to make use of it, but also the reconstruction, by its help, of the whole fabric of Persian philology, archæology, and history, must be, of course, the result of years of patient and devoted labor; nor is it to be supposed that the execution of such a work in a manner entirely satisfactory lies within the power of a single scholar. or perhaps of a single generation of scholars. What is possible to the learning and ingenuity of one man, the Danish editor will doubtless accomplish. He has but recently made himself known as an investigator in this field of study, but the ability which he has shown in others justifies high expectations, and the learned world is looking forward with great interest to the completion of his undertaking. His first volume, containing the Avestan text, with critical notes, has already appeared; its publication was begun in 1852 and finished in 1854.* In a full and interesting preface, prefixed to the volume, he explains what he has undertaken to accomplish in it. He describes the material which he has made use of, tracing out, so far as is possible, the history and mutual relations of the different manuscripts. He then proceeds to an examination of the history of the texts themselves, their collection in their present form, and their preservation, arriving at the general conclusions which have been already stated above. It has been his endeavor, then, to restore the Sas-

^{*} Zendavesta, or the Religious Books of the Zoroastrians, edited and translated, with a dictionary, grammar, &c., by N. L. Westergaard. Vol. I. The Zend Texts. Copenhagen: 1852-54. 4to, pp. 26 and 486.

by Burnouf himself. Of such facilities the German scholars, in particular, had not failed to avail themselves. So Bopp, during the whole course of Burnouf's labors, had been pursuing independent investigations, especially into the grammatical forms of the Avestan language, the results of which were made public in his Comparative Grammar of the Indo-European Languages. Lassen, Benfey, Holtzmann, and others, had made from time to time contributions of value to the knowledge of the Avesta; Roth had, in more than one striking article, illustrated various points in the ancient Iranian religious or traditionary history. Brockhaus, in 1850, furnished an exceedingly practical and useful aid to the general study, in the form of a transcription into Latin characters of the text of Burnouf's Vendidad-Sade, with the various readings of an edition which the Parsis themselves had put forth in Bombay (1832?), a complete Index Verborum, and a glossary, containing a summary of the explanations of words and forms which had up to that

time been given by various scholars.

During the past few years, however, two scholars of eminence have been separately engaged in the preparation of critical editions of the whole Zoroastrian scriptures. One of these is Westergaard, a Dane, Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Copenhagen, well known to all Sanskrit scholars by his valuable Radices Lingua Sanscritae. He inherited, in a manner, the task which Rask and Olshausen had undertaken, but had failed to accomplish. He had at his command, as the materials of his proposed work, the manuscripts brought home to Europe by Rask, Anquetil, and others, and deposited in the libraries of Copenhagen, Paris, London, and Oxford, as well as some which he had himself collected in the course of a journey through Persia and India, undertaken partly for the purpose, and executed under the patronage of the Danish government, in the years 1842-43. The plan was a very comprehensive one. His first volume was intended to include all the texts in the true Avestan language (commonly called Zend) which compose the sacred canon, together with critical notes and various readings. The second was to comprise a complete vocabulary, and a grammar, which latter should include, also, a comparison of the Avestan with the other Iranian dialects, a history of all the Iranian tongues, a comparison of them with the other Indoother kindred languages, ancient and modern, furnished a clue to the meaning of words. In this way it was possible to test the correctness of the Parsi interpretation, amend its errors, and arrive at an understanding of the texts more accurate by far than their native possessors could boast. The chief record of Burnouf's labors is his Commentaire sur le Yaçna, Tome I, published in Paris in 1833. This contains, in the form of a commentary upon a portion of text, a collection of very extensive and detailed researches into the language and matter of these writings, and the proper method of their interpretation. It was upon such a scale, however, that the whole large quarto volume, of 800 pages, contained the exposition only of the first of the seventy-two little chapters, or Has, of the Yacna: such a work evidently could never be carried on to a completion, and in fact even no continuation of it ever appeared. In the Journal Asiatique of 1840-46,* Burnouf did indeed take up and treat, in a similar manner, but with less detail, the ninth chapter of the same text, yet, before it was quite finished, his attention was so drawn off by other subjects that he seems to have laid the study of the Avesta entirely aside, and even had his life been longer spared, it is not probable that he would have made farther contributions of importance to it: at any rate, the task of elaborating and publishing a critical text and interpretation of the whole Avesta would never have been accomplished by him: even before his lamented death, which took place in 1852, this had passed out of his hands into those of others. It was hoped that he might have left behind him material of value, but nothing was found among his papers in such a state as should render its publication advisable. We have omitted to mention in its chronological order the publication, in 1829-43, under his superintendence and by his care, of a lithographed fac-simile of the finest of Anquetil's manuscripts, containing the Vendidad-Sade. This, although a costly work, and furnishing, of course, a very incorrect text, aided materially to render these writings more generally accessible, and to furnish to other scholars the means of critically examining, or of adding to, the results arrived at

^{*} Published also separately, with the title Etudes sur la Langue et sur les Textes Zends.

highly inaccurate, and so full of errors as to be hardly reliable even as a general representation of the meaning of its original. Among the manuscripts brought home by Anquetil, however, he found another translation, intelligible to him, which was plainly much more faithful than that of the French scholar: this was the Sanskrit version of the Yacna by Neriosengh, mentioned above. He was forced, then, to conclude that, during the three centuries which had elapsed between Neriosengh and Anquetil, the Parsis must have lost in a great degree the knowledge of their own sacred writings. But it may be remarked here that Spiegel has since endeavored to show* that Anquetil's inaccuracy was due not entirely to the ignorance of his Parsî instructors, but in part also to his own faulty method of communicating with and interrogating them; inasmuch as he seemed to have obtained from them hardly more than an interpretation of the separate words of the text, which he then himself, with more or less success, converted into a connected translation. Accordingly, Burnouf could not do otherwise than lay Anquetil aside, and commence rather with the help of Neriosengh the task of investigating the Yaçna anew, to discover its true meaning. But he by no means made himself a slavish follower of his Indian authority. The Sanskrit grammar and lexicon were a scarcely less direct, and in many important respects a more reliable, guide to the knowledge of the Avestan language, than the translation itself: and Burnouf's familiarity with the former, rare for that period, furnished the true medium of scientific investigation to a mind that was admirably qualified to perceive and make use of its advantages. He anticipated, in a manner, the science of comparative philology, just then coming into being, created his own method, and commenced his investigations with a degree of learning, acuteness, and success, that from the first attracted general attention and acknowledgement. The main features of the Avestan grammar, the phonetic value of the characters, the systems of verbal and nominal inflection, the modes of construction, were readily established from the analogy of the Indian tongue; and the Sanskrit lexicon, the roots of the Vedic and classic dialects, with the aid, in a less degree, of all the

^{*} See Zeitsch, d. Deutsch, Morg. Gesellsch., i. 243.

being able by means of the Indian language to arrive at a more sure and satisfactory knowledge of the ancient Persian records. It was in the years 1826-1830 that the new movement began to show itself with effect. In 1826 the celebrated Danish scholar, Rask, published a little treatise On the Age and Genuineness of the Zend language and the Zend-Avesta, &c. He was a Sanskrit scholar, and a general linguistic investigator of rare talents and acquirements: he had travelled in Persia and India, and had brought home to Copenhagen a valuable collection of Avestan manuscripts. His essay was far in advance of anything that had yet appeared, for establishing the character and value of the Avesta, and the relations of its language: it included also a very greatly improved analysis and determination, absolute and comparative, of the alphabet of the latter. The same year, Olshausen, a professor in the University of Kiel, was sent by the Danish government to Paris to examine and collate the Avestan manuscripts lying there; and, upon his return, the publication of a critical edition of the Vendidad was commenced by him. Its first part, containing four Fargards, appeared in 1829,* a lithographed text, with full critical apparatus; but nearly the whole edition was soon after destroyed by fire, and the prosecution of the undertaking was abandoned. Olshausen's material has since passed into the hands of Spiegel. In 1829 appeared also, in the Journal Asiatique (Paris), the first contribution to the study of the Avesta from a scholar who was destined to do more than any or than all others to place that study upon its true and abiding foundation; to whose investigations the progress of Avestan science was to be linked for many years to come. This was Eugène Burnouf. He was Professor of Sanskrit in the Collège de France, and already known as a zealous cultivator of the knowledge of the Orient, to which he had, in conjunction with Lassen, contributed in 1826 the well known Essai sur le Pali. His attention became very naturally at that period directed toward the Zoroastrian texts, and a slight examination and comparison of them with the translation of Anquetil, led him at once to important results with reference to the character of the latter. He found it

Vendidad, Zend-Avestae pars xx, adhuc superstes, etc. Hamburg: 1829.
 4to.

made, about four centuries ago, by two Pârsî priests, Neriosengh and Ormuzdiar. A similar work was commenced upon the Vendidad, but carried only to the end of the sixth Fargard; and even the portion completed appears to have become lost; certainly it has never reached Europe. Some of the smaller pieces and fragments also exist in Sanskrit translations, but no other of the more important constituent parts of the text, as Vispered, Nyâyish, or the Yeshts. Of late years, more than one edition of the Avesta has been published by the Pârsîs in India themselves, accompanied with versions in their present vernacular, the Guzerâtî; they have for us, of course, only a very inferior interest.

Having thus taken a general view of the history and present condition of the Zoroastrian scriptures, we will return to trace farther the course of European studies upon them. As already remarked, more than fifty years elapsed after the publication of Anguetil's book before another hand was laid earnestly and effectively to the work. In the interval, the controversy as to the genuineness of the writings in question had been settled wholly in their favor, at least upon the continent; in England it would seem as if some remnant of the old factious disbelief had endured down even to the present time. The few voices which had been raised in France and Germany on the side of Anquetil's opponents had been overborne and silenced; and archæologists and historians were busy with reconstructing the fabric of Persian antiquity from the new materials thus furnished, All parties, on whatsoever points they might have disagreed, had united in assuming the correctness and reliability of Anquetil's translation, nor had any one suggested the possibility that either he himself or his instructors might have misapprehended and misinterpreted the meaning of the sacred texts. The time was coming, however, when this was to be made a subject of inquiry, and to be thoroughly and competently tested. When the Sanskrit began to become known to western scholars, the remarkable resemblance to it of the Avestan language could not fail to be at once remarked: this was urged by some as a new and convincing proof that the alleged Persian scriptures had originated, or been concocted, on Indian ground: others, however, beheld the matter in its true relations, and hailed with joy the prospect of

writing, and do not enter into the language." If, then, these signs are properly understood and translated, the Pehlevi becomes simple Parsi, the Zend passage becomes a Pa-Zend. The disguising of the translation in this strange garb, which causes its language to assume a foreign appearance, Westergaard conceives to have been a priestly device for confining the knowledge of it to a few, and giving those few an added importance in the eyes of their brethren. If this new estimate of the character of the Pehlevi dialect shall be established as the true one, it will change not a little the views which have been held respecting the date and value of the Zend, or Pehlevî translation of the Avesta, as well as respecting other points bearing upon the history and interpretation of the Avesta itself. The Zend, however, whatever its age, has been the medium through which the later Persians have kept up their knowledge of their ancient sacred scriptures, and the source from which the other and still later translations have been drawn. When fully understood and correctly interpreted, it cannot but prove of considerable value to us, partly as aiding in the comprehension of the Avestan, partly as furnishing a cheek upon later interpolations or mutilations, and otherwise contributing to the restoration of the original form of the text, partly as illustrating the condition of Persian doctrine and learning at the time of its origination. Besides the Zend, and a few fragments of which the originals in the older Avestan dialect are perhaps lost, the only work known to exist in the Pehlevî language, or to be preserved as written only in the Pehlevi method, is the Bundehesh, a cosmogonical and religio-philosophical work of a late period; in part at least, later than even the Mohammedan conquest of Persia: it, too, is claimed by the Parsis, but doubtless without foundation, to have had an original in the Avestan language." We hear of Pehlevî works as made use of by Firdusi in compiling the materials for his great historical poem, but none of them have been preserved to modern times.

It remains farther only to mention the translations of the Avesta made in India itself, and into Indian languages. A Sanskrit version of the Yaçna, or rather of its Zend, was

^{*} Westergaard has published (Copenhagen: 1851) a lithographed fac-simile of a manuscript of it, the oldest known.

to it are those brought forward by Spiegel, the scholar who had given most attention to the subject.* According to him, the Pehlevî of the Pârsî sacred books was identical with the Pehlevî of the early Sassanian monarchs, found on their coins and in their inscriptions, and was accordingly to be regarded as the language of the Persian court at that period, the vernacular into which the sacred texts were at the time of their collection and arrangement translated, in order to a better and more extended knowledge of them. It bore a composite character, its basis being Persian, and that of a stamp not greatly differing from the form of the language still current, while a large share of its stock of words was Semitic, resembling most nearly the Aramaic of the period. Its proper home would then be the western frontier of the empire, where Iranian and Semitic nations and languages bordered upon one another. But it was not in the strictest sense a spoken dialect; it was rather a learned or book-language, into which Aramaic words were adopted at the pleasure of the writer, somewhat as Arabic words into the modern Persian. These views, however, seem at present to be likely to undergo considerable modification. Westergaard maintainst that the Pehlevî of the early Sassanids and that of the Zend are two entirely distinct languages; that the former is a true Semitic dialect, while the latter is pure Persian, and, in fact, identical with the Parsi, from which it differs only in the mode of writing. The character in which it is written is a peculiar one, nearly akin, indeed, to that made use of for the Avesta itself, but much less complete, expressing in several instances different sounds by the same letter. And the difficulty of making out the true form of the text is due not only to these ambiguities, but also to "the great number of arbitrary signs or ideographs for pronouns, prepositions, and particles, which have the appearance of real words;" and to "the adoption of Semitic words strangely marked by peculiar signs, which pertain to the

* See an article by him in Höfer's Zeitschrift, vol. i, and his translation of the Vendidad, second Excurs.

[†] This opinion was first hinted at in the preface to his edition of the Bundehesh (1851), and is more fully stated in his introduction to the Zendavesta, p. 19, etc. Dr. Haug (Ueber die Pehlevi-Sprache und den Bundehesh. Göttingen: 1854) had followed him in recognizing the difference of the two languages called Pehlevi.

right the name Zend;" the word properly denotes, not the language in which the Avesta is written, but the translation of the Avesta into another language; its etymology is not perfectly clear, but it seems, according to the most plausible interpretation, to signify a work made for the common, popular advantage, a reduction of a difficult original to a more readily and generally intelligible form. Not the whole Avesta is thus accompanied by its Zend: portions of the text, as some of the Yeshts, were perhaps never translated, and of the Yacna the translation has become lost. The language and period of the Zend will be considered a little farther on. Mingled, again, with the Pehlevi version, as interpretations of, or glosses upon it, are found passages which are styled Pá-Zend, as standing "at the foot of the Zend." The dialect in which they are composed is called, for convenience's sake, the Parsi; it is an older form of the modern Persian language, not widely different from the latter, nor far removed from its oldest monuments in point of time. The Parsi is chiefly known through Spiegel's grammart of the dialect, which contains also specimens of texts composed in it. The glosses above alluded to are not quite its only records: parts of the Avesta of some extent are translated into it, and a few portions of what is accounted as sacred scripture, such as the Patets, and some of the Aferins, are found in Parsi alone; as also the Minokhired, a little theological treatise, in the form of a colloquy between Heavenly Wisdom and The Sage. No certain results have yet been arrived at respecting the time and place of this purely Persian dialect, but it is regarded with much probability as having been in use after the downfall of the Sassanian monarchy, among the yet remaining followers of the ancient faith in the eastern and central portions of Iran. It has no peculiar written character, but is written indifferently in that of the Avesta or in the Arabic.

To return now to the Zend, or version of the Avesta in Pehlevi. Respecting this peculiar and difficult dialect there has been much discussion and difference of opinion; nor are its character and period even yet fully established. The views which have of late been generally held with regard

^{*} See Spiegel, Parsi Grammar, introduction.

[†] Grammatik der Pärsisprache, nebst Sprachproben. Leipzig: 1851.

compilation. Our oldest existing manuscripts date from the early part of the fourteenth century, or not less than a thousand years later than the compilation, and most of them are considerably more modern. Whatever their age, they all come also from the same region, from eastern Persia, namely, the country of Yezd and Kerman; the Pârsîs in India lost, as before noticed, at the time of the Mohammedan conquest, most or all of the sacred books which they had first brought with them, and were obliged to supply themselves anew from that region, the only one where any relic of the ancient religion still survived in Iran. And they all offer the same text; there are, indeed, very considerable varieties of reading among them as regards the orthography and division of the words, so that not unfrequently different grammatical forms and different combinations seem to show themselves; yet, sentence by sentence, and page by page, they are found to agree in presenting the same matter in the same order; their disagreements are to be charged to the ignorance and carelessness of the copyists; they all represent a single original. And this original Westergaard* supposes to have been the eastern Persian copy of the Sassanian canon; assuming that but few copies of it were at first made, and that a single one became the source of supply to a whole district. These are points upon which farther investigation will doubtless throw a clearer light; but it may be regarded as upon the whole highly probable that we have in our hands nearly or quite all the Zoroastrian scriptures which were found recoverable at the time when their recovery was attempted, and that we may hope to restore, at least approximately, the original text as then constructed.

The Avesta, as it has thus been described, does not constitute the whole sacred literature of the Pârsîs. It is accompanied by other matter, chiefly translations and explications of its text, of later date, and in other tongues. We have, first, a version of a considerable portion of it in a language called *Pehlevî* or *Huzvâresh*. It occurs in the manuscripts intermingled with the original text, and following it sentence by sentence. To this version, now, belongs of

^{*} Preface to his Zendavesta, p. 21.

forgotten. King Ardeshir gathered from all parts of the land a great assembly of Mobeds, to the number, according to some, of forty thousand, and from their memory and recitation of the scriptures, so much of the latter as was not forgotten was again collected and committed to writing. This, too, is a notice which there is much reason for believing to be in the main authentic. The whole state and condition of the collection, as it exists in our hands, indicates that its material must have passed through some process analogous to this. The incomplete and fragmentary character of the books that compose it, the frequent want of connection, or the evident interpolations of longer or shorter passages, the hopelessly corrupt state of portions of the text, the awkward style and entire grammatical incorrectness displayed by others, all go to show that it must be in some measure an assemblage of fragments, combined without a full understanding of their meaning and connection. To this is to be added the evidence afforded by the alphabetic character in which the texts are written.* Avestan character is of Semitic origin, akin to the Syriac alphabets of the commencement of the Christian era, and closely resembling that used in the inscriptions and upon the coins of the earliest Sassanids, of which it seems a developed form. It cannot, then, have been from the beginning the medium of preservation of the Zoroastrian scriptures; the Avesta cannot have been written in it before the time of Christ. But it is a very difficult matter to suppose a deliberate change in the method of writing a text esteemed sacred, unless when peculiar circumstances require or strongly favor it; the character comes to partake of the sanctity of the matter written in it, and is almost as unalterable. It could hardly be, excepting when the body of scripture was assembled and cast into a new form, that it should be transcribed in a character before unused. The Sassanian reconstruction of the Zoroastrian canon, and its committal to writing in an alphabet of that period, must probably have taken place together.

It may now be inquired in what relation the text of the Avesta, as it lies before us, stands to this original Sassanian

Prof. Roth, of Tübingen, has discussed these points in a thorough and instructive manner, in the Allg. Monatsschrift (Braunschweig) for March; 1853.

Zoroastrian religion, the dispersion of its followers, and the destruction of its records, to Alexander the Great. The introduction of this personage at all into the Persian legendary history, which is silent respecting the time before and after him for centuries, is remarkable and difficult to explain. The fabulous account of the great conqueror's life and deeds, which, coming from a Greek source, was translated with variations and additions into almost every Oriental language, and obtained universal diffusion and popularity throughout the East," doubtless had much to do with it; but whether this was the sole efficient cause, or whether, as is more probable, the story may have attached itself to some . faint recollections of the hero, and of the changes which followed upon his conquests, cannot be discussed here. We can see, however, that it might be easy to connect with his appearance the decline of the ancient native religion, and to convert the foreign subverter of the Persian empire into a persecutor of the Persian faith. There was, in truth, at and after his time, a grand falling off in the honor and reverence paid to this faith: if not oppressed and persecuted, it had lost the exclusive patronage and support of government; it had ceased to be the only acknowledged creed; the foreign, or only half-Persianized, dynasties of the Parthians and the Græco-Baktrians showed it no especial favor; Grecian influences, Judaism, Christianity, disputed with it the preferences of the people. With the overthrow of the Parthian rule, and the establishment of the Sassanian dynasty, began a new order of things. This was, in effect, a successful revolution of Persian nationality against the dominion of foreign rulers and foreign ideas, and had as a natural consequence the re-establishment of the national religion on something like its ancient footing. The Persian traditions are so definite and concordant respecting this great religious revival, and there are so many other corroborative evidences to the same effect, that its actuality cannot reasonably be questioned. During the long interval of neglect and oppression, say the traditions, the sacred books, even such as were saved from destruction by the tyrant Iskender (Alexander), had become lost, and the doctrines and rites of the Zoroastrian religion were nearly

^{*} See an article by President Woolsey in this Journal, vol. iv, p. 357, etc. vol., v. 46

sustains to the Indian and to the other Persian dialects, differences of religious customs and institutions from those which we know to have prevailed in the West (as, for instance, that the Avesta knows nothing of the Magi, the priestly caste in Media and in Persia proper), the indirect but important evidences derived from the general character of the texts, the views and conceptions which they represent, the state of culture and mode of life which they indicate as belonging to the people among whom they originated, and, not least of all, the direct geographical notices which they contain. The two oldest records of the Indo-European family, then, were composed in countries which lie almost side by side, and at periods not very far removed from one another. It is no wonder that their languages exhibit so near a kindred that the one has been deciphered and read by the aid of the other, as we shall see to have been the case, when we take up again the history of the later Aves-

tan studies.

It is claimed by the Parsis that the Avesta is the work of Zoroaster himself; with how little ground, will have been already sufficiently shown by what has been said respecting the character and period of the different parts. Nowhere in the texts themselves is any such claim set up: they profess only to be a record of the revelations made to the prophet, and the doctrines promulgated by him. The Parsis also assert that Zoroaster's writings originally composed twenty-one books, or Nosks, and covered the whole ground of religious and secular knowledge; as the Egyptians claimed the same thing in behalf of their forty-two books of Thoth. Of these they say that one, the twentieth, has been preserved complete, being the Vendidad; while of the others only fragments have come down to later times. But, considering the so evidently incomplete and fragmentary, as well as incongruous and compounded, character of the Vendidad, it seems altogether probable that this tradition is not more valuable than the other, and that it in truth is nothing more than the expression of a consciousness on the part of the Parsis that they possess only a part of the scriptures which had once been theirs. Let us farther follow their traditions respecting the history of their sacred books. Strangely enough, all the native authorities agree in attributing the first great trial and persecution of the

vanced much beyond its present point, it will be impossible to read the internal history of the collection, and to determine, save in a very general way, the order and interval of its several parts. We cannot yet even fix our earliest limit, by determining the time of the appearance of Zoroaster, and of his activity as a reformer of the ancient religion. The information respecting him which the classic authors obtained from native sources of their own period is so indefinite and inconsistent, as to show clearly that the Persians were already at that time unable to give any satisfactory account of him; of course, then, nothing more definite and reliable could be looked for from them at a later date. His genealogy is given in the sacred writings, and he is said to have lived and promulgated his doctrines under a king Víctacpa; the later Persian traditions also are consistent in making the same statement respecting him. This king was by Anquetil supposed to be the same with Hystaspes, the father of the first Darius; his opinion was generally accepted as well founded, and the time of the religious lawgiver accordingly fixed at 500-600 B. C.: but the identification is now universally acknowledged to be erroneous, and all attempts to reconstruct Persian chronology and history from native authorities, so as to establish in them any points whatever, prior to the reign of the first-Sassanid, have been relinquished as futile. We can only conclude, from the obscurity which five centuries before Christ seemed to envelope and hide from distinct knowledge the period of the great religious teacher, and from the extension of his doctrines at that time over the whole Iranian territory, even to its western border, that he must have lived at least as early as a thousand years before our era. And the absence in the sacred texts of any mention of Media or Persia indicates clearly that they were composed prior to the conquest of all Iran by the early monarchs of those countries.

Respecting the region in which the Avesta had its origin we may speak with confidence: it was Bactria and its vicinity, the northeastern portion of the immense territory occupied by the Iranian people, far removed from those countries with which the western world came more closely into contact. To give in detail the grounds upon which this opinion is founded would occupy too much time and space here: they are, briefly stated, the relation which the Avestan language

now, by long usage, become so firmly attached, that it is perhaps in vain to hope that they will ever be separated. To what the name Zend properly applies, we shall see hereafter. If it should be regarded as still practicable to change the common usage, and give the language a more appropriate designation, none, it is believed, could be found so simple, and open to so few objections, as Avestan; this suggests no theory respecting the age or locality of the dialect, and is supported by the analogy of the term Vedic, as applied to the oldest form of the Sanskrit, the language of the Vedas. The Avestan, then, is an ancient Persian language, most nearly akin to that of the Achæmenidan Cuneiform Inscriptions, and the ancestor of some, at least, of the modern Persian dialects. The epoch when it was a spoken language cannot be definitely fixed: we have only the most general data for its determination. A comparison of the language itself with its two nearest neighbors on either hand, the Vedic Sanskrit, dating from fifteen centuries before Christ, and the Achæmenidan Persian, a thousand years later, leads to no certain results. The Avestan is, indeed, in point of linguistic development, a more modern dialect than the former, and, though less clearly so, more ancient than the latter, so that in respect to time also we should be inclined to place it somewhere between the two: yet too much reliance should not be placed upon such a conclusion, since even closely related dialects are known to develope and change at very different rates of progress. Other general considerations, however, seem to refer us to a time as early as the first half of the thousand years before Christ as being that of the Avestan language. It has been already pointed out that the different portions of the text are, to some extent, at least, the product of different periods, and that, while some passages may perhaps be as old as the time of Zoroaster himself, the bulk of the collection is of such a character that it cannot be supposed to have originated until long after. There is no difficulty in assuming that the language which had been rendered sacred by the revelation in it of the first scriptures, should be kept up by the priests, and made the medium of farther authoritative communications. But until the texts shall have undergone a more minute examination than they have yet received, and until our knowledge of the details of Persian archæology is ad-

and most important are those of the fountain Ardvi-Cura, of the star Tistrya, of Mithra, of the Fervers, or souls of the dead, of the Amshaspand Behram. Each is an exaltation of the object to which it is addressed, accompanied with prayers for blessings and the offerings of homage and worship. They are either direct addresses, or in the form already described, of replies made by Ahura-Mazda to the inquiries of his prophet respecting the merits of the several personages to be honored, and the mode and degree of reverence which should be paid to each. Besides the general light which they thus throw upon the religion of whose sacred records they constitute a part, more than one of them have a particular value as illustrating the epic and heroic traditions of the period in which they were composed. It is fecounted, namely, how this and that person had paid adoration to the divinity whose exaltation is the theme of the Yesht, and had received in recompense certain gifts or favors. The personages thus mentioned greet us again among the heroes of the modern epic and historical traditions, as represented especially by the gigantic poem of Firdusi, the Shah-Nameh; and the epithets by which they are characterized, and the favors granted them, in many instances furnish ground for a comparison between the forms of the popular tradition held concerning them in earlier and in later times.

The remaining portions of the sacred writings are not of consequence enough to require any special description. They are, briefly, the five Nyâyish, so called, pieces not unlike the Yeshts, from which they seem to be in part extracted; the Gahs and Si-ruzeh, praises and adorations paid to the divisions of the day and the days of the month; Aferîns and Afergans, praises and thanksgivings; and a few small fragments, prayers for special occasions, and the like.

The whole body of canonical scriptures is called by the Pârsîs the Avesta: the origin of this appellation, and its proper signification, are not certainly known. Their collective extent is not very considerable, and their absolute material content is moreover considerably less than it seems to be, owing to the repetitions and parallelisms in which

they abound.

The Avesta is written in a language to which, by an unfortunate blunder, the name of Zend has been given, and

lost. Besides these, there are precepts more properly moral: various offences against the divine powers are rehearsed, their comparative enormity estimated, and the atonement demanded for each prescribed: on the other hand, that course of conduct is depicted which is most grateful to the eyes of the divine powers, and most tends to secure their favor: no little space, also, is devoted to rules for the treatment of the dog, which this religion regards as a sacred animal. The whole is in the form of colloquies between Ormuzd (Ahura-Mazda), the supreme deity, and Zoroaster (Zarathustra), who inquires of the former respecting each particular point, and receives in reply the laws which he is to publish to mankind. The same colloquial form, or that * of an inquiry by the prophet at the divine oracle, is occasionally found also in other parts of the texts. To this body of ceremonial directions, however, have become appended, at the beginning and at the end, certain other chapters, which are by no means the least interesting of the whole collection. Thus, the first Fargard gives a detailed account of the countries created by the supreme being, and furnishes very valuable indications respecting the knowledge of geography possessed by the people among whom it originated, and respecting the geographical position which they themselves occupied: the second describes the reign of Yima upon the earth, and his preparation of an abode of happiness for a certain part of mankind; illustrating in a striking manner the relation of the ancient Persian and Indian religions, and throwing light upon the modern Persian tradition of the earliest period of their own history. The last five Fargards are mainly an assemblage of fragments, in part entirely disconnected and unintelligible; the longest and most interesting of them (which Spiegel has made the subject of one of his earlier studies in the Münchener Gel. Anzeigen), describes the attempts of the evil spirits to destroy or corrupt Zoroaster; he, however, defies their malice and despises their temptations, and they sink confounded into the darkness.

Next in extent and importance are the Yeshts. The name is from the same root as Yaçna, and nearly identical with it in meaning. They are twenty-four pieces, of very different length, each addressed to one of the persons or objects held in veneration by the Zoroastrian faith. The longest

less special: it is in good part made up of a bare rehearsal of the names and attributes of the sacred personages, with general ascriptions of praise and offerings of homage to them: some of the Has, however, possess more individuality

and importance.

Of much the same style and character as this first part of the Yacna is the Vispered. The etymology and meaning of the name are not entirely clear: it has been derived from vîspereta, "scattered;" to be understood, probably, of the dispersal of its invocations in the air. It is divided into twenty-three Kardes (sections), and in extent is hardly more than a seventh of the Yaçna. The Yaçna and Vispered are * combined with one another and with a third text, the Vendidad, to make up a liturgical collection which is much used in the Pârsî ceremonial, and which is generally known as the Vendidad-Sade: this name, however, is not significant of anything essentially characterizing the collection, but simply denotes it as "unmixed" (sade meaning "pure") with the translations into a later dialect which usually accompany each text when written by itself. The combination is in such wise that with the twenty-seven Has of the first part of the Yacna are intermingled twelve Kardes of the Vispered: here takes place the first introduction of the Vendidad, whose twenty-two chapters (called Fargards) are thenceforth variously combined with the remaining divisions of the other two works. The principle upon which the aggregation has been formed, if any there be, has not been pointed out.

The Vendidad is a work of a very different nature from those already noticed: while they are chiefly doctrinal and devotional, this is practical and prescriptive, constituting the moral and ceremonial code of the Zoroastrian religion. The name is a corruption of the title vi-daeva-dáta, "the law against the demons" or "established against the Devs." It teaches by what means a man may keep himself from such sin and impurity as give the powers of evil dominion over him. The impurity thus provided against, however, is chiefly of a ceremonial character, resulting from intercourse with things unclean and defiling, especially from contact with a dead body; and the bulk of the work consists of a series of very minute directions as to how personal purity may be guarded against such dangers, or recovered when

Before we enter upon the history of the later labors upon these texts, it will be advisable to take a somewhat particular view of the texts themselves, as regards the various circumstances of their extent and division, the character of their contents, their language, locality, and period, and the history

of their collection and conservation.

The sacred canon is made up of several separate portions, differing in age, origin, and character. Foremost among them is the Yacna (called by Anquetil Izeschne). The name is identical with the Sanskrit yajna, signifying "offering, sacrifice," and has the same meaning. It well expresses the nature of the writings to which it is applied; these form a kind of liturgical collection of offerings or ascriptions of praise and prayer to the various objects of worship of the Iranian religion. The Yacna is composed of seventy-two distinct pieces, called Has; there is, however, another and more general division, into two portions, of which the first contains twenty-seven Has, the second forty-five. Between these two parts exists a marked difference of external and internal character; the second is written in a dialect differing perceptibly, although only slightly, from that of all the rest of the sacred writings, and evidently of greater antiquity: * it is also in great part metrical (this important fact has but recently been recognized), and seems to be a body of religious lyrics, not unlike in character to the Vedic hymns. Owing to the difficulty and obscurity of its language and contents, it has been less thoroughly investigated than any other part of the texts; but revelations of a highly interesting and striking nature are to be expected from it. It is doubtless the most ancient part of the canon: this is clearly indicated as well by the antiquity of its dialect, as by the circumstance that the prayers and invocations of which the recitation is elsewhere prescribed are all contained in it. It is far from improbable that a part, at least, of these most highly venerated forms of worship may go back to the time of Zoroaster himself; it is only among them, at any rate, that records so ancient and original could be looked for. The first part of the Yaçna is of an interest

^{*} See Spiegel, in Weber's Indische Studien, I. 303. † Dr. Haug has translated and commented on one of the hymns in the Zeitsch. d. Deutsch. Morg. Gesellsch., vola. vii. viii.

rare energy against obstacles of no ordinary character, the work of procuring for Europe the Iranian scriptures, the alleged works of Zoroaster, with what light their then possessors were capable of throwing upon their meaning; of having, moreover, brought a valuable supply of materials within reach of other scholars, and powerfully directed the public attention and interest toward the study. The reception which his published results met with was of a very varied character: while they were hailed by some with enthusiasm, by others they were scouted at and despised. Anquetil had, indeed, both provoked opposition and attack, and laid himself open to them; he was arrogant and conceited, and neither a thorough scholar nor a critic of clear insight and cool judgment: he had drawn upon himself the especial displeasure of the English scholars by the depreciating and contemptuous manner in which he had spoken of some among them, and they revenged themselves upon him and his book together. A violent controversy arose: William Jones, then a very young man, led the way, and was followed by Richardson and others. They maintained that both the language and the matter of the pretended Zoroastrian scriptures were a forgery and a fabrication, palmed off upon the credulous and uncritical Anguetil by his Parsî teachers; or that, even supposing them genuine, they were of so trifling and senseless a character, that the labor of rescuing them had been a lost one. Into the details of this controversy it is not necessary for us to enter; its whole basis and method was far below that which any similar discussion would now occupy, and we should find neither in the learning nor the spirit of the one side or the other anything which we could admire or which would edify us. The time was not yet come for a proper appreciation of the task which Anquetil had undertaken, or of the manner in which he had executed it. The real weaknesses and imperfections of his work remained unsuspected, until, after an interval of more than fifty years, the study of the texts was again taken up, under new and much more favorable auspices. The Sanskrit language had in the meantime become the property of science; only through its aid was a scientific investigation of the Zoroastrian writings possible, and without it our knowledge of them must ever have remained in much the same state as that in which Anquetil had left it.

with others. He then labored his way through their interpretation with his teacher, the Destur Darab, carefully recording everything, and comparing, so far as he was able, parallel passages, in order to satisfy himself of the good faith and trustworthiness of his authority. As their medium of communication they made use of the modern Persian, He visited moreover their temple, witnessed their religious ceremonies, and informed himself respecting their history, their general condition, customs, and opinions. In September, 1760, he had thus completed to the best of his ability the task he had originally imposed upon himself, and was preparing to undertake another work which he had also had in view, the study of Sanskrit, and the acquisition and translation of the Vedas, when the capture of Pondicherry by the English, and the general breaking up of the French power and influence in India, compelled him to relinquish his farther plans, and to return home. This he did in an English vessel, upon which passage and protection had been granted him by the English authorities. He finally reached Paris March 15th, 1762, after an absence of more than seven years. He tarried in England by the way only long enough to make a brief visit to Oxford, and to ascertain by a comparison of the manuscripts there with his own, that they contained nothing which he had not also in his possession. He deposited in the Royal Library in Paris a complete set of the texts which had been the main objects of his expedition, and immediately commenced preparing for publication the history of his labors, and full translations of the whole body of the sacred writings. The work appeared in 1771, in three quarto volumes, with the title Zend-Avesta, Ouvrage de Zoroastre, &c. Besides this, he published in the French literary journals various extended and important treatises on special points in Iranian antiquity and history.

We shall not be prepared to pass intelligent judgment upon Anquetil's labors, or to estimate their absolute value, until we have inquired somewhat farther into the character and history of the writings which were their subject, and the authority of the interpretation which they represented, and have marked the course pursued by the later studies. So much as this is already evident, however; that the credit cannot be denied him of having undertaken from lofty and disinterested motives, and carried out with fore he had fairly commenced his labors. The interval was not entirely lost; he acquired knowledge enough of Persian and other eastern languages to be of essential service to him in the farther pursuit of his studies, and journeved extensively about the Indian peninsula, from Pondicherry up the coast to Bengal, and thence all the way around to Surat, by land; the history of these travels, as well as of his whole residence in India, is given in the first volume of his Zend-Avesta. He finally reached Surat, the scene of his proper labors, and his home for three years, on the first of May, 1758. Already while he was in Bengal, it had been signified to him by the Chef of the French station in Surat, to whom he had made known his wishes, that certain Pârsî priests there were ready to constitute themselves his instructors, and to communicate to him their sacred books, and the knowledge of the languages in which these were written. Dissensions among the Parsis themselves had aided in bringing about this willingness to initiate a foreigner into the mysteries of their religion, which they had hitherto kept secret against more than one attempt to penetrate them. They were divided into two parties in reference to certain reforms which the better instructed part of the priesthood were endeavoring to introduce, and, as the conservative faction had connections with the Dutch, their antagonists desired to ingratiate themselves with the French; they sought, accordingly, to gain their support, by making promises, the fulfilment of which they hoped would never be called for, and were very much disinclined to grant, when Anquetil actually appeared to claim it. By various means, however; by liberality in the purchase of manuscripts and payment for instruction, by politic management, by intimidation even, the course of instruction was at last fairly initiated; confidence and frankness then gradually succeeded to mistrust and reticence, as the priests witnessed with admiration the zeal and rapid progress of their pupil, and as the habit of communication were away their natural shyness of discovering, to unsympathizing foreigners, matters which to themselves seemed sacred: this had, in reality, been the only obstacle in the way of their free disclosure, and has since that time been entirely removed. Anquetil succeeded in obtaining a complete copy, in some instances more than one, of all the texts in their possession, and made collations of them

they were written. India was at that period rapidly becoming opened to European, and especially to English enterprise, and Parsi manuscripts continued to be brought, from time to time, from the settlements about Surat, so that by 1740 more than one copy of all, or nearly all, their religious writings had been deposited in the Oxford libraries; but they were still as books sealed with seven seals to the knowledge of Europeans. It was a Frenchman, the celebrated Anquetil-Duperron, whose zeal and devotion first rendered their meaning intelligible. He was in Paris, in 1754, a very young man, pursuing Oriental studies with ardor at the Royal Library, when a few lines traced from one of the Oxford manuscripts chanced to fall under his eye, and he at once formed the resolution, a somewhat wild and chimerical one, as it seemed, to go to Persia or India, and bring back to his native country these ancient works, and the knowledge necessary to their interpretation. But there was perseverance and energy, as well as enthusiasm and ardor, in his character, and he showed the former qualities as remarkably in the execution of his project as the latter in its conception. All the influences at his command he set in motion, to procure him the means of transit to the East, and of support while engaged in his studies there. As, however, success seemed to his impatient spirit neither near nor sure enough, he determined to enlist as a private soldier in the Indian Company's service, certain thus of being conveyed across the ocean, and trusting to the future for the rest. And he actually marched out of Paris on foot with his company, in November, "to the lugubrious sound," as he says, "of an ill-mounted drum." But upon his arrival, ten days later, at L'Orient, he found that his resolution and devotion had in the meantime met with due appreciation: he received his discharge from military service, a pension of five hundred francs, free passage in one of the Company's vessels, and promise of aid and support in the carrying out of his purposes. He landed at Pondicherry August 10th, 1755. Many obstacles intervened, however, to delay his success, arising partly from the unsettled, or actually hostile, relations between the French and the English, whose career of conquest was just then commencing, but in considerable measure likewise from his own lack of prudence and steadiness of purpose: so that almost three years had passed away beauthority in matters affecting the Zoroastrian religion, have since rapidly wasted away under the continuance of the same oppressions which had earlier driven their fellow-believers to emigrate. They were visited in 1843, at Kerman and Yezd, their two chief seats, by Westergaard,* for the express purpose of examining into their condition, and of endeavoring to obtain from them copies of any valuable manuscripts which might be in their possession. He found them in the lowest state of decay, especially at Kerman, and fast becoming extinct by conversion to Mohammedanism. They had almost lost the knowledge of their religion; they had but a few manuscripts, and among these nothing that was not already known; they had forgotten the ancient tongues in which their scriptures were written, and were able to make use only of such parts of them as were translated into modern Persian; they could not, however, be induced to part with anything of value. In another century, then, the religion of Zoroaster will probably have become quite extinct in its native country, and will exist only in its Indian colony; but it has lived long enough to transmit as an everlasting possession to the after world all that has for centuries been in existence of the old and authentic records of its doctrines; and, having done that, its task may be regarded as fulfilled, and its extinction as a matter of little moment.

We are now prepared to return, and inquire into the introduction of the writings in question to the knowledge of

Europe.

The movement commenced with the beginning of the eighteenth century, and the first step of it may be said to have been the publication, in 1700, of Hyde's Veterum Persarum et Magorum Religionis Historia, which first taught the learned to seek for contributions from Oriental sources to the knowledge of the subject furnished by the classical historians. Hyde knew that votaries of the Persian religion still existed both in Persia and in India, and that they were in possession of what they asserted to be their ancient and original scriptures; he even had in his hands portions of the latter; but he was unable to make any use of them, from ignorance of the language in which

^{*} See his letter to Wilson, in Jour. Roy. As. Society, viii. 349.

with their effects, and, crossing the Gulf of Cambay, finally established themselves on the main land, in the neighborhood of Surat, and their wanderings were at length at an end. Such is the account which their own traditions furnish us;* but it has been conjectured+ that commercial connections led the way from Persia to India, and at least established there the nucleus of a Parsi community, to which those afterwards resorted who left their country for the sake of the undisturbed exercise of their religion. In their new home they lived at first in quiet and prosperity, by the sufferance and under the protection of the mild and tolerant Hindus. But in the eleventh century their old foes, the Mohammedans, found them out once more; they shared the fate of their Indian protectors, after aiding in the vain resistance these offered to the invaders: they were oppressed and scattered, but not this time driven away; and their descendants still inhabit the same region. They have adopted the language of those among whom they are settled, but have adhered steadfastly to their own religion and customs. They have retained, too, among the dark and listless Hindus and Mohammedans, the light complexion, and the active habit of mind and body, which belonged to them in their more northern home. They are the "Armenians" of India, the most enterprising and thriving portion of its Asiatic population, and have so prospered, especially since the establishment of English supremacy brought freedom and security for the arts of peace, that they are now a wealthy and influential community. They had brought with them originally their sacred books; they had lost a part of them during the disturbances which attended the Mohammedan conquest, but were supplied anew from the brethren whom they had left behind in Kerman. With these they long kept up a correspondence, acknowledging them as their own superiors in the knowledge of the common faith, obtaining their advice from time to time on doubtful points of doctrine or practice, and receiving from them books or teachers. These Persian communities of Gebers, however, it should be added, who were thus only a century ago regarded as the highest

See Eastwick, on the Kissah-i-Sanjan, in the Journal of the Bombay Society, vol. i. p. 167, etc.
 + See Westergaard's Zendavesta, preface, p. 22.

this paper, to trace out the history of the introduction to modern knowledge of the writings in question, and of the study and labor which has since been expended upon them; and farther, to give such a view of the general results won and to be won from and respecting them, as shall serve to

illustrate their character and importance.

The Parsi communities dwelling on the western coast of India have been the medium through which the ancient Persian scriptures have come into our possession. Before we proceed, therefore, to a consideration of the latter, it will be well to go a little farther back, and inquire how the seat of the Zoroastrian religion and culture came to be removed from Persia to a land of strangers. It is an interesting and curi-

ous history.

The Parthian dynasty had for some centuries held sway in Persia, when, A. D. 229, it was overthrown and replaced by the Sassanian. This was a native Persian family; its monarchs made themselves the protectors and patrons of whatever was peculiarly Persian, revived the ancient customs and religion, and raised the realm to a pitch of power and glory hardly exceeded even in its palmiest days: but they sank, A. D. 636, before the fanatical valor of the Mohammedan Arabs, then just entering upon their career of almost universal conquest. Now began the work of extinguishing, by more or less violent means, the native religion and institutions. It was not accomplished at once; for a long time indications of a vigorous, though ineffectual, resistance on the part of the Persians to the political and religious servitude into which their nationality was being forced, are to be discovered in the Mohammedan histories: but it was by degrees repressed and broken; and at last, probably sometime during the ninth century, a community of those who still would hold fast to the ancient faith took refuge from persecution among the mountains of Kohistan, on the western border of the present Beluchistan. Thence, after a residence of near a hundred years, they were either hunted or frighted, and betook themselves to the island Ormus, in the strait of the same name, between the Persian Gulf and that of Oman. But they remained here only fifteen years, and then, sailing southeastward along the coast, settled upon the island of Diu, off the peninsula of Guzerat. Once more, after an interval of rest of nineteen years, they embarked

dan influences, it could not possibly reflect a faithful picture of native Persian institutions and character. But a century ago an entirely new avenue of access to the knowledge of Iranian antiquity was opened. The western world was then for the first time made acquainted with the Avesta, the ancient and authoritative record of the Iranian religion, the Bible of the Persian people. Here was a source lying beyond and behind anything hitherto accessible. It was of a remote antiquity, claimed to be the work of Zoroaster himself, the well-known founder of the Persian religious belief, the prophet and the legislator of Iran, the establisher of the earliest institutions respecting which our other informants had given us any account: it was a part of a native literature, in which we might expect to read the national character with much more distinctness and truth than in the descriptions of foreigners: and it antedated, and was independent of, any external influences upon Persian civilization. Its introduction to our knowledge changed the whole ground of investigation into Persian antiquity. In it was to be found the key to the true comprehension of the subject: by it other sources of information were to be tested, their credibility established or overthrown, their deficiencies supplied. Something of this work has been now already accomplished, but much more yet remains to be done. The investigation is still in its first stages; its materials have been only partially accessible, and the number of laborers upon them small; its importance has been but imperfectly appreciated; nor until very lately have the means and methods of archaeological research been so far perfected, that the new material could be intelligently taken up and mastered. It is not possible, then, to give here a full statement of the results derivable from the Avesta for the knowledge of Persian antiquity. The present, however, is a point of time at which it seems particularly appropriate to make a general examination of the subject, and to take a view of the condition in which the investigation lies. For the ancient text itself, with all the aids to its understanding which the Orient can furnish, is just now published, and placed within reach of scholars throughout the world: the study which has hitherto been limited to a few is thus thrown open to general competition, and may accordingly be expected to make surer and more rapid advances. It will be the object, then, of

ON THE AVESTA.*

Until within a little more than a hundred years, the classic authors had been almost our only authorities for the ancient history, manners, and customs of Persia. Their insufficiency was painfully felt. Long and intimate as had been the intercourse of the Greeks with the Oriental Empire, the information which they had left on record respecting its institutions but half satisfied an enlightened curiosity. They gave us only a picture of that power which had suddenly risen in the west of Iran, upon the ruins of yet more ancient empires, adopting in part their culture, and along with this their corruptions and vices also; so that it had sunk again into ruins, after a brief though splendid existence of about three centuries. Later, they told us somewhat of the external fates of the various realms into which Alexander's eastern conquests were divided; and yet later, the Roman and Byzantine annals spoke of conflicts with Parthian and Sassanian monarchs, not always resulting to the honor of the European power. And, for more modern times, Mohammedan writers related the story of the conquest of Iran, and the extinction of its ancient customs and religion. These were all of them the accounts of foreigners. There was also in existence a modern Persian literature, of abundant extent and rich in beauties, which professed to give a view of the nation's fates from the earliest times; but the account which it furnished was epic and traditional, unaccordant with what we knew from other sources, incapable of reduction to the form of true history; and, since it was produced under Mohamme-

^{*} This article was first read before the Society Oct. 18, 1854, but has been partially rewritten, so as to be brought down to the present time.

vol. v. 44

art dans the

dearene e velle tants EFF

SECURE OF SECURE OF SECURE OF SECURE

ARTICLE III.

ON

THE AVESTA,

on

THE SACRED SCRIPTURES

OF THE

ZOROASTRIAN RELIGION.

Variety DY

WILLIAM D. WHITNEY,
PROFESSOR OF SANSKRIT IN YALE COLLEGE.

(Read October 18, 1854.)

ing in the said empire of Cathay, number more than 30,000, and are very rich; but many of them fear the Christians. They have very beautiful and very holy churches, with crosses and images in honor of God and of the saints. They receive from the said emperor several offices, and he grants them many privileges, and it is thought that if they would consent to unite and agree with these Minorites, and with other good Christians who reside in this country, they might convert the whole of this country and the emperor to the true faith." Even down to the sixteenth century, traces of the existence of these people may be found. So that, could any sufficient argument be adduced to show that this monument was fabricated by the Jesuits during the Ming dynasty, as some have asserted, it would still remain to be explained what could be their object in so doing. Were it merely to prove the existence of Christians in China during the seventh and eighth centuries, that was already amply proved from other sources. Was it to give the sanction of antiquity to the peculiar dogmas of their church? That could scarcely be; for we find no distinguishing characteristic of the Roman Catholic religion on it, which is not applicable to other Christian communities. Had that been their object, however, it is scarcely credible that they would have left so much on this point to mere inference, while they have descended to so many minutize, on apparently irrelevant matters, thus involving themselves to a high degree in the risk of detection, by details of persons, places, and events, which, while they come with a natural air from a contemporary, would never repay the care and research which they would require on the part of a forger living eight or nine hundred years after the event. And yet it is remarkable that the more closely these various assailable points on the tablet are looked into, the more full and minute do we find the coincidence of times and circumstances.

With respect to the form of the writing, and the style of the composition, any one living in China can have no difficulty in making up his mind on that subject; as indeed he may on every other part of the evidence; a careful attention to which will probably bring every one to the conviction of that which no Chinese has ever doubted, that, if the Nestorian tablet can be proved a forgery, there are few existing memorials of by-gone dynasties which can withstand the same style of argument. faith, foreign or native. We have given extracts from seventeen different native authors (and the number might be easily enlarged) respecting this tablet, each of whom has something peculiar to say regarding it; but we have not been able to discover the slightest hint of a suspicion as to its genuineness or authenticity. The discovery also in a book of the Sung dynasty of the imperial proclamation it contains, and the record in two different works, one of the Sung and one of the Tang, of the existence of a foreign temple in the very spot indicated on the tablet, form a species of corroboration not to be overlooked; while the testimony of these works as to other foreign temples about that time is valuable collateral evidence.

The Chang-gan che, quoting from the earlier work, gives a summary of the religious edifices in that city during the Tang, viz.: "64 Buddhist monasteries, 27 Buddhist nunneries, 10 Taouist monasteries, 6 Taouist nunneries, 2 Persian temples, and 4 chapels of the Heaven-worshippers."* The imperial edict of 746, which is to be found in several Chinese books, speaks unmistakably of the increase of these foreign religions in China. By a decree issued in 845 by the emperor Woo-tsung, "all those belonging to the Ta-tsin, 'Syrian,' and Muh-hoo, 'Mohammedan,' religious orders were commanded to retire to private life, and such foreigners as might be among them to return to their own countries,"

In a narrative given by two Arabian travellers, it is stated that 120,000 Mohammedans, Jews, Christians, and Parsees were slain during a revolution at Canfu in China, in the year 877. These Christians must certainly have been Nestorians. During succeeding ages, the Nestorians of China are mentioned on various occasions by Rubruquis, Plan Carpin, Marco Polo, and others; and when the zealous Roman Catholic friar John de Monte Corvino arrived in China, in the thirteenth century, at the commencement of the Yuen, he met with a good deal of opposition from this party, some curious details respecting which are given in a MS, recently discovered in the Imperial Library at Paris. It is there said: "In the city of Cambalech there is a sort of Christian schismatics whom they call Nestorians. They observe the customs and manners of the Greek Church, and are not obedient to the Holy Church of Rome aforesaid." "These Nestorians, dwell-

^{*} Vol. 7, p. 6.

[†] Hung-keen luh, vol. 9, p. 7.

one biased in favor of the tablet, since he gives it as his opinion "that the Jesuits of China could, probably, have had the Syriac part of it made up in India."

Not only are the Chinese characters formed in exact accordance with every specimen of the period in question, but the evidence arising from the style of the composition is equally conclusive. The terse antithetic style of the Tang writers, with the extreme paucity of particles, forms a very conspicuous stage in the history of Chinese literature; and rare indeed is the attainment of those who are able to imitate it. The differences in style between the writers of various ages are so extremely well defined in China, that it would be a very hazardous undertaking for any one to try to pass off his work for that of a former age, and it would be no common production that should pass muster before the keen practised eyes of native critics. The peculiarities of the Tang style are found very clearly marked in the Nestorian inscription, so as to afford the most convincing proof to the minds of native scholars. The influence of the three national religious sects may be traced in the phraseology. That the author was one of the literary class there is no room to doubt, as the work bespeaks one well versed in Confucian lore; while the various transfers, and marked allusions to a foreign faith, must give it an air of mystery to Chinese readers in general. This mystery, however, disappears to one who is acquainted with Christian doctrines; and he finds the tenets of the Christian faith clothed in an elegance of diction unobjectionable even to Chinese Throughout the whole, there is an evident inclination to Buddhism, in the nomenclature adopted for the various ecclesiastical institutions; while Taouist phraseology and ideas are conspicuous in the imperial proclamation. This last peculiarity will be observed in most of the decrees of the Tang emperors, and is to be accounted for by the fact, that the imperial family looked upon Laou-keun, the founder of Taouism, as their ancestor, the name of both being Le.

We have thus glanced at the several points of evidence which appear to us most conspicuous, leaving out of view what is said on the subject by adherents of the Christian

^{*} On the Genuineness of the so-called Nestorian Monument, p. 409.

po, Kwae-yu Hall Notes and Postscripts, containing notices of the most approved specimens of hand-writing, ancient and modern. On the tenth page of the third volume, noticing the Nestorian inscription, he says, "This tablet, inscribed by Lew Sew-yen, is a specimen of the style chiefly aimed at by Chaou Yung luh, and is distinguished among the hand-writings of the Tang for its extreme clearness, softness, elegance, and richness. The strokes of the characters on the tablet are slender, and not cut to a great depth; but the people of Shen-se, in rubbing impressions from it, have always lost sight of the excellence of its character, in consequence of the rarity of those who are clever at this work. When I paid a visit to Se-gan, Peih Tsew-fan holding office in Shense that same year, he took a general superintendence of the ancient tablets; this tablet was removed to the Kin-ching monastery, where he caused a building to be erected in which it was deposited, and gave it in charge to the head priest King-kwan, that people from other parts might not take impressions at pleasure. Having selected an expert workman, I had several fine impressions taken, and having obtained the exact form, I became conscious of a superiority in it which the former copies did not exhibit." These remarks are deserving of attention, as coming from a scholar who had attained the very highest rank. A great number of impressions must have been taken from this stone, for they are to be found in almost every city for sale, and every literary man of any standing knows the character of this inscription, and recognizes it as soon as he hears the name; and when the suggestion is made to the natives of the probability that it is a forgery, the unanimous reply is that such a thing was never known in China, and, furthermore, that it could not possibly pass undetected; or, were it attempted to pass off the Nestorian tablet for any date prior to, or later than, the Tang, it would be in vain, for the handwriting would at once betray the period to which it belonged. With respect to the Syriac portion of the inscription, Professor Salisbury will be admitted to be a competent witness, and we have it upon his authority that "the characters are unquestionably Estranghelo, Neumann's declaration to the contrary notwithstanding;"* nor will he be looked upon as

^{*} On the Genuineness of the so-called Nestorian Monument, p. 410.

upon as "the reinstator of the pure doctrine of Confucius," received with honors the Buddhist Heuen-tsang on his return from his travels, with more than six hundred of the Indian Buddhist sacred books, which this emperor set him to get translated, under his own immediate patronage."

The fact that the Nestorian religion existed in China for many centuries is established upon such abundant evidence, and is so generally credited, that it would be superfluous to adduce any proof in answer to the doubts thrown out by Neumann; neither are the Syrian writers altogether silent

on the subject, as his remarks would imply.

The last argument brought forward by the "leader of the opposition," as Professor Salisbury terms him, is "that both the Chinese and the Syriac characters of the inscription are modern, not such as were in use in the eighth century." Neumann is certainly a bold man to stake his sinological reputation on this statement. Were there no other evidence to testify to the genuineness of this inscription, still the style of the hand-writing would form an overpowering argument in its favor with every Chinese of any literary pretension. There is probably no people in the world who pay so much attention to the various delicate distinctions of different hands; so that it is difficult for a foreigner to understand the minute shades of touch by which they are able to classify, with an accuracy truly astonishing, not merely the several dynasties, but the various schools of writing under each dynasty. A long list of names is on record of those who have distinguished themselves in this art, from very early times down to the present day; and few Chinese gentlemen of any taste would think of being without a set of impressions taken from stone tablets, as specimens of their works. There is a class of caligraphers who make a particular study of these old specimens, and pride themselves on being able to imitate them with a great degree of accuracy; and none are more highly esteemed or closely studied than the productions of the Tang artists; yet with all their care and practice, it is generally admitted that a modern imitation by the most skilful hand can never deceive a connoisseur. One of the most famous of this class in modern times, named Wang Wan-che, has written a work called Kwae-yu tang te

^{*} Taih foo yuen kwei, vol. 51, p. 17.

be found. And let it now be considered what an emperor it is who found the doctrine of Olopen so excellent; it is the emperor who passes for a reinstator of the pure doctrine of Kong-tse, who declared: 'there is no salvation out of the doctrine of the perfect wise man." The above reasoning no doubt appears very conclusive to the Professor, but, unfortunately for his argument, we have a fact at hand which is of more weight than mere hypothesis. This imperial decree, which is so offensive in his sight, is actually found in almost the same terms in the forty-ninth volume of the Tang hwuy yaou, Collection of Important Matters of the Tang, a book published during the Sung, in 961, and now forming part of the imperial library Sze koo chuen shoo, the highest guarantee for its authenticity. The Ping-tsin suh pae ke, Ping-tsin Supplementary Tablet Memorial, published in 1813, quotes* this proclamation in full from the tablet, and adds, "This is substantially the same as that contained in the Tang hwuy yaou, except that the latter says 'the Po-sze, Persian, priest Alopun,' Persia being the original name of the kingdom of Ta-tsin. The Chang-gan che erroneously gives Alosze." Neumann objects to the statement that there were "churches standing in every city," but this is not exactly what the stone says; the expression is Choo chow, which may be translated "the various departments;" as choo does not always signify "without exception." Now this statement tallies remarkably with the extract from the imperial edict by Heuentsung, which we have already given, where it says, "let this be complied with choo foo keun, through the various departments," And the coincidence of the geographical terms here may be again noticed. As before remarked, the word chow was used from about 618 till 742, when it was exchanged for foo and keun. The first quotation being in the time of Kaou-tsung, who reigned from 650 to 683, it has the word chow; the second being in 745, the other terms are used in the same sense, which furnishes a strong collateral evidence of the truth of the former. Surely Professor Neumann has not read Chinese history very attentively, if he is ignorant of the great favors that have been conferred on the Buddhists at various times by the Chinese emperors; and in particular that this very Tae-tsung, whom he looks

VOL. V.

^{*} Vol. 7, p. 16.

and cut some time before the date of its erection. Neumann speaks of there being much communication between eastern and western Asia during the Tang; but, in view of the information that can now be obtained on this subject, there is no ground to believe that reports were annually passing between Syria and China; indeed, considering the difficulties of such a hazardous enterprize, it is much more reasonable to assume that the arrival of strangers from the far west was a comparatively rare occurrence. Hence we see nothing forced in Rénaudot's supposition that the tidings of the Patriarch's death may not have reached the Christians in . China when the monument was erected. Assemani's reference also is much to the point, when he draws attention to the fact that there is a letter now in the Vatican, which certain Nestorian bishops who had been sent to Malabar addressed to their Patriarch in Assyria about the year 1502, when he had been dead already two years. Another instance of a similar kind and more recent date may be cited, as more calculated to excite surprise, and yet of undoubted authenticity. Napier, the inventor of logarithms, died on the 4th April, 1617. On the 28th July, 1619, more than two years after his death, Kepler, who had not yet heard of this event, addressed a letter to him describing the progress of his astronomical tables, in consequence of the aid derived from logarithmic computation. This letter is preserved in the "Memoirs of John Napier of Murchiston," published in Edinburgh, 1834.*

"But never, never, would a Chinese emperor, in a public decree, have dared to say of a foreign doctrine: 'it must be published throughout the land,' without stirring up a revolt in the body of the nation, the Schukiao; never has a Chinese emperor caused the sacred Scriptures to be translated, and made known through the whole empire ('he specially commanded to publish it,' &c.); never has an emperor caused a church to be built in his capital, and never were there churches standing in every city. We deny all this so decidedly, because in Chinese history, where even the slightest inclination of the emperors to the Taosse and Buddhists is noticed, and blamed, not the remotest trace of it all is to

^{*} This notice is taken from a review by Biot in the Journal des Savans for March, 1835.

these books were correct in their general statements on the subject. The presumption is, that they would rather prefer such statements as the natives could at once recognize, thus more easily directing attention to that country which it was their object to point out. Although there may be some difficulty now in recognizing the various national features alluded to on the stone, yet there is no proof whatever that it is a false record. The Mohammedans in China are very numerous, and their ancestors were originally from the west; but we might look in vain among them for the preservation of any descriptions of the countries of their ancestors more authentic than other Chinese possess. The Jews have been resident in China for a much longer period, but no records have been preserved by them of the country whence they came.

Neumann proceeds, "Have the Chinese ever called India itself Tatschin, and was not the name given to the West, at the period of the inscription, Fulin?" It is not very obvious with what view the Professor introduces this sentence, as its tendency appears to be to nullify the force of the paragraph above noticed. But as this point seems to be given up in a later article from his pen, it is unnecessary to notice it, farther than to remark that, although the name Fulin is applied to that country in the Tang History, yet Ta-tsin was the name by which it was generally known in the early period of the dynasty, and down to much later times this name was used, as can easily be proved by a reference to

native Chinese works of the period.

"Upon the chronological error in respect to the Syrian patriarchs (of three years), we will lay no particular stress; Rénaudot's ground is indeed untenable, for there was, especially under the Tang, much communication between eastern and western Asia." The error here hinted at is, that the date given on the stone, both according to the Chinese and the Syriac, being A. D. 781, February 4th, the name of the Nestorian Patriarch for the time is given as John Joshua, or Ananjesus, while history states that this Patriarch died in 778. It would be desirable to know at what period of the year his death took place, as, were it about the end of 778, the time clapsed between that and the date on the stone would not greatly exceed two years, instead of three; moreover, the probability is that this inscription was written

As the chief objector in modern times to the genuineness of this tablet is C. F. Neumann, Professor of Chinese, it may be well to glance at the objections which he brings forward. He says,* "The authors of the inscription were Syrians, or at least of Syrian origin, and were in constant communication with the West: how then comes it, that they describe Tatschin (the West) precisely as Chinese geography under the Tang does? Have the Spaniards and Portuguese, the Dutch and English, in the monuments which they have left on foreign soil, described Europe and their father-land according to truth, or according to the fabulous views of foreign nations?" A very little reflection is sufficient to remove any difficulty on this point. The Chinese, from the earliest times, have always been careful to collect what information they could obtain respecting foreign nations, officers having been appointed whose special duty it was to attend to this; not indeed by long and perilous voyages of discovery, but by minutely inquiring, of the envoys from foreign parts, the national character and customs, the distance and extent of the countries, and a variety of particulars respecting the kingdoms to which they severally belonged; all which were chronicled in the state archives, every accession to the previous information being annexed to the national history at the close of each dynasty. By this means, together with the additional matter procured by several native travellers who visited foreign parts, the Chinese became possessed of a very respectable knowledge of other Asiatic nations, at a time when geographical science had certainly not made great progress in Europe; and indeed, to the present day, the most authentic account of some countries is to be found in the Chinese annals. Had the Nestorians, or other travellers from the west, during the Tang, brought with them any additional information of importance, the Chinese would certainly have availed themselves of it. But there is no reason to conclude that, because the authors of the inscription were of Syrian origin, they must therefore give an account of their fatherland different from that found in the Chinese books, when

^{*} We rely upon Professor Salisbury's paper on the Nestorian tablet, for the statement of these objections, which is given as a quotation from the Jahrbücker für wissenschaftliche Kritik, for 1830.

Nestorians, or even against the probability of its having emanated from them.

A Buddhist influence is observable in the term employed for "angel," Shin teen; the teen being the generic name for the various classes of Devas, or celestial beings, in the Buddhist mythology, and the qualifying term shin marking the

essentially spiritual character of the agent.

Some interesting notes respecting the sacred Scriptures are found in this inscription. After noticing the completion of the ancient dispensation, it speaks of the "preservation of twenty-seven Sacred Books," exactly the number we have in the New Testament. It states further that when Alopun arrived from Syria, "he brought the true Sacred Books," and adds, "the Sacred Books were translated in the imperial library." Tae-tsung also, in his proclamation, states that "Alopun has brought his Sacred Books and images from Syria, and presented them at our chief capital." In the ode, again, it is stated that "the Scriptures were translated, and churches built." From the prominent way in which the Scriptures are here mentioned on several occasions, it was probably considered a matter of importance with these Nestorian missionaries to have them disseminated among the Chinese. The mention of their being translated under imperial surveillance harmonizes very accurately with what history informs us of the state of translatorial labors about that time under the imperial patronage, the Buddhist traveller Heuen-tsang being engaged about the middle of the seventh century in his arduous labors on the Buddhist books. by special command. If the Scriptures were translated then, and there is no reason to doubt it, it is possible that some portion of this work may still be preserved in some of those depositories of literary treasures with which China abounds: no evidence of such a fact, however, has come to light in modern times. In the Lettres Édifiantes there is a notice by Gaubil, in 1752, of a manuscript being found in the possession of a Mohammedan, the descendant of Christian or Jewish ancestors from the west, written in characters almost the same as those on the Christian monument in Shen-se, This was carefully copied, and the fac-simile forwarded to Paris. It was afterwards examined by the Baron de Sacy. who pronounced it to be part of the Syriac version of the Old Testament, with hymns and prayers, written in the Estranghelo character.

the time when their opponents were making great efforts, and spreading widely through the countries of the east. For the same reason, there is as little ground to think that it was composed by Roman Catholics of later times, as some are prone to believe; for, had it been so, it is incredible that they would designedly introduce an element calculated to overthrow the fact it was their intention to establish. The Jesuit Father Kircher has written a work to prove the genuineness of this tablet, in which he speaks of the Syrian preachers as tainted with the heresy of the detestable Nestorius.* The characters fun-shin cannot be taken in the sense of "to give a body," as some have suggested; for although in some cases fun may mean "to distribute," yet the violence done to the language by such a rendering here is too obvious to be admitted. The Chinese language is not wanting in terms fully to express such an idea; while, were a concise term descriptive of the Nestorian tenet required, it is doubtful whether a more adequate expression could be selected than fun-shin.

It should be observed that, in the second of the above phrases, the word tae is used instead of she, which is the usual term; this phraseology is peculiar to the Tang, and was employed in consequence of she being one of the characters in the name of the emperor Tae-tsung; his private name being She-min, and Chinese etiquette requiring that no subject of that dynasty should make use of such characters. This rule is observed even in the title of one of the succeeding emperors, who is designated Tae-tsung, while under other circumstances his title would have been She-tsung. The same remark will apply to a sentence in the former part of the inscription, where it is said Tung jin chuh tae,

"he appeared in the world as a man."

It has been remarked that, for aught that there is peculiar to Nestorianism, the account of the incarnation might as well have proceeded from a partizan of the much disputed appellation *Theotokos*. But it may be added that, if there is nothing which can be viewed as peculiarly Nestorian in the plain scriptural account which is given, *Shih neu tan shing*, "a virgin gave birth to the Holy one," there is at least as little that can be taken controversially against the

^{*} La Chine Illustrée, p. 76.

tory explanation of this term has been given; it is possibly the name of some day peculiar to the sect. Some have given it as Sunday, which may be correct; for we find by calculation that the seventh day of the first month of that year, being February 4th, actually fell on a Sunday. An independent calculation of the same problem, by a Chinese, according to the native method, giving the same result, may be seen in the Hongkong Chinese Serial, Hea urh kwei chin,

for September, 1855.

A further means of verifying this date is given in the Syriac at the foot, where the tablet is said to have been set up "in the year of the Greeks one thousand and ninety-two." There is no difficulty in identifying this date, for it is well known that the Greek, or Syro-Macedonian era, being the one used by the Syrians, Arabs, and Jews, commenced in the autumn of the year B. C. 312.* So that the 312th year of that era ended in the autumn of the year A. D. 1. Carrying the series down to the February of 781 brings it to about the middle of the year 1092 of the Greek era, exactly

agreeing with the statement on the tablet.

Among the various doctrinal subjects which are touched upon in the introductory part of the inscription, there is one especially deserving of notice, as furnishing strong presumptive evidence of the Nestorian origin of this monument, where we find the expression, Ngo san-yih fun-shin king tsun Me-she-ho, "Our Triune, Divided-in-nature, Illustrious and Honorable Messiah;" and again, in the ode, it is said, Fun-shin chuh tae, "Divided in nature, he entered the world." The occurrence of the term fun-shin, "Divided in nature," twice in the inscription, is sufficient to attract attention, from the uncommon character of the expression; but when we remember the peculiar doctrines on account of which the Nestorians separated from the church of Rome, we can have very little doubt as to the origin of this term. For, had the inscription been composed by partizans of the Roman church, we cannot conceive that they would have been so inconsiderate as to employ an expression which, although by a forced interpretation they might accede to it, yet would always be liable to construction in favor of the doctrine which they termed heresy; and that too just at

^{*} See Prideaux's Old and New Testament connected, vol. 1, p. 514.

zodiac. As it was found that the course of Jupiter through the whole circle occupied nearly twelve years, it was termed suy sing, "the year star," each of the twelve years having a special designation, according to the sign then occupied by the planet. These twelve designations were made to correspond with the terms of the duodenary cycle, Tsze, Chow, Yin, &c., and in order to counterbalance the deficiency caused by the more rapid progress of Jupiter, one term of the cycle out of every one hundred and forty-five was abandoned. But in the course of time, the accelerated velocity of Jupiter showed this to be insufficient, and, after the Western Han, the terms of the cycle were continued uninterruptedly, without regard to the place of Jupiter in the heavens. The same phraseology, however, has been preserved down to later times, although the law that gave rise to it was lost to the Chinese for many centuries, and has been only recently recovered by the researches of modern native scholars. So that when this formula is met with in Chinese documents later than the Han, it is only to be taken as a synonym of the ordinary terms of the cycle, and not as in any way indicative of the place of Jupiter at the time given. The name tso-yo is the equivalent of the term year, the tenth in the cycle, being that of the date 781. The meaning of these twelve ancient designations is now unknown to the Chinese.*

The month is here called Tae-tsuh. This is a vestige of an extremely ancient terminology, to the origin of which it would be difficult to give a date. Tae-tsuh is the name of one of the twelve musical tubes; but these were also, by a special contrivance, used to determine the temperature of the earth during the twelve months of the year, and the seasons were fixed accordingly.† In an ancient calendar, Yue ling, found in the Le ke, or Book of Rites, the Tae-tsuh is called "the temperature tube of the first month of spring." Although these names have now gone out of general use in the calendar, the literati still frequently employ them as an embellishment to their compositions. The seventh day of this month is also called Ta-yaou-san-wan day. No satisfac-

These are to be found in the Urh-ya, probably the most ancient dictionary in existence, composed more than a thousand years before the Christian era.

[†] The names and proportions of these twelve tubes may be seen in Medhurst's Shoo-king, p. 21.

the fourth day of the fifth month in 700.* This was the fifteenth time the name had been changed during the reign

of the empress Woo Tsih-teen.

Immediately following the last quotation, we read, "In Seen-teen mo, 'the end of Seen-teen,' &c." We find that the term Seen-teen lasted from the beginning of the eighth month in 712 till the last day of the eleventh month in 713; being just about the time of the accession of Heuen-tsung. On the first day of the twelfth month, the name of the whole year was changed to the "first of Kae-yuen," so that the name Seen-teen is omitted in some of the national chronologies.

Again it is said, "In Teen-paou tsoo, the beginning of Teen-paou,' orders were given to the Great General Kaou Leih-sze, &c." The term Teen-paou began on the first day of the first month of the year answering to our 742, which

is no doubt the year alluded to here.

The next date mentioned is "In San tsae, 'the third year.' the priest Keih-ho in the kingdom of Syria, &c." It is a fact noted in the Chinese annals, that on the first day of the third year of Teen-paou, 744, the word nien, "year," was exchanged for tsae, which last continued to be used till the fourth day of the second month of the first year of Keen-yuen, 758, when it was abandoned for nien by authority of the emperor Suh-tsung. Tsae was the word used for year in the time of the ancient emperors Yaou and Shun, upwards of twenty-three centuries before the Christian era.+

The tablet is said to have been erected in Keen-chung urh nien, suy tsae tso-yo, tae-tsuh yue, tseih jih, ta-yaou-san-wan jih, "the second year of Keen-chung, the year being in the sign tso-yo, the month tae-tsuh, seventh day, being ta-yaou-san-wan day." The term Keen-chung began on the first day of the Chinese year answering to our 780, which makes the date on the stone, the second year, correspond to 781. The word suy for "year" appears to have been first used during the Hea, twenty-two centuries before the Christian era. When the year is said to be in tso-yo, this is a tradition of an ancient practice, according to which the year was chronicled by the progress of the planet Jupiter through the twelve signs of the

^{*} Where the date 699 is given above, it should be altered to correspond

⁺ See Medhurst's Shoo-king, p. 10. 1 Ibid., p. 126.

In the first instance where Alopun is mentioned on the tablet, he is called the Shang-tih, "Most-virtuous," Alopun, which appears to be merely an intensification of the preceding term.

Among the Chinese names on the margin is one styled "Laou suh-ya Keu-mo," where the title is equivalent to our

"Doctor."

Some other Syriac titles occur among the names of ecclesiastical dignitaries. On the left-side line, we find aba dabahotha Mar Hana Jesua katholika patriarchis, "The Chief Father, Lord John Joshua, the Universal Patriarch." The identity of this with the title of the Patriarch of the Nestorians is at once obvious.

In the subscription, we have "Gabriel, Arcodiakon, 'Archdeacon;'" and the same title occurs again in the margin, in "Aggeus, Priest and Arcodiakon of the city of Cumdan."

Again, in the subscription, there is "Adam, Meschamschono,

Deacon."

It is deserving of remark, also, how the author has contrived to vary his expressions in noting the several dates, thus giving evidence of a master-hand in this style of composition. The first noticed is the arrival of Alopun, which took place in Chin-kwan keu sze, "the ninth year of Chin-kwan," this being the national name for the term of years beginning with the reign of Tae-tsung, A. D. 627, making the year in question 635. The word sze, which is employed here for year, was the term used for that purpose during the Shang, and is found in the history of that dynasty in the Shoo-king, B. C. 1753.*

A little lower it is said, that Tae-tsung issued the proclamation in Shih urh nien tsew tsee yue, "the twelfth year, autumn, in the seventh month." This corresponds to the year A. D. 688. The word nien, which represents year here, was first brought into use in the Chow dynasty, B. C.

1134.+

Again, it is stated, that "In Shing-le nien, 'the years of Shing-le,' the Buddhists, gaining power, &c." Shing-le is the name for the period commencing from the beginning of the Chinese year corresponding to our 698, and ending on

^{*} See Medhurst's Shoo-king, p. 140, &c. † See Medhurst's Shoo-king, p. 182.

used here in the title, where the composition is said to be the work of King-tsing, Seng, "priest," of the Syrian church. In Tae-tsung's proclamation, he orders that the Syrian church in the E-ning Way be governed by twenty-one Seng. The same word is used on six other occasions in the inscription with the same meaning; it is added to three names in the subscription; and fifty-nine names on the margin also have this term prefixed. The word Kasiso is used in the line of Syriac on the right side of the inscription, in the name Adam Kasiso; and five persons named in the Syriac part of the subscription are termed Kasiso; twenty-eight names on the margin also have this word appended. There is no doubt about the identity of the Chinese Seng and the Syriac Kasiso, the translation of both being "Priest."

On the inscription we read again, that about the year 713, "there was the Seng-show, 'chief priest,' Lo-han, &c." In another place, Lo-hang is called simply a Seng, but the previous quotation evidently marks a superior station in the Church. Probably the Syriae of this term is to be found in the subscription, where the priest Gabriel is called Risch or

"Ecclesiarch" of Cumdan and Sarag.

In Tae-tsung's proclamation, it is said, "The Ta-tih, 'Greatly-virtuous,' Alopun of the kingdom of Syria, &c." In an after part of the inscription, it is said that about the year 713 there was "the Ta-tih Kie-leih, &c." Lower down, the emperor Heuen-tsung is said to have commanded seven priests "together with the Ta-tih Keih-ho, to perform a service of merit, &c." Among the names on the margin, also, there is one "Ta-tih Yaou-lun." This Ta-tih is a term of very frequent occurrence in Buddhist books written during and previous to the Tang, being applied as a title of courtesy to the Buddhist priests. An instance occurs on the tablet commemorative of the Indian Buddhist priest Puhkung, in Se-gan foo, which was erected the same year as the Nestorian tablet, according to the dates. In the title, he is called Ta-tih Ho-shang. We find something nearly corresponding to this also, in the use of the Syriac prefix Mar. "Lord." This occurs once in the single line down the left side of the inscription, in Mar John Joshua; twice in the Syriac subscription, in the names Mar Jazedbuzid and Mar Sergius; and five times in the margin, in the names Mar-John, Mar Sergius three times, and Mar Joseph.

During the Tang, they had charge of the construction of

public buildings.*

The Chinese titles and designations of members of the hierarchy used on this tablet are all taken from the Buddhist vocabulary. Alopun, the Nestorian apostle, seems to have enjoyed great favor under both the emperors Tae-tsung and Kaou-tsung, by the latter of whom he was made Chinkwo to for choo, Great Conservator of Doctrine for the Preservation of the State. The title Chin-kwo was conferred on various occasions during the Tang, not only on members of the priesthood, but also on military officers, as a high mark of honor, indicating a degree of merit. A monastery in the district of Wan-nien, in the capital, was also distinguished as the Chin-kwo sze. The title Ta fa choo is obviously of Buddhist origin. The title in full is apparently the equivalent of the Syriac title given on the right side of the Chinese inscription, Papasi de Zinstan, or Metropolitan of China; and if so, the priest Adam mentioned here must have been a successor of Alopun.

A class of officers subordinate to this is noticed in the ode, where it is said that in the time of Kaou-tsung "Fachoo, Overseers of the Church, were appointed in due form;" and at the end, it is said "the Fachoo Ning-shoo had the charge of the congregations of the Illustrious in the east," at the time the inscription was written. The first name on the margin in Syriac is "Mar Johanan, Apiscupo." The identity of the Chinese Fachoo and the Syriac Apiscupo is no unreasonable supposition, both being appropriately

translated by the term "Bishop."

Another name of office occurs in the Chinese subscription, in the title of the priest Ye-le, who is called Sze-choo, Chief Presbyter. In the Syriac subscription, the title Curapiscupo is four times applied to individuals, viz. to the priest Adam, to the priest Jidbuzad twice, and to the priest Sargis. The latter name, with the same title, again occurs among the Syriac names on the margin. The Sze-choo of the Chinese here naturally suggests itself as the translation of the Syriac Curapiscupo, giving the meaning of "Suffragan Bishop."

The term Seng, being the transfer of the Sanskrit Sanga, which is the common designation for Buddhist priests, is

^{*} Wan heen tung kaou, vol. 63, p. 14.

didates, with the word She, "Examination," prefixed to the official title; hence the designation of E-sze, She teen

chung keen,

Another instance of the above-mentioned use of She occurs in the Chinese part of the subscription, where the Assistant Examiner is styled She Tae-chang king, Examination High Statesman of the Sacred Rites. The duties of the Tae chang-king, which are of very remote origin, appear to have arisen from a desire to propitiate the spiritual powers. So early as the time of the ancient emperor Shun, we find two officers, Pih-e and Kwei, appointed to take charge of the sacrificial rites, and of sacred music; and after more than a thousand years, the various charges connected with this branch of the public service during the Chow were all under the control of an officer styled the Ta Tsung-pih, or Minister of Rites. During the Tsin dynasty, which succeeded, the name was changed to Fung-chang; and this was again changed to Tae-chang at the commencement of the Han. From this to the Tang, the name was several times changed, the office being always deemed one of high importance in the government. In 661 Tae-chang was changed to Fung-chang; but Tae-chang was again adopted in 670; in 701 this was replaced by he title Sze-le; and in 704 Tae-chang was again restored, one officer with this title being termed King, while there were two inferiors named Seaou king. + But as the priest Ye-le, whose name is inscribed on the tablet, has the word She prefixed to his title, it is seen that the title was merely nominal in his case, indicating a degree of rank far inferior to that of the officer above spoken of.

The inscription is said to be "written by Lew Sew-yen, Chaou e lang, Secretary to Council, formerly See see sankeun, Military Superintendent, for Tae-chow." The Chaou e lang was a supernumerary office established during the Suy, and continued throughout the Tang, but was not re-

tained after the extinction of that dynasty.1

The office of Sze sze san keun appears to have existed as early as the Han, but there is no record of the duties pertaining to it at that time. From the time of the Northern Tsie, the post was filled by those distinguished for merit.

^{*} Sin Tung shoo, vol. 45, p. 6. † Wan heen tung kaou, vol. 55, p. 2. † Yen keen luy han, vol. 97, p, 38.

in the imperial service; and the third is an honorary title, which gives to the possessor a certain status in the capital, without any duties or emolument connected therewith.

Ta foo is a dignity of very old standing in China, having been used during the Shang dynasty, at least twelve centuries before the Christian era. The origin of kwang-luh as prefixed to titles is to be found in the Paou jin, "Caterer," of the Chow.* The name kwang-luh itself was first used about a century before the Christian era; + and the title Kwang-luh ta foo was established at the beginning of the third century after Christ. Those who bore this title were privileged to wear a silver signet suspended from the waist by a blue tie; in 268 a new order was created, a grade higher, who wore a golden signet suspended by a purple tie, and were designated Kin tsze kwang-luh ta foo, while those of the old order were called Yin tsing kwang-luh ta foo.§

The Tsee-too sze was a military office introduced early in the seventh century, for the purpose of more effectually guarding the border territories; the first appointment having been made in 610. With each Tsee-too sze, ten subordinate officers were appointed, with the title of Tung tsee-too foo sze. The office of So-fang tsee-too sze was established in 721, with the object of keeping in check the Tartar hordes in the north, ** Koh Tsze-e received this commission in 754; ++ so that it is probable that E-sze received his appointment as

Tung So-fang tsee-too foo sze soon after.

The office of Teen chung keen was first established by the Wei dynasty, towards the end of the third century, for the purpose of taking cognizance of various duties connected with the imperial household. The name underwent several changes previous to the Tang. In 662, it was changed to Chung yu keen; and in 670 the original name was restored, and continued to be used throughout the dynasty. ## The practice of selecting a class of men by examination to fill the offices of government began with the Tang; and in 703 nominal offices were first conferred upon the successful can-

^{*} Thih foo yuen kwei, vol. 620, p. 1. † Ihid., vol. 620, p. 3. † Ibid., vol. 620, p. 5. § Ibid., vol. 620, p. 10. † Ibid., vol. 620, p. 10. † Ibid., vol. 620, p. 10. † Sin Tang shoo, vol. 49, part 2, p. ** Tuh she fang yu ke yaou, Geography of the Historians, vol. 5, p. 41. † Tung keen kang muh, vol. 44, p. 23. † Wan heen tung kaou, vol. 57, p. 1. † Ibid., vol. 620, p. 3. § Ibid., vol. 620, p. 10. ¶ Sin Tang shoo, vol. 49, part 2, p. 4.

alluded to on the tablet, when he was gaining honors by the

reduction of the insurgents in So-fang.

Again it is said, "In 742, orders were given to the Ta tseang-keun, 'Great General,' Kaou Leih-sze, &c.;" and his biography states that in the same year he was made Kwankeun ta tseang-keun, "Army-controlling Great General," and Yew keen-mun wei ta tseang-keun, "Inferior-guardian-of-thegate Great General." The Ta tseang-keun was a military title first used during the latter part of the third century B.C., and employed in later times, with a great variety of prefixes. We find the first mention of the Kwan-keun ta tseang-keun about the end of the fifth century, and after a number of changes the name was re-established in 637. The title Yew keen-mun wei ta tseang-keun was first used in 624.*

Again, the tablet has, "Our great benefactor the Tszetsze keasha seng, 'Imperially-conferred-purple-gown Priest,' E-sze, Kin tsze kwang-luh ta foo, 'Titular Great Statesman of the Banqueting-house, Tung So-fang tsee-too foo sze, 'Associated Secondary Military Commissioner for the Northern Region,' and She Teen chung keen, 'Examination Palace Overseer,' Without hazarding a conjecture as to who this priest E-sze was, it seems evident, from the elaborate array of titles appended to his name, that the writer intended to mark it with peculiar honor. Near about the time indicated here, we find the practice commencing of the emperor's conferring gowns on members of the priesthood. The first notice of such occurs in 778, when, it is said, the emperor sent a purple robe on the occasion of the death of the foreign priest Sun-to. The following year, a gown was conferred on the priest Ko-tsing, as a special token of imperial favor. + Another instance of the same distinction occurs in the subscription at the foot of the tablet, where the Assistant Examiner is called the Tsze tsze kea-sha, "Imperially-conferred-purple-gown Priest." The reader of middle-age Chinese history does not need to be informed, that it was no rare occurrence for priests to occupy civil and military offices in the state during the Tang and preceding dynasties. Of the three titles here given, the first is merely an indication of rank, by which the bearer is entitled to a certain emolument from the state; the second is his title as an officer actively engaged

† Ibid., vol. 52, pp. 2, 3.

^{*} Tsih foo yeun keei, vol. 340, pp. 1, 5, 19, 20.

the ancestor of the race, is quite in harmony with the usage of oriental literature, where this ancient term has been re-

tained long after it was given up in the west.

Some official designations occur on the tablet, which it may not be out of place to mention. It is said, "the Emperor sent his Tsae chin, 'prime minister,' Duke Fang Heuen-ling." In the Tang History the same term Tsae chin is applied to the prime ministers. At the establishment of the Tang dynasty, the duties of the Tsac scang, "prime minister," were performed by the chief officers of the three Sing, "tribunals," denominated respectively Chung-shoo ling, "sec-ondary minister of state," She chung, "imperial attendant," and Shang-shoo ling, "chief president;" who deliberated together respecting the government of the state, without the appointment of Tsae seang as a separate office. At a later period, the inferior ministers declined the duties of Shangshoo ling, in consequence of the emperor Tae-tsung having himself formerly sustained that office. Hence the Puh-yays became chief officers of the Shang-shoo sing, "President's tribunal," and these with the She chung and Chung-shoo ling were entitled Tsae seang.* According to the biography of Fang Heuen-ling in the Tang History, he was made Shang-shoo tso puh-yay, "senior prime minister," in 630, five years previous to the time alluded to in the above quotation, which so far presents a perfect agreement with facts.

Lower down, we read, "When the Duke Koh Tsze-e, Chung-shoo ling, 'secondary minister of state,' &c." The office of Chung-shoo ling was first established during the Han dynasty, and underwent a variety of changes, both with regard to the incumbent duties and the name, previous to the Tang. At the commencement of that dynasty, the designation was Nuy-she ling; in 620, it was changed to Chung-shoo ling; in 662, this was abandoned for that of Yew seang; in 670, the name Chung-shoo ling was again restored; in 685, the name Nuy she was adopted instead; in 705, Chung-shoo ling was renewed; in 713, this was changed for Tsze-we ling; in 717, the name Chung-shoo ling was again adopted; and was once more changed to that of Yew seang in 742; this last was replaced by Chung-shoo ling in 757, the same year in which the Tang History informs us that Koh Tsze-e was promoted to that dignity, and just about the time

^{*} Wan heen tung kaou, Antiquarian Researches, vol. 49, p. 5.

of those early times, when the ruling state was surrounded on all sides by a cluster of small feudatories, obedient to the commands of the sovereign. This name is also found twice on the tablet. The heading is, "Tablet of the dissemination in Chung-kwo of the Illustrious religion of Syria." The title gives, "Tablet eulogizing the propagation of the Illustrious religion in Chung-kwo." The name given for China on the Syriac portion of the tablet, is Zinstan. Those who discover China in the "land of Sinim," in Isaiah, will probably find here an independent testimony in favor of their view, while the arguments that have been brought forward on that question leave no doubt that Zinstan here applies to China. Kircher's China Illustrata may be consulted with advantage on the subject, and also an article on the "Land of Sinim" in the Chinese Repository for March, 1844. It may be noticed, moreover, that the name used for China in Buddhist books long anterior to the date of this monument, is Che-na.* In an extract from a Syriac breviary, given by Kircher, the name for China only differs by one letter from that on the tablet. In a subsequent part of the Syriac, the term malche dizinio occurs, which we have given "king of China;" but the more literal rendering would be "king of the Chinese."

In the Syriac subscription above noticed, the priest Gabriel is called Ecclesiarch of Cumdan and Sarag. It is very doubtful what place is here indicated by Sarag. Mosheim† says it is a city of southern China, quoting Ptolemy

as his authority for the statement.

In a previous part of the subscription, mention is made of "Mailas, Priest of Balach, a city of Turkestan." We find in the work of Mosheim above quoted; a table taken from Assemani, of the metropolitan seats of the Nestorians, in

which Turkestan forms the nineteenth on the list.

There is still another national appellation in the Syriac portion, where it is said, Besanath alf utisaain vtarten diavanoi?' "In the year of the Greeks one thousand and ninety-two." It will be observed that the name Iavanoi? (Ionians) employed here for the Greek nation, from Javan

Appendix, p. 2.

^{*} See Notices of Chinese Buddhism, by Rev. J. Edkins, in the Shanghae Almanac for 1855.

[†] Historia Turtarorum Ecclesiastica, Appendix, p. 28.

A little lower down there is another part of the empire referred to; "When the Duke Koh Tsze-e at first conducted the military in So-fang, 'the northern region,' &c." This is the present prefecture of Ning-hea in Kan-suh, which was known about the time spoken of, by the names of Hea-chow, So-fang, and Ning-so, one of the districts it included being also named So-fang. The same name occurs again in the title of the priest E-sze, who is called the Associated Secondary Military Commissioner for So-fang, "the northern region."

The last line states that this inscription was "written by Lew Sew-yen, formerly Military Superintendent for Taechow." This is the same as the present Tae-chow in Che-

keang, which first received that name in 622.

Another geographical notice occurs on the Chinese part of the inscription, where it is said of the priest E-sze, that, "from the distant city of Wang-shih, 'Rajagriha,' he came to visit Chang-hea, 'China.'" Wang-shih, literally "Royal residence," which is also the translation of the Sanskrit word Rajagriha, is the name of a city on the banks of the Ganges, which occurs in several Buddhist works. In the cyclopedia Fa yuen choo lin,* an extract from the Shih-urh yew king, Classic of the Twelve Excursions, states that the city of Lo yue-ke, "Rajagriha," is called in the Tsin yen, "language of China," the city of "Wang-shih;" and that it is reported to have been the city where the first kings of Moka-to, "Magadha," lived. The Buddhist traveller Heuentsang writes the name of this place Ko-lo-chay-keih-le-he, which is merely another orthography of Rajagriha. As this was one of the most important of the Buddhist cities in India, it is natural to suppose that E-sze was a Buddhist priest.

There are many precedents in the national literature, for the use of *Chung-hea* as a designation of China. We find this term as early as the third century, in an ode by Pan Koo, the historian of the Han; and the two parts of the name are used separately in the same sense, in the *Shoo-king*, one of the oldest books in existence. One of these, *Chung-kwo* "the middle kingdom," occurs in the Section *Tsze tsae* of that classic,† and has been retained unchanged down to the present time, more than 2,000 years, as an unfading tradition

[#] Vol. 44, p. 13.

[‡] See Medhurst's translation of the Shoo-King, p. 240.

acters which we have translated "eastern metropolis" are Tung Chow, literally "eastern Chow." It has already been stated that the empire was at this time under the government of the empress Woo Tsih-teen, who had removed her residence from Chang-gan to Lo-yang* in Ho-nan. By reference to the Lo-yang heen che, Topography of Lo-yang, we find the earliest notice of this city as a royal seat, during the reign of Ping-wang (B. C. 770—720) of the Chow dynasty, which monarch, it is said, being pressed by the western Tartars, fled from the capital Haou eastward, to the city of Lo, which was hence denominated Eastern Chow. That the dynasty of Woo Tsih-teen was also named Chow, might afford a still further reason for restoring the ancient

appellation.

The next local reference is as follows, "The accomplished and enlightened emperor Suh-tsung rebuilt the Illustrious churches in Ling-woo and four other places." The Tang History states that this prince was proclaimed emperor at Ling-woo in 756, while his father was seeking refuge in the country now known as Sze-chuen, on occasion of the rebellion of Gan Lo-shan. Ling-woo is the present Lingchow in Kan-suh. These five places are called keun on the tablet. This keyn is the name of an ancient territorial division of the empire, which had changed its signification seven times previous to the Tang dynasty. According to the geographical section of the Tang History, about the year 618 the name keun was exchanged for that of chow throughout the empire; about 742, the name chow was again exchanged for keun; and in 757, being the second year of Suhtsung, the term keun was finally abandoned, and chow again adopted instead.

The term keun occurs on one other occasion on the tablet, in the title of Koh Tsze-e, who is designated Prince of Fun-yang keun. Although this title was conferred in 762, five years after the geographical abandonment of the word keun, yet, as it is exactly confirmed by the biography of Koh-Tsze-e, there is no room to doubt its authenticity; the term being probably retained in titles of nobility long after the other application had ceased. Fun-yang, in the province of

Shan-se, is still known by the same name.

† Vol. 10, p. 1.

^{*} Within the present Ho-nan foo, the capital of the province.

and remarks on the next page, that "on the north-east of Cross street is a Persian foreign temple."* The Chang-gan che statest that the original name of this was He-kwang fang, but was changed to E-ning fang in 617, the national designation for that year being E-ning. Another local allusion runs thus, "The emperor commanded the priest Lo-han, the priest Poo-lun, and others, seven in all, together with the Greatly-virtuous Keih-ho, to perform a service of merit in the Hing-king kung, 'Hing-king palace.'" In the Chang-gan chet we find, that on the east side of the 3rd street east of the imperial city, the 4th fang from the north end was originally called Lung-king fang, but the name was changed to Hing-king fang on the accession of the emperor Heuen-tsung, in 713. Within this fang was the residence of the five brothers of Heuen-tsung. As the inscription reads, we are led to believe that the occurrence there noticed took place in 741, or shortly after. Now on referring to the Tsih joo yuen kwei, under the section on Imperial residences, we find it recorded, "that in the year 714, the Prince of Sung | and his brothers memorialized the emperor, requesting that he would occupy their former residence in Chang-gan as a royal palace, which was henceforth by imperial decree designated the Hing-king kung, 'Hing-king palace,' and was decorated with mottoes written by the emperor. In 728, this palace was first used in transacting the business of the government." Frequent mention is made of this edifice in the history of that period. In the Ta Ming yih tung che, it is said to be five & southeast from the official residence of the Prefect of Se-gan foo.

One of those antithetical sentences with which the inscription abounds, and which has already been noticed, introduces another name requiring a word of explanation. It is, "In the year A. D. 699, the Buddhists, gaining power, raised their voices in the 'eastern metropolis.'" The char-

A quotation from the Chang-gan che in a preceding part of this paper, in which this temple is said to have been erected for the Syrian foreign priest Alosze, can leave no doubt as to this being the temple alluded to on the tablet.

Vol. 10, p. 9. Vol. 9, p. 2. Vol. M, p. 8.

This was the elder brother of the emperor. He was created Prince of Sung in 710, and promoted to be Prince of Ning in 716.

then existing metropolises. A singular corroboration appears to have come to light recently with respect to this site. The Syriac legend at the foot informs us that this tablet was set up by "the Lord Jazedbuzid, Priest and Vicar-episcopal of Cumdan, the royal city." Following this record are the names of four dignitaries in Syriac, the last of which is, "Gabriel, Priest, Archdeacon, and Ecclesiarch of Cumdan and Sarag." The Roman Catholic fathers were sorely puzzled to apply this name to any definite locality. While Renaudot, in his "Anciennes Relations," endeavors to prove this to be Nanking, Premare denies his position, in an article published in the "Lettres édifiantes;"# and it is only since the publication of Reinaud's Travels of the Arabians in China, that we learn that during the middle ages, the place known to the Arabs as Kumdan, was no other than Changgan. † If, then, this place was the Kumdan of Arabian travellers, no argument is required to identify it with Cumdan in the Nestorian inscription. A topical notice of Chang-gan occurs again in Tae-tsung's proclamation, which says, "let the proper authority build a Syrian church in the capital in the E-ning fang, 'E-ning Way.'" The fragmentary work above referred to, New Record of the Two Capitals, states; that, in the third street west from the imperial-city, the third fang from the north end is called "E-ning fang," \$

^{*} Lettres edifiantes et curieuses. Tome 3, p. 579. New edition. Paris.

† "On the genuineness of the so-called Nestorian Monument of Singanfu," by Edward E. Salisbury, p. 413. Not having the original work at hand,
we take this statement on the above authority.

[†] Page 14.
§ The Chang-gan che gives an elaborate detail of the streets and buildings in this ancient capital, from which we learn that the city was composed of three principal parts: 1st, the Kung ching or "Palatial city," 4 le in extent from east to west, and 2 le 270 paces from north to south; 2nd, the Heang ching or "Imperial city," on the south of the preceding, 5 le 150 paces east to west, by 3 le 140 paces north to south, containing 7 streets longitudinally, and 5 transversely; 3rd, the Wae koh ching or "Suburban city," enclosing the two preceding on three sides, being 18 le 115 paces from east to west, and 15 le 175 paces from north to south. The whole of this space was parcelled out into fangs or solid squares, each square being equally divided by two streets, one longitudinally, and one transversely, in the form of a cross, and hence termed Cross streets; with the exception of those fangs to the south of the imperial city, in which there were no streets dividing them longitudinally. South of the imperial city, the space was occupied by four fangs from east to west, and nine from north to south, making thirty-six. On the east and west sides of the imperial city respectively, were thirteen fangs, extending the whole length from north to south of the suburban city, while the breadth of each was occupied by three fangs.

Farther down we read, "In the year A. D. 635, Alopun arrived at Chang-gan." This scarcely requires any remark, as it is well known that Chang-gan of the Tang dynasty is the modern Se-gan foo, where the stone was found, and where it is preserved to the present time; and although there is nothing in the inscription to indicate the locality of its erection, yet, were it left to conjecture, no place could be selected with a greater show of probability than this. other allusion to the same place, however, occurs on the tablet, which is not so obvious to the foreign reader, who is unable to consult the Chinese original. We have translated it, "in the year A. D. 713, some low fellows excited ridicule, and spread slanders in the western capital." A translation by M. Léontiewski* gives, "and in the western state of Chao they attempted to decry it." An English translation in the Chinese Repository+ gives, "and in Sikau spread abroad slanderous reports," A French version by M. Dalquiet gives, "et la calomnièrent dans Sy Kao (c'est l' ancienne Cour du Roy Uen uam dans la Province de Xen sy)." A Latin version by Kirchers gives, "calumniatique sunt in Sy Kao (antiqua est Regis Uen uam aula in Xen sy Prouincia)." While the last two of these versions are in error in saying that this was the residence of Wan-wang, the two preceding leave the locality undefined. The characters we have translated "western capital" are Se Haou, literally "western Haou;" Haou being the name of the site, within five or six miles of the present Se-gan, where Woo-wang established his court after the subjugation of the Shang dynasty, about the end of the twelfth century before the Christian era. In B. C. 196, Kaou-tsoo of the Han dynasty removed his court to this vicinity, then known as Changgan. Two years later, Hwuy-te, the next emperor, surrounded it with a wall, and raised it to the rank of a city. From that period down to the Tang, Chang-gan continued, with various intervals, to be occupied as the imperial residence. | * It is known to be the practice of the literati to give the preference to the antique names of places in their elegant compositions; hence this designation of one of the two

^{*} See The Cross and the Dragon, p. 28.

See La Chine Illustrée. Chang-gan che, vol. 1, pp. 1-4.

⁺ For May, 1845. See China Illustrata.

years prior to the said edict; hence we are naturally directed to Syria, as the cradle of this religion. It is said "the Mostvirtuous Alopun arrived from the country of Ta-tsin," and Tae-tsung, in his proclamation, calls him "The Greatlyvirtuous Alopun, of the kingdom of Ta-tsin." Again, the tablet says, "In 744 the priest Keih-ho, in the kingdom of Ta-tsin, looking towards the star (of China), was attracted by its transforming influence, &c." In reference to these it may be remarked, that although Nisibis was then the chief seat of the Nestorian church, yet Syria was still within their ecclesiastical jurisdiction, there being a metropolitan at Damascus, and also at Jerusalem. It is possible, however, from the loose way in which Ta-tsin is spoken of, that its limits may have been extended even far to the east of Syria. The only other instance in which Ta-tsin is mentioned, marks the spot intended with much greater precision even than all the others; where it is said, "a virgin gave birth to the Holy one in Ta-tsin," the birth of our Saviour leaves little room for question as to Syria being the locality alluded to. There is still, indeed, another reference on the tablet to the same locality, though, from the figurative language employed, it is much less definite than any of the above-mentioned instances. It is said, "At that time there was the chief priest Lo-han, the Greatly-virtuous Kie-leih, and others of noble estate from the Kin fang, 'golden regions.'" It is well known that the Chinese, in their cosmic theories, have allotted each of the four cardinal points respectively to one of their original elements, in which category the west is said to belong to gold; hence the force of the above paragraph. where by the "golden regions" appear to be meant the countries to the west of China,

The next geographical allusion on the stone reads, "a bright star announced the felicitous event, and Po-sze, 'Persians', observing the splendor, came to present tribute." This name was well known to the Chinese at that time, being the designation of an extensive sect then located in the empire, and the name of a nation with which they had held commercial and political intercourse for several centuries. The statement here is in admirable harmony with the general tradition of the early church, that the Magi or wise men mentioned in Matthew's gospel were no other than philoso-

phers of the Parsee sect.

tration of justice is noticed, and the practice of selecting the princes on account of their virtues, as also the great extent of the land. But while the tablet states that "on the west it extends towards the borders of the immortals and the flowery forests; on the east it lies open to the violent winds and weak waters," the Han History on the contrary says, "To the west of this kingdom are the weak waters and moving sands,* near to the residence of the Se wang moo, 'Mother of the western king,' almost at the place where the sun sets."+ The account of Ta-tsin in the Wei history is substantially the same as in that of the Han, but much condensed. The author of the inscription, however, mentions another book on which he seems to have relied, Se yih too ke, Illustrated Memoir of the Western Regions. Although there is little probability of obtaining this work now, yet we find in the catalogue of books given in the cyclopædia Yuh hae, that a work of that name is said to have been presented to the emperor in the year 661, by Wang Mingyuen, who was sent as commissioner to Turkestan; which may reasonably be supposed to be the book referred to. On the heading to the tablets this is called "the Illustrious religion of Ta-tsin;" in the title to the inscription, King-tsing is said to be a "priest of the Ta-tsin church;" and in the emperor Tae-tsung's proclamation, he says, "let the proper authority build a Ta-tsin church in the capital in the E-ning Way." Now although it might be inferred that, in the first two of these instances, the name Ta-tsin must necessarily be used, in compliance with the edict issued by Heuen-tsung thirty-five years previously, "that all the temples of Persian origin should henceforth pass under that designation;" yet it cannot well be supposed that the same argument would apply to the imperial proclamation issued a hundred and seven

This is an evident adaptation of one of the most ancient of Chinese traditions, which records that the residence of the Se seang moo is unapproachable, in consequence of its being surrounded by waters so weak as to be incapable of floating the lightest object, and sands which are continually shifting. The "weak waters and moving sands" are mentioned in the Yu kung chapter of the Shoc-king.

⁺ How Han shoo, vol. 118.

[†] Vol. 16. p. 7. § In giving the translation of the inscription, in a previous part of this paper, the heading of the tablet was omitted; it consists of nine large characters in three lines, signifying, "Tablet of the dissemination in China of the Illustrious religion of Syria."

revolt by Gan Luh-shan, a general under the imperial government, in the suppression of which he took a very active part; and, as a reward for his service, was created Duke of Tae-kwoh in 757. In the beginning of 762, he was made Fun-yang keun wang, Prince of Fun-yang, and was still alive at the date of the inscription, having died in the sixth month

of the same year, at the venerable age of 85.*

Among the geographical allusions on the tablet, the name of most frequent occurrence is Ta-tsin, which we have translated Syria, as there is little room for doubt that this is the term most applicable to the eight several occasions on which the name is introduced. That the author of the inscription himself had not a very clear notion of the country indicated, one may be inclined to surmise from the quotation which he introduces from the Chinese historical books, written several centuries prior to the period in question. A reference to the histories of the Han and Wei dynasties, as indicated, proves peculiarly unsatisfactory in determining the precise country intended. The information furnished by these authorities has the appearance of a miscellaneous collection of statements from various sources; it being left to the sagacity of the reader to discriminate between that which is trustworthy, and a part which evidently borders on the fabulous. A statement in the History of the After Han points unequivocally to the Roman empire as Ta-tsin, it being said that the emperor Gan-tun (Anthony) sent an ambassador to China, A. D. 166. Other parts of the account, however, are exceedingly difficult to reconcile, and it is scarcely probable that the Nestorian missionaries would select Rome as a national designation for their church. The accounts may be somewhat harmonized by supposing that, as Syria once formed a part of the Roman empire, the name and glory of that great empire may have attached to it, in oriental history, down to later times. The After Han History corroborates, in the main, the description of Ta-tsin given on the tablet; we find it there stated that the country is famed for its coral, curious gems, fire-proof cloth, life-restoring incense, bright-moon pearls, and night-lustre gems. It is also stated that the country is entirely free from alarms, robbery, theft, and brigandage. The care of the sovereign in the adminis-

Biographical section, vol. 70.

of the emperor with the other five being frequent and harmonious.**

Again, the tablet states, "In 742, orders were given to the great general Kaou Leih-sze, to send the five sacred portraits (of the Tang emperors), and have them placed in the church, and a gift of a hundred pieces of silk accompanied these pictures of intelligence." In the section of the Tang history devoted to the Biography of Eunuchs, Kaou Leihsze occupies the second place on the list. From this memoir we learn that he was a native of Pwan-chow, originally surnamed Fung; that he was born near the end of the seventh century, and, having become a eunuch, was admitted into the palace in his youth; that some time after, he was adopted as the son of an officer in the palace named Kaou Yen-fuh, whence he assumed the surname Kaou. The great favor he enjoyed with Heuen-tsung may be inferred from a remark which that emperor was in the habit of making, "When Leih-sze is in attendance, I can sleep in security;" hence, the biographer adds, he was constantly in the palace, only going out on rare occasions. In 741, he was made Armycontrolling Great General, and also Guardian-of-the-rightpalace-door Great General, being at the same time promoted to the dukedom of Po-hae.+ In the biography of the Prince of Ning, it is said that on the death of that prince, in 741, the Great General Kaou Leih-sze was deputed to place on his shrine an inscription written by the emperor. ‡ Heuen-tsung being the sixth of the Tang dynasty, the five sacred portraits alluded to must be those of the preceding five emperors, Kaou-tsoo, Tae-tsung, Kaou-tsung, Chungtsung, and Juy-tsung.

The tablet says, "When the Duke Koh Tsze-e, secondary minister of state, and prince of Fun-yang, first conducted the military in the northern region, &c." In the Tang history there is a long biography of Koh Tsze-e, from which it may be seen that he was one of the principal historical personages of the period. According to this, he was born in Hwa-chow in 696, and was made Military Commissioner for So-fang, the Northern Region, in 755, on occasion of a

^{*} Tang shoo, Biographical section, vol. 45.

[†] Ibid., vol. 134. ‡ Ibid., vol. 45.

the state-revenue was expended in building religious houses, and casting brazen images; and it was only at the importunate solicitation of an influential minister, Teih Jin-kee, that she was dissuaded from going in state to visit a pagoda containing relies of Buddha, at the request of a foreign priest. When about to proceed, Teih Jin-kee cast himself on the ground before her, imploring her, as she cared for the national welfare, to desist; the desired effect was thus obtained.* This took place in 699, the year referred to on the tablet, and may show the great influence the Buddhists had then obtained at court. Shortly after this, we find a spirited memorial presented by Jin-kee, in which he examines in detail the various measures adopted by her majesty in reference to the Buddhists, and sets forth with a degree of freedom the national calamities which such a course was likely to produce. † In 705 the government of this princess was overthrown, and the Tang succession was resumed in the person of Chung-tsung.

The tablet again says, "In the year A. D. 713, some low fellows excited ridicule, and spread slanders in the western capital." Respecting the persecution here hinted at, history is entirely silent, as it is about almost everything connected with this sect. All we can assert is that there is nothing

improbable in the statement.

On the tablet we read, "The high-principled emperor Heuen-tsung caused the Prince of Ning and others, five princes in all, personally to visit the felicitous edifice." From the Tang history, again, we learn that the Prince of Ning was the elder brother of Heuen-tsung, and had given way to the latter in the imperial succession. He was promoted to the princedom of Ning in the year 716. Besides these two, the emperor Juy-tsung had four other sons, the Prince of Shin, the Prince of Ke, the Prince of See, and the Prince of Suy. When Heuen-tsung arrived at Chang-gan from Lo-yang, in 701, he appointed a residence for his five brothers in the Hing-king Way, and named it the Residence of the Five Princes. These six brothers appear to have lived together on the most amicable terms, the intercourse

^{*} Tung keen kang muh, vol. 42. † Tung shoo, Biographical section, vol. 39.

the founder. Born in 580, being the son of a governmentofficer under the declining Suy dynasty, he foresaw at an early age the downfall of the reigning house, and resolved to cast in his lot with the new aspirant. His attachment to his prince, and his qualifications as a statesman, soon procured his promotion. In 627, when Tae-tsung assumed the imperial dignity, Heuen-ling was made Duke of Hing, and in 631 he was promoted to the Dukedom of Wei. In 635, the year he is spoken of on the tablet, being that also of the demise of Kaou-tsoo, the father of the emperor, we find him receiving the confidential commission of an appointment to superintend the operations at the royal sepulchre; and at the same time, an acknowledgement of his merit in the additional title of Triumvirate Associate of the Rising State, and also an emolument equal to the revenue arising from thirteen hundred people. During an incursion of the Too-kuh-hwan Tartars the same year, Fang Heuen-ling is spoken of as holding audiences of great importance, on be-

half of the emperor.

The tablet states, "In the year A. D. 699, the Buddhists, gaining power, raised their voices in the eastern metropolis."
This apparently alludes to some act of intolerance practised by the Buddhists towards the Christians; but history makes no mention of this; an attentive consideration of the state of affairs, however, at that period, will show that such is by no means an improbable event. It should be borne in mind that this was during an interregnum in the Tang dynasty. On the death of the emperor Kaou-tsung, in 684, his empress, named Woo, seized the reins of government, and assumed the supreme power, with the appellation of Tsihteen. Fixing upon Lo-yang, the eastern capital, as the seat of government, she banished the rightful heir to the throne, and changed the name of the dynasty from Tang to Chow. This princess, in her early days, having submitted to the Buddhist tonsure, was admitted as an inmate of a nunnery, whence she was taken by Kaou-tsung to be his consort, and eventually empress. While residing in this religious establishment, her mental character and tastes probably received much of that bias which particularly marked her after progress. Once alone, and free to sway the imperial sceptre, her partiality for the Buddhists soon developed itself, in the liberal patronage she bestowed upon that class. Much of of Chang-gan, notices the existence of several of these foreign temples, and has been republished in the Yih tsun tsung shoo, Repository of Relics. It says, "On the southeast of Cross street is a Persian temple. This Persian temple was erected in the year 677, at the request of the Persian monarch Peih-loo-sze." Again, "On the northeast of Cross street is a Persian foreign temple; south from this is called the Keu-tih Way." Whether these last may have been Parsec or Christian edifices, is not easy to determine now, as it was customary at that time to apply the name of Persian to the temples of all the different sects which came to China

from that quarter.

The frequency and precision with which names of places and persons, together with dates, are employed in any document, have been considered a fair test of its genuineness; as experience has shown that cases of imposture are marked by extreme vagueness in this respect. This we might naturally expect, when we consider the intricate labyrinth which the mention of even a few historical incidents involves. Where, however, the facts so mentioned mutually support and throw light on each other, and where not only the open assertions, but the more latent inferences, preserve a general consistency together, and harmonize with known history, this must form a strong chain of presumptive evidence in favor of the document in question. Applying this test to the Nestorian monument, we find almost every line marked by some historical date, some geographical allusion, or the notice of some custom; and in drawing attention to a few of these, it will be observed that while there is no single quotation, which, taken as an isolated statement, might not perhaps be introduced by a modern hand, yet the harmonious sequence in a long train of facts is such as a forger would scarcely manage without tripping in some matter.

The tablet, speaking of the priest Alopun, says, "In the year A. D. 635, he arrived at Chang-gan; the Emperor sent his prime minister Duke Fang Heuen-ling, who, taking his subordinates to the west border, conducted his guest into the interior." On referring to the Tang shoo, History of the Tang Dynasty, "we find Fang Heuen-ling spoken of as one of the earliest and most attached servants of Tae-tsung.

Biographical section, vol. 16.

That the religious of the west, inclusive of the one now in question, had gained a prominent standing in the empire towards the middle of the eighth century, we know from the imperial edict of Heuen-sung, from which an extract is given in the Tsih foo yuen kwei, Great Tortoise of the National Archives, a book in 1000 volumes, published by imperial command, in the year 1012. It states* that, "In the year A. D. 746, in the 9th month, an edict was issued, saying, 'The religion of the Persian classics, having come from Syria, has now been long handed down and practised in China. When its votaries first erected their temples, they gave them their own national name. Henceforth, to enable others to trace their origin, let all the Persian temples belonging to the two capitals have their name changed to that of Syrian temples; and let this be complied with through all the provinces of the empire." The same extract is found in the & ke tsung yu, West-brook Collected-Sayings, published by Yaou Kwae, during the Sung dynasty, which also notices several other immigrations of foreign religions (not Buddhist) about the same period; one as early as A. D. 632.

Tseen, in his Inquiry into the Illustrious Religion, quotes the following passage from the Chang-gan che, Topography of Chang-gan, published by Min Kew, in the Sung dynasty. "On the northeast of the E-ning portal street, is a Persian foreign temple, which the emperor Tae-tsung caused to be erected for the Syrian foreign priest Alosze; in the year A. D. 639." Again, "To the east of the Le-tseen portal there is an ancient Persian temple; this is the Persian temple that Pei-loo-sze the Persian monarch requested to

have erected, in the year A. D. 677."

In a fragment of a work by Wei Shuh, of the Tang dynasty, the Leang king sin ke, New Record of the Two Capitals, there is also a notice of this last-mentioned temple. Only the third out of five volumes of this work is extant, and that incomplete; but what remains, being a description

* Vol. 51, page 20.

† Chang-gan is the ancient name of Se-gan.

The tablet gives Alopun. Perhaps Alosse may be a different form of the same name; or the author of the Topography may have fallen into an error in quoting from memory, which is a common occurrence; or, which is most likely, it is a typographical error.

monarchs, and was instrumental in sending many divines through the countries of Eastern Asia, with the special object of converting the people to the knowledge and faith of

Christianity.

Although we meet with indisputable traces of their persevering efforts in the countries of the east during the succeeding centuries, yet the circumstantial details left on record are meagre in the extreme. We have reason to believe, however, that a succession of these zealous men continued to travel eastward with this single purpose in view; and especially about the time indicated on the tablet, when Mohammedanism was making rapid strides throughout Western Asia, having just subdued the kingdom of Persia, might we naturally look for parties of these religionists, seeking refuge in distant lands, forced from their homes by the persecuting zeal of the Mussulmans. According to the testimony of Chinese scholars, the traces of the existence of these foreign sectaries have been wilfully excluded from the national histories, and, unless it be on the more durable mementos of the stone tablets, we can only get a clue to them in an indirect way. When, however, these indirect testimonies harmonize with and corroborate the tablets, there is little danger of being misled; and it may be noticed that where a discrepancy exists, it is customary with the natives to correct their histories by the tablets.

In the Appendices to the Tseen-yen Hall Tablets there is an extract from the Chung-yen sze pae, Tablet of the Chung-yen Monastery, composed by Shoo Yuen, yu, in the ninth century, as follows: "Among the miscellaneous foreigners who arrived, there were the Manicheans, the Ta tsin, 'Syrians,' and the worshippers of the Spirit of Heaven." The temples of these three classes of foreigners throughout the empire, are not equal in number to those of our Buddhists in one small district." A search through several works on ancient monuments and inscriptions has failed to discover this tablet, but there is no doubt of its existence, as it is quoted over and over again by other writers; the author of the inscription is a prominent character in history, having

been censor during the reign of Wan-tsung.

^{*} The tablet has There shin, The Spirit of Autumn; but the author who makes the extract says that the character tree is cut by mistake for heen, "heaven," in which he is doubtless correct.

it was their neighbor on the east; and the religion of the spirit of Heaven, prevailing in Syria, was their neighbor on the west; so that in the time of the Tang dynasty, the Roman Catholic religion being then flourishing in Syria, it was the craft of the foreign priests, to drag the three religions into combination, and invent the name of the Illustrious religion in order to exalt themselves; so that the Chinese, not understanding their origin and ramifications, might be blindly led to adopt their faith; thus verifying the saying of Chang-le, that they are only desirous of hearing something strange. Again the tablet says, 'In A. D. 638, the Greatly-virtuous Alopun, of the kingdom of Syria, came from afar, bringing the sacred books and images, which he presented at the chief capital.' If Alopun really came from Syria, then his religion was the Roman Catholic, without doubt; his sacred books should be the Bible and Gospels, which have been handed down in Europe, and his images those of Jesus on the cross; but we have not heard of these being in existence at that time; and when the Illustrious religion is said to stand side by side with the fire-spirit of the Persians, and to be merely a decoration of the schools of Buddhism, this is inexplicable."

Thus far, we have been particular in giving our authorities, that others, wishing to do so, may be able to verify the statements; for they are all taken from books within the reach of almost every person in China. Those who have access to more extensive stores of native literature, would no doubt be able to add a great accumulation of evidence. The above extracts will be sufficient, however, to show that there is but one voice among the Chinese as to the authenticity of this remarkable monument, for there is nothing on the other side of the question knowingly withheld. Besides this, if we consider carefully the subject of the inscription, it may still further aid us in forming a correct judgment.

According to history, the Nestorian schism took place in the beginning of the fifth century, and the members of this sect soon distinguished themselves by their zealous endeavors to propagate the faith through various countries. Their chief seminary, at Edessa in Mesopotamia, became famed as the centre of an extensive system of missionary influence. About the close of the same century, this was transferred to Nisibis, where it enjoyed the patronage of the Persian nal of Varieties, for the 13th year of Taou-kwang.) As Aloni and Verbiest, two Europeans, both adopt the tablet of the Illustrious religion as an evidence in their favor, when Yu See refers the origin of the cross to the tablet of the Illustrious religion, where it says, 'He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points,' this is not altogether inapplicable; but what is meant by appointing the cross is not well defined. Now when we examine the Arabian Geographical Classic, we become perfectly clear on the meaning of the cross. I have appended some quotations from this in the sequel. (Leisure sayings

of the old fisherman.)"

The Ying hwan che leo, Compendious Description of the World, the most recent native work on geography, has repeatedly called forth the commendations of foreigners, for the liberal and impartial manner in which the author treats his subject, and was reviewed at some length in some of the early numbers of the North-China Herald. In the 3rd volume, when describing Persia, the author takes occasion to introduce the subject of the Nestorian tablet. After discoursing on various ancient religions, supposed to have originated in Persia, he proceeds, "There is also the tablet recording the propagation of the Illustrious religion in China, as related by King-tsing, a priest of the Syrian church, A. D. 781." Again, "The tablet of the Illustrious religion is still more lying and extravagant; the Illustrious religion is the sect of Fire-worshippers. Where it says, 'A bright star announced the felicitous event,' 'He suspended the bright sun, to invade the chambers of darkness,' In clear day, he ascended to his true station, &c.,' the allusions are all to the solar fire. Again, where it says, 'He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points,' 'Once in seven days, they sacrifice, &c.,' it drags in the Roman Catholic religion. Where it speaks of 'The triune and mysterious in substance, the eternal true Lord Aloho (God),' we do not know who is meant, these being all conventional terms. But this is merely a dressing up of the dregs of Buddhism; it is not the Fire-sect; it is not the (Teen) Heaven-sect; it is not the Buddhist sect; in fine, there is no name by which to classify this religion. For the Persians, in worshipping the spirit of fire, adhere to their ancient usage; while Buddhism was practised in India.

a few lines of a quotation from the Kwei-sze luy kaou, Journal of Varieties for the 13th year of Taou Kwang, by Yu See, an inferior government officer. The author's remarks are of little critical value, and he shows great inaptitude in dealing with the subject in hand, although he appears tolerably correct in the detail of isolated facts. His chief aim is to show that the Christian religion is the natural offspring of Buddhism. He says, "Jesus was born in the 2nd year of the term Yuen-show of the emperor Gae Te of the Han dynasty. A bright star announced the glad tidings in the land of Judea. In the 2nd year of Keen-chung (781), of the Tang dynasty, King-tsing, the priest of the Syrian church, set up the tablet commemorating the promulgation of the Illustrious religion in China, whence we hear of the first erection of Syrian churches, in the 7th month of the 12th year of Chin-kwan (638). The tablet speaks of the 'Triune and mysterious in substance, the eternal true Lord God;' again, it denominates his mother the 'Triune, divided in nature, Illustrious and Honorable Messiah;'* and says that 'a virgin gave birth to the Holy One in Syria.' Again it speaks of 'Aloho (God),' 'Preserving their beards and shaving their crowns,' 'Seven times a day having worship and praise,' and 'Sacrificing once in seven days,' These things, like the Manichean observances, after the Tang dynasty, are never mentioned in the histories of the Sung and Yuen."

In a recent work, Kwo chaou she jin ching leo, Illustrations of the Poets of the Present Dynasty, by Chang Wei-ping, of Pwan-yu, the 47th volume of the 2nd section, which gives a brief abstract of the geography of foreign nations, has the following remarks on the 24th page, respecting the cross mentioned on the Tang tablet. "He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points; he moved the original spirit, and produced the two principles of nature (See the Tang tablet of the Propagation of the Illustrious religion). The tablet of the Illustrious religion, speaking of the cross, says, 'He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points.' (Jour-

^{*} The blunder in the interpretation of the inscription is unpardonable in a native author, unless we make very great allowance for the doctrinal difficulties connected with the subject.

being a name of the Imperial family during the Tang dynasty, there is also a possibility that the word king may have

been substituted for it,"*

In the Teen yih ko shoo muh, Catalogue Raisonné of the Library of the Fan Family at Ningpo, published by Yuen Yuen, the Governor of Che-keang, in 1809, there is a supplementary volume containing a list of the impressions of tablets in the establishment; on the 10th page we find there is a copy of the "Tablet commemorating the propagation of the Illustrious religion in China; composed by the priest King-tsing; written in the square character by Lew Sew-yen; set up in the 1st month of the year 781." On the 40th page, among the additions, there is again noted a copy of the "Tablet eulogizing the propagation of the Illustrious religion in China; composed by the priest King-tsing, and written by Lew Sew-yen; in the year 782." This last date

is doubtless a typographical error for 781.

The Hae kwo too che, Geography of the World, the joint production of the well-known Commissioner Lin, and Wei Yuen, an officer at court, one of the most popular works that have been published of late, first appeared in 1844, and soon passed through several editions. The 15th volume, which professes to be a descriptive account of Judea, is devoted almost exclusively to a discussion of the Christian religion, in which the author takes frequent occasion to exhibit the spirit of bitter animosity which he cherishes toward that religion. A large portion of the whole is allotted to the examination of the Syrian tablet, which is given almost entire; and most of what is contained in the Kin shih tsuy peen is here reproduced, the author thus, as it were, endorsing the expression of confidence in the existence and authenticity of the record; while not the most remote hint of suspicion to the contrary ever appears. Some additional extracts and remarks are also given on the same subject. We select

^{*} The idea which the author wishes to present here, is the identity of this sect with the Parsees or fire-worshippers; hence supposing the proper word for their name was ping, "Illumination from fire;" but as this character formed the name of one of the emperors of the Tang, according to Chinese custom, no one else was permitted to use it, and hence they substituted king, a word of similar import. This is one of those vain speculations, in which Chinese authors frequently indulge their imaginations, though there does not appear to be any evidence to support the supposition.

that and Mohammedanism, and in some respects Buddhism,

and some other religions also.

In conclusion, the author of the Kin shih tsuy peen gives his criticisms on the opinions of the various authors quoted; from which we extract a few sentences: "We have now examined the investigations which have been made regarding the source and spread of the Illustrious religion of this tablet. In the Tseen-ven Appendices it is said, 'Now Jesus the Lord of Heaven is worshipped by Europeans. Some say this is the ancient religion of (Ta-tsin) Syria.' On the tablet, there is the expression, 'He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points.' Now Roman Catholics' always raising the hand and making the sign of the cross, exactly agrees with the words of the tablet." Again, "The tablet speaks of 'The Most Virtuous Alopun from the country of Syria.' The Record of the Western Regions, given in the two histories of the Tang dynasty, in their accounts of the various kingdoms, state that (Fuh-lin) Judea is also named (Ta-tsin) Syria, but they do not give a single word respecting the introduction of the Illustrious religion into China." Again, "This tablet says 'The unchangeably chin, true, and invisible,' 'Veiling his true dignity,' 'In clear day, he ascended to his true station,' 'The true and unchangeable doctrine,' 'Observing the azure clouds, he bore the true sacred books.' Here is the word chin, true, used in profusion. Now when Mohammedan halls are built, they are called Houses of Worship; but why are they also called Temples of the True Religion? Now the Mohammedan religion is unquestionably an offshoot from the Illustrious religion; but while in some things they are similar, in others they differ. In consequence of the difficulty of understanding these religions, I have not been able to separate these things; and so have presented the various discussions on the subject, to afford the means of more extensive inquiry. As to the meaning of the word king. Illustrious, in the Illustrious religion of the tablet, there are two passages in the inscription, viz. 'A king, bright, suh, constellation, announced the felicitous event; and 'He suspended the king, bright, jih, sun, to invade the chambers of darkness.' There is a mutual agreement in meaning here with king sing, the bright star, and king kwang lin chaou, the bright glory reflecting its lustre; but ping

we trace back to the year of the birth of Jesus the Lord of Heaven, who is worshipped by Europeans, it ought to be in the period Kae-hwang (518-631) of the Suy dynasty. Some say this is the ancient religion of Syria; whether such be the case or not, I have not examined. At the end it says, Erected on the 7th day of the 1st month, being Ta-yaousan-wan day;' Ta-yaou-san-wan, which it speaks of, is an expression belonging to that religion. The fire-proof cloth is a cloth that can be cleansed by fire." It is strange that an author like this, who has shown himself so acute by his other works, and especially in matters of chronology, should have fallen into the monstrous error with regard to time. which he has exhibited in speaking of the period of the birth of Christ; and can only be accounted for by the haughty indifference with which natives of talent too frequently treat foreign religions, wilfully keeping themselves ignorant of facts which very little trouble might put them in possession of. Notwithstanding this egregious misconception, we imagine few will be inclined to reject his testimony as to the existence of the stone in question, which is all we have to do with at present.

At a later period, this author published another small work, called King keaou kaou, Inquiry into the Illustrious Religion, from which we extract, "In the time of Wan-leih (1573–1620),* when some people at Chang-gan were excavating the ground, they found a tablet of the Illustrious religion, dated 2nd year of Keen-chung (A. D. 781), of the Tang dynasty. The scholars and great statesmen, who had become disciples of the western teaching, congratulated each other on the fact of their religion having been propagated in China so early as the time of the Tang; but if they were asked what the Illustrious religion really was,

they could not tell."

After this comes an extract from the Taou koo tang Wan tseih, Literary Miscellany of Taou-koo Hall, by Hang Shetseuen, entitled Supplementary Inquiry into the Illustrious Religion. Without making particular mention of the discovery of the stone, the author proceeds, as if that were an admitted fact, to remark upon the religion of which it records the existence, and endeavors to draw a parallel between

^{*} This period is at least four years too early.

ing been imbedded in the earth for a thousand years, and now for the first time re-discovered, shows the natural succession of cause and effect throughout the three generations (i. e. past, present and future). This child, having been one of the pure unshaven ones, returned again; thus the 'pleasant habitation awaiting Chin Pin,' and 'Yang Ming remaining till the opening of the door' have been shown to be no idle sayings. See the Lew Yew-hoa Tseih, Miscellany of Lew Yew-hoa, of Pin-yang. The characters are in the first style of art, without the least defect. The foot and the ends have foreign characters on them, similar to those in the Buddhist classics." Here we see that the author of this extract, either intentionally or otherwise, ignores all allusion to the Christian religion on the tablet, bringing it forward as a link in the evidence in favor of the metempsychosis, supposing this child in a former state to have been one of the pure and disinterested priests commemorated in the tablet. But whatever may have been his theory on this point, his evidence is equally applicable to our purpose, in showing the existence and authenticity of the stone in question.

Further on is an extract from Tseen yen tang Kin shih wan po wei, The Tseen-yen Hall Appendices to the Metal and Stone Literature, by Tseen Ta-hin, Attendant on the Imperial Household in the time of Kea-king, a native of Keating. Speaking of this tablet, he says, "The Illustrious religion is the religion established by the people of Syria in the western regions," Again: "There is only this tablet that bears record of the Illustrious religion, and hands down any particulars respecting it; according to which, it commenced from the beginning of the Tang dynasty, when Alopun the Syrian priest, bearing the sacred books and images, arrived at Chang-gan. Tae-tsung ordered the authorities to build a Syrian church in the E-ning Way, to be governed by twenty-one priests. In the time of Kaou-tsung, Alopun was honored with the appointment of Great Conservator of Doctrine for the Preservation of the State, and orders were given as before for the erection of Illustrious churches in every province. The priests all shaved the crown of their heads, and preserved their beards. Seven times a day they had worship and praise; once in seven days they offered sacrifice. The image they honored was the Triune, mysterious in substance, eternal, true Lord Aloho (God). Now if therefore they have not investigated antiquity to discover the evidence of facts, by which they might put a stop to

the propagation of these depraved discourses."

The Kin shih tsuy peen, Collection of Metal and Stone Inscriptions, was published by Dr. Wang Gae, Great Statesman of the Banqueting-house, and Vice-president of the Board of Punishments, in 1805, when he had reached the advanced age of eighty-two. This work contains about a thousand inscriptions taken from existing monuments of various ages. from the Hea dynasty (B. C. 2200) down to the end of the Sung (A. D. 1264). The 102nd volume commences with the Syrian monument, the discussion of which occupies more than thirteen leaves. After giving the size of the stone, and the number of lines and characters on it, a transcript of the Chinese part on the face is given entire. From the critical remarks which succeed, we select the following, which is an extract from the Lae Tsae Kin shih kih kaou leo, Brief Examination of Stone and Metal Engravings, by Lae Tsae. "To the west of the city of Se-gan, where now stands the Kin-shing monastery, in the time of Tsung-ching (1628-1644)* of the Ming dynasty, Tsow Tsing-ching of Tsin-ling, Prefect of Se-gan, had a little boy named Hoa-seng, who was endowed with extraordinary acuteness at his birth; from the first he was able to walk, and soon began to join his hands in supplication to Buddha, which he continued to do almost without relaxation day and night; in a short time he was taken sick; with his eyes scarcely open, he peered out sideways laughing, and then went to his long home. The spot chosen by divination for his burial, was to the south of the Tsung-jin monastery in Chang-gan. When they had dug to the depth of several feet, the excavators came upon a stone, which happened to be the Tablet of the Propagation of the Illustrious Religion. + This tablet, hav-

There is an error here as to the date, which is at least three years too late.
† This incident is alluded to in a manifesto by Michel Boime, published in Kircher's China Illustrata, although he gives a somewhat different version of the story; he says, "The Governor of this place having been informed of the discovery of a marble so rare, and a menument so precious, pressed by a movement of curiosity, and perhaps also because he had lost a child the same day, proceeded to the spot, caused a book to be written to the praise of this Illustrious stone, and caused this treasure to be removed (after he had taken a faithful copy upon a similar marble), into the temple of the Tauist priests, which is distant about a mile from the walls of Singan-foo, the metropolis of the kingdom; in order to give to posterity an eternal memento, and to prevent future ages from being deprived of so great a boon."

priests, and 50,576 nuns; there was a censor appointed to take account of the priests and nuns belonging to the two capitals; if any of the priests or nuns remained out of their temples at night, it was noted in a register; they were not allowed to lodge among the people for more than three nights; if any did not return to their locality for nine years, their names were recorded in a book, and they were treated with great severity. Now the erection of a temple in the empire is a rare occurrence, but priests and nuns have be-

come innumerable."

In the Sze koo tseen shoo te yaou, Important Selections from the Books in the Imperial Library, a compilation drawn up by order of the emperor Kien-lung, and published about the year 1790, a work which occupied several years in the completion, a number of the chief ministers having been engaged on it, we read as follows, "'Summary of Western Learning, in one volume, with an Appendix in one chapter, on the Tang tablet of the Syrian church.' This tablet states that in the year A. D. 639, Alopun, of the kingdom of Syria, brought his sacred books and images from that distant part, and presented them at the chief capital, when orders were given by the emperor to build a Syrian church in the E-ning Way, to be governed by twenty-one priests, &c." The editors then go on to quote a number of historical incidents, which show a great amount of research into the national antiquities, with a view to identify the religion spoken of in the tablet, and which in some instances are anything but flattering to the adherents of that religion. These we shall notice on a subsequent page. At the conclusion of their remarks on the subject, they say, "Since Julius Aloni, in writing this book, has adduced the Tang tablet as a testimony in his favor, this still further removes any doubt as to his being of the Heen* religion. But no one has yet traced out by proofs from antiquity the origin of its propagation, and hence it has spread all over the breadth of the land. From the time of Wan-leih (1573-1620), scholars and great statesmen have in general limited their discourses to the doctrine of the heart, and merely issued works of a metaphysical character, on subjects which only embrace the life of the individual;

^{*} This is the name of an ancient religion in China, which the writers endeavor to identify with the religion of the tablet, and also with the Roman Catholic religion.

aminer: the High Statesman of the Sacred rites, the Imperially-conferred-purple-gown Chief Presbyter and Priest This stone tablet was examined and set up by the Priest Hing-tung.]† These words are interspersed with the foreign characters; which characters are all turned towards the left, and are untranslatable. I take the 'Triune and mysterious in substance, the eternal true Lord Aloho' of the tablet, to be the lord of that religion. 'The most virtuous Alopun, from the country of Syria, arrived at Changgan in the year A. D. 635; and a Syrian church was built in the capital, in the E-ning Way, to be governed by twenty-one priests, in A. D. 638.' This shows that the Roman Catholic religion was introduced into China from the commencement of the Tang dynasty, and up to the present time it has become disseminated through the whole empire. I read in the Account of the Western Regions, that Fuh-lin, the ancient Ta-tsin, borders on the Western sea, distant from the capital of China forty thousand le. It carries on a commerce with Siam, Cochin-china, and the Five Indies. In the flourishing period of Kae-yuen (713-742) there was a rush of Western foreigners, who came from a distance of ten thousand le, eagerly presented the sacred books of their various nations, which were received into the Palace for the Translation of Classics, and thereupon the religions of foreign regions became practised in China. Then the number of their priests could be estimated by the number of temples erected. At that time there were 5,358 temples, 75,024

* This book and several other of the authorities quoted here, give this name Ye-cha, but Kircher gives Ye-le, and in a very carefully executed impression from the stone, which we have recently procured in Shanghae, a manuscript note at the end, written many years ago, gives it Ye-le, which we presume to be the more correct.

[†] The line here enclosed in brackets is not given at all in Kircher's copy, but, as it exactly coincides with the manuscript note referred to above, there is every reason to believe it correct. It will appear out of order here for the Assistant Examiner to be placed before the Chief Examiner, but this may be explained by the fact that the Chinese immediately follows the Syriac, and is intended doubtless to be read in the same order, i. e. from left to right; but the Chinese copyists, not being aware of this fact, would take the right hand line for the commencement, in the usual way. This is not a groundless conjecture, for it is well known that in the Manchu and Mongolian books printed in China, where there is occasion to introduce Chinese quotations, these are printed contrary to the usual Chinese form, the lines succeeding each other from left to right, in accommodation to the Tartar mode.

Se-gan foo." The 6th volume, which contains a long catalogue of uncommon forms of characters on inscriptions, again notices the Syrian tablet, as containing — instead of tsan "effulgence," in the sentence, "the bright gems emitted their effulgence." The preceding character was used in former times with this same meaning, though it has long been abandoned in the ordinary literature of the day. Examples of this kind are exceedingly numerous in Chinese, but it is only scholars of considerable standing who have sufficient knowledge of the koo wan (ancient literature) to enable them to apply such words with due effect, and this it is which commands the admiration of the literati to a

great extent.

The Kwan chung Kin shih ke, Record of the Metal and Stone inscriptions of Shen-si, published by Pieh Yuen of Chin-yang, President of the Board of War, about A. D. 1780, on the 8th page of the 4th volume, has a notice of the "Tablet commemorating the propagation of the Syrian Illustrious religion in China; erected in the 1st month of the year 781; the inscriptions composed by the priest Kingtsing; written in the square character by Lew Sew-yen, with a heading; in the Tsung-shing monastery, at Se-ganfoo." After about half a page of digression on the geography of "Ta-tsin" (which we have translated Syria) of the tablet, it proceeds to identify the first church of this sect in China, with a church recorded in the Topography of Chang-gan, to have been built in the E-ning Way, A. D. 639, the priest of which is named A-lo-sze, which the writer remarks is merely an error of the author of the Topography, and should be the same as A-lo-pun of the tablet.

In the Kin shih luh poo, Supplementary Record of Metal and Stone Inscriptions, published by Ye Yih-paou Kewlae, a native of Kwan-shan, A. D. 1790, are the following remarks on this stone: "This tablet states that 'the tablet eulogizing the propagation of the Illustrious religion in China, with the preface, was composed by King-tsing, a priest of the Syrian church; again: 'The tablet was erected in the 2nd year of Keen-chung (A. D. 781) on the 7th day of 1st month, being Sunday. Written by Lew Sew-yen, Secretary to the Court Council, formerly Military Superintendent for Tae-chow.' At the foot and on the edges are foreign characters. At the foot is inscribed 'Assistant Ex-

But although no foreigner may have seen it of late, we have abundant evidence that it has been seen, read, examined, and criticised by natives in no way prejudiced in favor of the religion it professes to make known, fully competent and thoroughly disposed to detect any indication of fraud, did such exist; but although they have made fac-similes, although they have printed, published and republished it again and again, although they speak of the extravagant boasting of its contents, although they charge the authors with hypocrisy and deceit, and take occasion from it to launch forth invectives not only against the sect it commemorates, but also against the Christian religion in every form, and more generally against all foreign religions whatever, yet we never find the least trace of suspicion as to the existence of the stone, or the veracity of the date it bears.

For the present we pass over the testimony to be derived from various publications in the Chinese language, which have been issued both by foreign missionaries and by their native converts; although considering that they have thrown the weight of their character into the scale, that they were men not likely to be deceived in the matter, and that, in the promulgation of their own faith, they have endeavored to give force to their arguments by illustrations drawn from this monument, in their appeals to a people who had the best possible means of judging of its authenticity, and who, under the supposition of forgery, most assuredly would not have failed to bring home to them with merited retribution the consequences of the imposture they were thus using their influence to establish: -in the face of these facts, we think their evidence cannot be lightly set aside, under the assumption that they were interested parties. We will however cite another class of witnesses, who must be entirely free from any imputation of this kind.

The Kin shih wan tize ke, Record of the Characters of Metal and Stone Inscriptions, published by Koo Yen-woo, a native of Kwan-shan, at the commencement of the present dynasty, and republished in Shanghae in 1824, on the 25th page of the 4th vol., notices the "Tablet commemorating the propagation of the Illustrious religion in China; composed by the priest King-tsing; written in the square character, by Lew Sew-yen; set up in the 1st month of the year 781; now in the Kin-shing monastery, outside the city of

"In the year of the Greeks one thousand and ninety-two, the Lord Jazedbuzid, Priest and Vicar-episcopal of Cumdan the royal city, son of the enlightened Mailas, Priest of Balach a city of Turkestan, set up this tablet, whereon is inscribed the Dispensation of our Redeemer, and the preaching of the apostolic missionaries to the king of China."

After this, in Chinese characters is "The Priest Lingpaou." Then follows:

Adam meschamschono Bar Jidbuzad Curapiskupo. Mar Sargis Kasiso, Vcurapiskupo. Sabar Jesua Kasiso. Gabriel Kasiso Varcodiakun, Vrisch medintho de Cumdan vdasrag.

"Adam the Deacon, son of Jazedbuzid, Vicar-episcopal. The Lord Sergius, Priest and Vicar-episcopal. Sabar Jesus, Priest.

Gabriel, Priest, Archdeacon, and Ecclesiarch of Cumdan and Sarag."

The following subscription is appended in Chinese:

"Assistant Examiner: the High Statesman of the Sacred rites, the Imperially-conferred-purple-gown Chief Presbyter and Priest Ye-le."

On the left hand edge are the Syriac names of sixty-seven

priests, and sixty-one are given in Chinese.

In summing up the evidence pro and con for the genuineness of this tablet, Professor Salisbury remarks "that there is no intrinsic improbability in the account of the discovery; but, inasmuch as it is not known that any one has pretended to have seen the original monument during the last two centuries, and as the state of preservation of the inscription, and the condition of the tablet, might prove an important source of inference as to its being genuine, it is essential to a full belief in the story, that the monument be seen by some disinterested person at the present day." It makes very little for the argument one way or the other, that we have no notice of its having been seen by a foreigner for two centuries, considering we have never heard of any foreigner having visited the locality during the period stated. Should a visit to the spot indicated prove a failure in discovering its existence, suspicion would in that case be well founded.

He shed a vivifying influence through the whole realm of nature, And all outer nations took him for example.

The true doctrine how expansive! Its responses are minute; How difficult to name it! To elucidate the three in one.

The sovereign has the power to act! While the ministers record; We raise this noble monument! To the praise of great felicity.

This was erected in the 2nd year of Keen-chung, of the Tang dynasty (A. D. 781), on the 7th day of 1st month, being Sunday. Written by Lew Sew-yen, Secretary to Council, formerly Military Superintendent for Tae-chow; while the Bishop Ning-shoo had the charge of the congregations of the Illustrious in the east.

The above translation has been made with the assistance of two fac-simile impressions taken from the stone. The two lines of Syriac, of which the following is a transcript, are in the Estrangelo character, and run down the right and left sides of the Chinese respectively:

Adam Kasiso Vicur-apiskupo va Papasi de Zinstan. Beyumi aba dabahotha Mar Hana Jesua katholika patriarchis.

Kircher translates this as follows:

"Adam, Deacon, Vicar-episcopal and Pope of China.

In the time of the Father of Fathers, the Lord John Joshua,
the Universal Patriarch."

Having been unable to procure an impression of the Syriac at the foot, as it appears to be on a different facing of the stone, we give the transcript here on the authority of Kircher:

Besanath alf utisaain vtarten diavanoie. Mor Jibuzad Kasiso Vcurapiskupo de Cumdan medinah malcutho bar nihh napso Milis Kasiso dmen Balehh medintho Tahhurstan Akim Lucho hono Papa dictabon beh medabarnutho dpharukan Vcaruzuthon dabhain daluat malche dizinio.

Palaces of concord, large and light, Covered the length and breadth of the land.

The true doctrine was clearly announced, Overseers of the church were appointed in due form; The people enjoyed happiness and peace, While all creatures were exempt from calamity and distress.

When Heuen-tsung commenced his sacred career, He applied himself to the cultivation of truth and rectitude; His imperial tablets shot forth their effulgence, And the celestial writings mutually reflected their splendors.

The imperial domain was rich and luxuriant, While the whole land rendered exalted homage; Every business was flourishing throughout, And the people all enjoyed prosperity.

Then came Suh-tsung, who commenced anew, And celestial dignity marked the imperial movements; Sacred as the moon's unsullied expanse, While felicity was wafted like nocturnal gales.

Happiness reverted to the imperial household, The autumnal influences were long removed; Ebullitions were allayed, and risings suppressed, And thus our dynasty was firmly built up.

Tae-tsung the filial and just Combined in virtue with heaven and earth; By his liberal bequests the living were satisfied, And property formed the channel of imparting succor.

By fragrant mementos he rewarded the meritorious, With benevolence he dispensed his donations; The solar concave appeared in dignity, And the lunar retreat was decorated to extreme.

When Keen-chung succeeded to the throne, He began by the cultivation of intelligent virtue; His military vigilance extended to the four seas, And his accomplished purity influenced all lands.

His light penetrated the secrecies of men, And to him the diversities of objects were seen as in a mirror;

(E-sze) his attendant on his travels; although he was a private chamberlain, he assumed no distinction on the march; he was as claws and teeth to the duke, and in rousing the military he was as ears and eyes; he distributed the wealth conferred upon him, not accumulating treasure for his private use; he made offerings of the jewelry which had been given by imperial favor, he spread out a golden carpet for devotion; now he repaired the old churches, anon he increased the number of religious establishments; he honored and decorated the various edifices, till they resembled the plumage of the pheasant in its flight; moreover, practising the discipline of the Illustrious religion, he distributed his riches in deeds of benevolence; every year he assembled those in the sacred office from four churches, and respectfully engaged them for fifty days in purification and preparation; the naked came and were clothed; the sick were attended to and restored; the dead were buried in repose; even among the most pure and self-denying of the Buddhists, such excellence was never heard of; the white-clad members of the Illustrious congregation, now considering these men, have desired to engrave a broad tablet, in order to set forth a eulogy of their magnanimous deeds.

ODE.

The true Lord is without origin, Profound, invisible, and unchangeable; With power and capacity to perfect and transform, He raised up the earth and established the heavens.

Divided in nature, he entered the world, To save and to help without bounds; The sun arose, and darkness was dispelled, All bearing witness to his true original.

The glorious and resplendent, accomplished emperor, Whose principles embraced those of preceding monarchs, Taking advantage of the occasion, suppressed turbulence; Heaven was spread out and the earth was enlarged.

When the pure, bright Illustrious religion
Was introduced to our Tang dynasty,
The Scriptures were translated, and churches built,
And the vessel set in motion for the living and the dead;
Every kind of blessing was then obtained,
And all the kingdoms enjoyed a state of peace.

When Kaou-tsung succeeded to his ancestral estate, He rebuilt the edifices of purity; bedewing favors were deep as the eastern sen. Nothing is beyond the range of right principle, and what is permissible may be identified; nothing is beyond the power of the holy man, and that which is practicable may be related.

The accomplished and enlightened emperor Suh-tsung rebuilt the Illustrious churches in Ling-woo and four other places; great benefits were conferred, and felicity began to increase; great munificence

was displayed, and the imperial state became established.

The accomplished and military emperor Tae-tsung magnified the sacred succession, and honored the latent principle of nature; always, on the incarnation-day, he bestowed celestial incense; and ordered the performance of a service of merit; he distributed of the imperial visheds, in order to shed a glory on the Illustrious congregation. Heaven is munificent in the dissemination of blessings, whereby the benefits of life are extended; the holy man embodies the original principle of virtue, whence he is able to counteract noxious influences.

Our sacred and sagelike, accomplished and military emperor Keenchung appointed the eight branches of government, according to which he advanced or degraded the intelligent and dull; he opened up the nine categories, by means of which he renovated the illustrious decrees; his transforming influence pervaded the most abstruse principles, while openness of heart distinguished his devotions. Thus, by correct and enlarged purity of principle, and undeviating consistency in sympathy with others; by extended commiseration, rescuing multitudes from misery, while disseminating blessings on all around, the cultivation of our doctrine gained a grand basis, and by gradual advances its influence was diffused. If the winds and rains are seasonable, the world will be at rest; men will be guided by principle, inferior objects will be pure; the living will be at ease, and the dead will rejoice; the thoughts will produce their appropriate response, the affections will be free, and the eyes will be sincere; such is the laudable condition which we of the Illustrious religion are laboring to attain.

Our great benefactor, the Imperially-conferred-purple-gown priest E-sze, titular Great Statesman of the Banqueting-house, Associated Secondary Military Commissioner for the Northern Region, and Examination-Palace Overseer, was naturally mild and graciously disposed; his mind susceptible of sound doctrine, he was diligent in the performance; from the distant city of Rajagriha he came to visit China; his principles more lofty than those of the three dynasties, his practice was perfect in every department; at first he applied himself to duties pertaining to the palace, eventually his name was inscribed on the military roll. When the Duke Koh Tsze-e, secondary minister of state, and prince of Fun-yang, at first conducted the military in the northern region, the emperor Suh-tsung made him

tideless waters. The country produces fire-proof cloth, life-restoring incense, bright moon-pearls, and night-lustre gems. Brigands and robbers are unknown, but the people enjoy happiness and peace. None but illustrious laws prevail; none but the virtuous are raised to sovereign power. The land is broad and ample, and its literary

productions are perspicuous and clear.

The emperor Kaou-tsung respectfully succeeded his ancestor, and was still more beneficent towards the institution of truth. In every province, he caused Illustrious churches to be erected, and ratified the honor conferred upon Alopun; making him the great conservator of doctrine for the preservation of the state. While this doctrine pervaded every channel, the state became enriched, and tranquility abounded. Every city was full of churches, and the royal family enjoyed lustre and happiness. In the year A. D. 699, the Buddhists, gaining power, raised their voices in the eastern metropolis; in the year A. D. 713, some low fellows excited ridicule, and spread slanders in the western capital. At that time there was the chief priest Lo-han, the Greatiy-virtuous Kie-leih, and others of noble estate from the golden regions, lofty minded priests, having abandoned all worldly interests; who unitedly maintained the grand principles, and preserved them entire to the end.

The high-principled emperor Heuen-tsung caused the Prince of Ning and others, five princes in all, personally to visit the felicitous edifice; he established the place of worship; he restored the consecrated timbers which had been temporarily thrown down; and reerected the sacred stones which for a time had been desecrated.

In 742, orders were given to the great general Kaou Leih-sze, to send the five sacred portraits (of the Tang emperors) and have them placed in the church, and a gift of a hundred pieces of silk accompanied these pictures of intelligence. Although the dragon's beard was then remote, their bows and swords were still within reach; while the solar horns sent forth their rays, the celestial visages seemed close at hand.

In 744, the priest Keih-ho in the kingdom of Syria, looking towards the star (of China), was attracted by its transforming influence, and observing the sun (i. e. emperor), came to pay court to the most honorable. The emperor commanded the priest Lo-han, the priest Poo-lun, and others, seven in all, together with the Greatlyvirtuous Keih-ho, to perform a service of merit in the Hing-king palace. Thereupon the emperor composed mottos for the sides of the church, and the tablets were graced with the royal inscriptions; the accumulated gems emitted their effulgence, while their sparkling brightness vied with the ruby clouds; the transcripts of intelligence suspended in the void shot forth their rays as reflected by the sun; the bountiful gifts exceeded the height of the southern hills; the

37

manifestly displayed, by accommodation it is named the Illustrious Religion. Now without holy men, principles cannot become expanded; without principles, holy men cannot become magnified; but with holy men and right principles, united as the two parts of a

signet, the world becomes civilized and enlightened.

In the time of the accomplished emperor Tae-tsung, the illustrious and magnificent founder of the dynasty, among the enlightened and holy men who arrived, was the Most-virtuous Alopun, from the country of Syria. Observing the azure clouds, he bore the true sacred books; beholding the direction of the winds, he braved difficulties and dangers. In the year A. D. 635, he arrived at Changgan; the Emperor sent his prime minister, Duke Fang Heuen-ling; who, carrying the official staff to the west border, conducted his guest into the interior; the sacred books were translated in the imperial library, the sovereign investigated the subject in his private apartments; when becoming deeply impressed with the rectitude and truth of the religion, he gave special orders for its dissemination. In the seventh month of the year A. D. 638, the following

imperial proclamation was issued:

"Right principles have no invariable name, holy men have no invariable station; instruction is established in accordance with the locality, with the object of benefiting the people at large. The Greatly-virtuous Alopun, of the kingdom of Syria, has brought his sacred books and images from that distant part, and has presented them at our chief capital. Having examined the principles of this religion, we find them to be purely excellent and natural; investigating its originating source, we find it has taken its rise from the establishment of important truths; its ritual is free from perplexing expressions, its principles will survive when the frame-work is forgot; it is beneficial to all creatures, it is advantageous to mankind. Let it be published throughout the empire, and let the proper authority build a Syrian church in the capital in the E-ning Way, which shall be governed by twenty-one priests. When the virtue of the Chow dynasty declined, the rider on the azure ox ascended to the west; the principles of the great Tang becoming resplendent, the Illustrious breezes have come to fan the east."

Orders were then issued to the authorities to have a true portrait of the emperor taken; when it was transferred to the wall of the church, the dazzling splendor of the celestial visage irradiated the Illustrious portals. The sacred traces emitted a felicitous influence, and shed a perpetual splendor over the holy precincts. According to the Illustrated Memoir of the Western Regions, and the historical books of the Han and Wei dynasties, the kingdom of Syria reaches south to the Coral Sea; on the north it joins the Gem Mountains; on the west it extends towards the borders of the immortals and the flowery forests; on the east it lies open to the violent winds and

rial objects as the source of their faith, others reduced all to vacancy, even to the annihilation of the two primeval principles; some sought to call down blessings by prayers and supplications, while others by an assumption of excellence held themselves up as superior to their fellows; their intellects and thoughts continually wavering, their minds and affections incessantly on the move, they never obtained their vast desires, but being exhausted and distressed they revolved in their own heated atmosphere; till by an accumulation of obscurity they lost their path, and after long groping in darkness they were unable to return. Thereupon, our Trinity being divided in nature, the illustrious and honorable Messiah, veiling his true dignity, appeared in the world as a man; angelic powers promulgated the glad tidings, a virgin gave birth to the Holy One in Syria; a bright star announced the felicitous event, and Persians observing the splendor came to present tribute; the ancient dispensation, as declared by the twenty-four holy men, was then fulfilled, and he laid down great principles for the government of families and kingdoms; he established the new religion of the silent operation of the pure spirit of the Triune, he rendered virtue subservient to direct faith; he fixed the extent of the eight boundaries, thus completing the truth and freeing it from dross; he opened the gate of the three constant principles, introducing life and destroying death; he suspended the bright sun to invade the chambers of darkness, and the falsehoods of the devil were thereupon defeated; he set in motion the vessel of mercy by which to ascend to the bright mansions, whereupon rational beings were then released; having thus completed the manifestation of his power, in clear day he ascended to his true station. Twenty-seven sacred books have been left, which disseminate intelligence by unfolding the original transforming principles. By the rule for admission, it is the custom to apply the water of baptism, to wash away all superficial show, and to cleanse and purify the neophytes. As a seal, they hold the cross, whose influence is reflected in every direction, uniting all without distinction. As they strike the wood, the fame of their benevolence is diffused abroad; worshiping towards the east, they hasten on the way to life and glory; they preserve the beard to symbolize their outward actions, they shave the crown to indicate the absence of inward affections; they do not keep slaves, but put noble and mean all on an equality; they do not amass wealth, but cast all their property into the common stock; they fast, in order to perfect themselves by self-inspection; they submit to restraints, in order to strengthen themselves by silent watchfulness; seven times a day they have worship and praise, for the benefit of the living and the dead; once in seven days they sacrifice, to cleanse the heart and return to purity.

It is difficult to find a name to express the excellence of the true and unchangeable doctrine; but as its meritorious operations are not surprising that scepticism was on the alert, and that, from various motives, ingenuity was exercised to detect some deception, or to hit upon some means of nullifying the testimony in favor of this discovery. Among the most talented opponents were Bishop Horne, Spizelius, LaCroze, and Voltaire. Most writers on China since their time have noticed this monument, at greater or less length. It is to be regretted, however, that from the conflicting statements which have been set forth, some of our greatest church historians have been left in doubt on the subject, and the question having been recently revived among the savans in America, E. E. Salisbury, Professor of Arabic and Sanskrit in Yale College, U. S., has issued a paper commencing with the startling statement of his opinion "that the Nestorian monument is now generally regarded by the learned as a forgery." This may form our apology for a few remarks, which we shall preface with a translation of this famous inscription, differing in some respects from those that have been hitherto given.

Tablet eulogizing the propagation of the Illustrious Religion in China, with a preface; composed by King-tsing, a priest of the Syrian Church.

Behold the unchangeably true and invisible, who existed through all eternity without origin; the far-seeing perfect intelligence, whose mysterious existence is everlasting; operating on primordial substance he created the universe, being more excellent than all holy intelligences, inasmuch as he is the source of all that is honorable. This is our eternal true lord God, triune and mysterious in substance. He appointed the cross as the means for determining the four cardinal points, he moved the original spirit, and produced the two principles of nature; the sombre void was changed, and heaven and earth were opened out; the sun and moon revolved, and day and night commenced; having perfected all inferior objects, he then made the first man; upon him he bestowed an excellent disposition, giving him in charge the government of all created beings; man, acting out the original principles of his nature, was pure and unostentatious; his unsullied and expansive mind was free from the least inordinate desire; until Satan introduced the seeds of falsehood, to deteriorate his purity of principle; the opening thus commenced in his virtue gradually enlarged, and by this crevice in his nature was obscured and rendered vicious; hence three hundred and sixty-five sects followed each other in continuous track, inventing every species of doctrinal complexity; while some pointed to mateby favor of a Christian Mandarin, named Phillip, who was going into that quarter. The same fathers obtained (by favor and authority of this same Mandarin) the privilege of erecting a house, and building a Church for practising the exercises of our religion, in the Metropolitan city of Se-gan foo; where God, by his infinite mercy, has been pleased to exhibit a memento so authentic of the submission of this country to his law, in order thus to employ it anew, and by that means facilitate the worship of his name, and the introduction of his gospel. I was permitted to be one of the first to inhabit this dwelling; in which I considered myself fortunate, because I had the opportunity of going to see the stone; which I went to visit as soon as I arrived, without caring for anything else. I have seen and read it, re-read and considered it, at leisure and in quietness; in fine, I examined it so attentively, that I could not restrain my admiration of its antiquity, and my astonishment at seeing the characters, so visible, so clean, and so well engraved, that one might have said they were but just formed. There are several Chinese characters on the thickness, containing the names of several Bishops and Priests of that period; there are also some other characters, which, up to the present time, no one has been able to explain; for they are neither Greek nor Hebrew; and which nevertheless (in my opinion) signify nothing else than the same names; so that these different characters are used merely to make known to travellers and foreigners, that which the commonly used characters make known to the people of China. After this, taking a journey by Cochin, I arrived at Cranganor, which is the residence of the Archbishop of the coast, where I consulted the Father Anthony Fernandez of our company on this matter; because he is very clever respecting the letters that have been used since the time of the Apostle Thomas, and he told me they were Syriac characters; for they were most in use at that time." Martin Martini, Michel Boime, and others of the time, followed with testimony to the same The high coloring, however, which some of that fraternity had been in the habit of giving to matters of which they treated, raised a natural suspicion among many against every statement which emanated from them. That these suspicions were in many instances, if not unfounded, at least allowed to reach an undue magnitude, subsequent events have clearly proved. Under such circumstances it is

Herald it will be accessible to but very few indeed of scholars in the West; and there would appear to be a peculiar propriety in its being farther made known through the medium of the Journal from whose pages was derived the immediate incitement to its composition. If we are not mistaken, it will go far to settle for ever the question which it discusses; and to establish the authenticity of a document of high interest for the history of the extension of Christianity through Asia in early times. The learned world will be grateful to Mr. Wylie for his able assistance in putting an end to the doubts which have long been felt respecting this document, and will also, we trust, thank us for helping to extend the knowledge of his investigations and their results.

In the original essay, the Chinese characters are given, along with a transcription of them into Roman letters, for all names, titles, and brief sentences, cited from the inscription. These characters are necessarily omitted in the reprint, but the author's transcription is

faithfully presented.

Dr. Bridgman's letter accompanying the essay farther says, "A few days ago" (the letter is dated March 10, 1856), "I met an Italian, a Romanist, who had seen and examined the stone, while detained in the neighborhood of Si-ngan fu"; but it does not speak of any information derived from him with regard to it. An impression of the Syriac inscription at the foot of the Chinese is wanting on both the copies sent to the Society; it would be interesting to know whether the former is, as conjectured by Mr. Wylie, upon a different facing of the stone; and also, of course, to have a new and accurate fac-simile impression of it likewise.

More than two centuries have now passed away, since the Jesuit fathers announced to the world the discovery of a marble tablet in 1625, recording the establishment of the Christian religion in China during the Tang dynasty (7th and 8th centuries). This was said to have been discovered by the Chinese, while digging for the foundation of a house, at a village not far distant from the city of Se-gan. The first foreigner who saw it after its exhumation was Alvarez Semedo, who gives the following account in his Relatione della Grande Monarchia della Cina.* "Three years afterwards, in the year 1628, some fathers entered this province

^{*} Not having the original of this work at hand, we quote from Kircher's China Illustrata.

THE NESTORIAN TABLET OF SE-GAN FOO.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE BY THE COMMITTEE OF PUBLICATION.

"The genuineness of the so-called Nestorian Monument of Singan-Fu" was made the subject of a communication to the American Oriental Society by Prof. E. E. Salisbury, offered October 14, 1852, and published in the Society's Journal, Vol. III. pp. 401 etc. Farther light respecting the monument seeming highly desirable, the Society subsequently passed a resolution, requesting the American Missionaries in China to take such measures as might be found practicable, for having the stone revisited and described, and for obtaining new fac-similes of the whole inscription. This resolution was communicated to the various Missions through Dr. Bridgman, and, as was hoped, has not failed to produce valuable results. Two lithographic impressions from the face of the monument itself have been sent from China, and deposited in the Library of the Society: a letter of Dr. McCartee, accompanying one of them, has been given on a former page of the Journal (see above, p. 260). And during the month of August of this year, Prof. Salisbury received from Dr. Bridgman, at Shanghai, a copy of an essay on the subject of the genuineness of the monument, with a letter of which the following is a part, "A copy of your paper on the Syrian monument I placed in the hands of my friend Mr. A. Wylie, and expressed a hope that he, being interested in the question, would follow it up; he has done so, and published what he wrote in the North China Herald; and herewith I send you a copy thereof."

This essay has seemed to be so very valuable and interesting a contribution to our knowledge of the subject, to discuss so thoroughly and with such a fullness of learning, and to place in so clear a light, the evidences in favor of the genuineness of the monument derivable from a study of its characters and its contents, that we have thought we could not do those interested in the matter a greater service than by republishing it entire. In the North China

The state of the s

ARTICLE II.

ON

THE NESTORIAN TABLET

OF

SE-GAN FOO.

BY

Mn. A. WYLIE.

(Reprinted from the North China Herald.)

SUPPLEMENTARY BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTICE.

Japanese Botany, being a Facsimile of a Japanese Book, with Introductory Notes and Translations. J. B. Lippincott & Co., Philadelphia. 72 pp. sm. 4to.

This publication came to hand too late to be noticed in the proper place, but is one of so rare interest that it must not be passed with-

out at least an announcement.

It may be regarded as the first fruits of the late U. States Expedition to Japan, under Commodore Perry. The editor, Dr. Joseph Wilson, Jr., U. S. N., a member of that Expedition, has taken the pains to have reproduced, by the anastatic process of lithography, a botanical work brought by him from Japan, accompanying it with a specimen-translation, and some introductory and explanatory notes. The original work consists of drawings of various flowering plants, which are executed with much taste and truth to nature, and not without regard to perspective, accompanied with descriptions in which the peculiarities of the leaves, flowers and stalks, and the times of blooming, etc., are noted. The reproduction appears to be admirably exact, so that in examining it one seems to have under his eye a genuine Japanese book. The translation, too, has evidently been made with much care, though the translator modestly observes that "it is not supposed that the proper meaning of the elliptical sentences has always been found." Dr. Wilson refers to aid received from native dictionaries, as well as Medhurst's Vocabulary, and a Comparative Vocabulary of the Chinese, Corean and Japanese Languages published at Batavia in 1835.

The work before us is a very valuable illustration of what the anastatic process is capable of in the way of multiplying copies of works which could not be printed among us, or perhaps even in Europe, at present, in the ordinary mode, for want of proper types. In itself considered, too, it will interest the student of natural science who is curious to learn how far the Japanese have advanced in botanical knowledge. But, as regards this latter point, it is to be regretted that Dr. Wilson did not translate the whole. Perhaps he will yet do so, before the stones upon which the transfers were made

E. E. S.

are appropriated to other uses.

pieces almost worthy to be called epics; at least such was my impression, when I read the book more than twenty years ago. How. I should love to take hold of some of these works, if I had not more important matters on hand!

10. From a Letter from Rev. F. Mason, Missionary in Burmah.

Newton Centre, Nov. 30, 1854.

The great divisions of the Buddhist Scriptures in Burmah are the same as in Nepal, as described in your Journal, Vol. i. No. 3, page 275, ff.

The Abhidharma, with us, is a treatise on ontology. The specimen given by you from Burnouf, on page 287, is not from the Abhidharma itself, but from the commentary. I have never read the exact words you give, but they may probably exist in some of the books.

The sacred books exist: (1) in the Pali text; (2) in Pali with a Burmese translation word for word throughout, like the translations we find appended to the modern editions of the Eton Latin Grammar, as: "est there is, pro for, habeo I have;" (3) in commentary on the text, consisting of stories, manifestly of a later date than the text itself, and written by a different hand, or by other hands. I think there have been several, just as we have various commentators on the Bible.

When I left Burmah, I put up the palm-leaf volumes of the Abhidharma No. 2. as above, with a few fragments of No. 3. The Pali text No. 1. I tried in vain to obtain. It is exceedingly difficult to obtain any but the most common books, mainly stories, in Burmah; and as great numbers of palm-leaf books were destroyed and scattered by the . . . English soldiers during the last war, they will be still more scarce hereafter.

11. From a Letter from Prof. C. Lassen, of Bonn.

Bonn, 20th January, 1855.

The kind interest you have always taken in my labors, makes me hope that you will be glad to learn that I have finished the Ist Part of the IIId Volume of my Indische Alterthumskunde, the printing of which I hope soon to be able to begin.

YOL. Y.

9. From a Letter from Rev. Dr. E. Smith, of Beirut.

Bhamdûn, Oct. 12, 1854.

I was made very sad when I read the . . . sentence in which you intimate an apprehension that I do not feel an interest in your Society. That you should entertain such an apprehension, is not surprising, nor do I blame you for it. But I am pained that you should think of me that which is directly the opposite of what is true, without my having in my power to correct your impressions. A missionary's calling exposes him to an endless variety of distractions, which, when he becomes an elder member of a Mission, accumulate to an extent which a stranger can hardly conceive of. In the midst of all this, I am endeavoring to carry on a literary work which requires the best energies of a mind free from distraction, in the vigor of life.* Were I to judge from the past, I might well despair of aiding you at all; and yet I am unwilling to give up the hope.

I am sorry to say that last winter our Society† did nothing. The Greeks and Roman Catholics succeeded in exciting a sectarian spirit against it, and each established a rival Society, which drew off our members who belonged to those communions. My own health, too, was more than usually delicate, and forbade my devoting any of my strength to it. In these circumstances we have published no other

Number of our Transactions.

I have had for my nearest neighbor, during the summer, Dr. A. Sprenger, Principal of the Calcutta Medreseh, and Secretary of the Oriental Society of Bengal. He is engaged in making a descriptive catalogue of all the Persian, Arabic and Hindustani books he can find, and making a bibliographical dictionary. While here, he has examined more than four hundred MSS, in our libraries, including that of our Society. Among them he found a considerable number of rare and curious interest; and some of special interest in reference to the life of Mohammed, which he is also engaged in writing. Some of these MSS, ought to be edited. One, some six hundred years old, which I found in the hands of a Druze, is a most careful philological examination of pieces of ante-islamic poetry, out of the second or third century of the Mohammedan era. Another is a collection of ante-islamic traditions, filled with poetry, and some of the

It is well known that Dr. Smith is in the midst of the great work of retranslating the Scriptures into Arabic.

[†] See this Journal, vol. iii. p. 477.

8. From a Letter from Rev. E. Webb, of Dindigal, India.

Dindigal, October 12, 1854.

The American missionaries in Madura, having received from your Society several Numbers of its valuable Journal, have requested me to express their thanks to you for the same, and to assure you of the interest they take in the objects of the Society, and of their entire confidence in its plan and direction.

It is our desire to render what assistance we may be able. We are none of us, however, familiarly acquainted with more than one of the languages of India, viz. that of the people among whom we labor; and respecting that you have already received much valuable information through our highly esteemed fellow laborer Rev. H. R.

Hoisington.

For a few months past, I have been much interested in some researches I am making into the construction of the poetry most frequently used in the Tamil drama. It differs essentially from those forms in which the classical literature of the people is composed. These are all explained, and definite rules for their construction are given, in the native and European grammars of the language. But the lyric poetry, as it may be called, though often extremely rythmical, and elaborate in its construction, has received no attention from Tamil grammarians, and all that can be ascertained about it must be by a careful analysis of the compositions themselves; for though there are many learned men at the present time who compose them, they are utterly unable to explain the principles or rules of their own compositions. The entire Ramayanam is translated into this kind of poetry, and in this form is sung every where through the country, accompanied at all times with music and dancing.

My attention has also been turned to the vocal music of the Tamil

people.

I have been led to examine these subjects from the apparent unsuitableness of European tunes to the Tamil taste, and the inapproprinteness of European metres to the Tamil language, for until recently English tunes and metres have been adopted and exclusively used by all Protestant missionaries in the religious worship of their Tamil converts.

A selection of hymns in native metres, set to native tunes, has recently been made and printed by us, which are learned and sung with great pleasure by our Christians. I hope it may be in my power ere long to give you the result of the investigations I have made on these subjects.

Acti of brade battonic T

I know of no work which particularly describes the region from Ooshnoo to Mosûl, except Ainsworth's Travels in Asia Minor, which is full of mistakes. I have not, however, spoken very particularly of that part of my route which he passed over. He did not see Keli-Shin, and I was not on his track at all West of the Herir hills. Rev. Dr. Perkins's route was the same as mine but part of one day, yet his Journal, as published by the Society, was so full that in some points he may seem to discuss the same topics. I have endeavored to make my description of Ravendůz supplementary to his.

I believe the route from Arbeel to Herir has never been travelled by any Frank but myself, and it may be that the full report of the relations of the Kurds and Chaldeans of Sheikh Sana will not be

devoid of interest.

The table of the Pashas who have governed Mosûl for the last two hundred and seventy years has perhaps more of local than of general interest. About one hundred and fifty years ago, the son of 'Abd el-Jelil, a Nestorian, became a Moslem, and rose to the dignity of Pasha. The table will show with what difficulty the office was kept in his family till the time of the resolute, but bloody, Mohammed Pasha—a Turk—who subdued the rival parties in the city, and restored order.

In a small box are enclosed five coins—one of Alexander the Great, one of Philip,* a Pehlavian, a Cufic, and a singular coin which I cannot make out. The long beard seems to be dressed up as carefully as those of the Nineveh sculptures: if within your power, will you please give me a version of the inscription; and also a translation of the Pehlavian, which has a head like Shapur's, and an altar between two priests? With the coins is a reddish Assyrian cylinder, having a brief inscription upon it; the figure upon the stone is very rare.

I should be glad to present these to the Society, but if they have no collection of coins, or stones, you will please accept them yourself.

^{*} The Seleucide Philip, son of Antiochus VIII.

[†] The coin which Dr. Lobdell did not make out, belongs to a Parthian king named Bolagaeus, as appears by examining it with the aid of Pellerin and Eckhel. It bears the date AMT, or 464, to be computed from the era of the Greeks, making it equivalent to A. D. 158. The Pehlvi coin was rightly conjectured by Dr. L. to be the coin of a Sapor. It belongs to Sapor I, and has the legends usually found upon his coins: see, for example, Mordimann in Zeitsch. d. Deutsch. Morgeni, Gesellschaft, Bd. viii. p. 36. The Küfic coin belongs to the Ommeide Khälif Wälid Ben 'Abd-el-Malek, as the date, A. H. 90, shows; it was struck at Wasit. The legends on it are the same as on similar coins, as described, for example, by Marsden in his Numismata Orientalia, Pt. i.

[‡] Described above, p. 192.

his chariot, the siege and capture of a town with sable inhabitants (thought by Mr. L. to be Abyssinians), the ornamented pavements, the immense brick wall, fourteen feet thick, around the palace, and the subterranean construction of the apartments, which forcibly suggests the idea of its correspondence with the scrdab, or modern summer retreat, of the people of Mosûl and Baghdad.

It was the intention of Mr. Loftus to proceed to Susa the coming winter, but his great success here—and, I may add, at Nimroud, where several statues, one of them bearing a peculiar cuneiform inscription said to glorify Semiramis, have recently been exhumed—

will probably induce him to remain.

The Assyrian Society and the British Museum present now the aspect of rivals, instead of mutual assistants, though it is hardly to be doubted that all the objects discovered by both will eventually

form one great collection.

As I have seen in some American papers and periodicals the statement that Col. Rawlinson professes to have found evidence, in his researches, affecting the authenticity of the Hebrew Scriptures, I take the liberty of transcribing a few words from a letter which I have

recently received from him.

He says: "The Assyrian and Babylonian records confirm in the most satisfactory manner all the genuine portions of Scripture history, while at the same time they afford positive evidence that the book of Daniel is not genuine—that, in fact, it should have been left by the Christian Church in the Hagiographa, where, as you know, it has been ever held by the Jews."

I leave you to infer his opinion about the question what are the genuine portions of Scripture. Are none of the Hagiographa parts of the Jewish Canon! I suspect the antiquarian has trespassed too

far on the province of the Biblical critic.*

Mosúl, Nov. 2, 1854.

Accompanying this letter you will find an article which you are at liberty to use as you may think will be most for the interests of the Oriental Society. As you suggested, in your letter of Nov. 23, 1853, I have given "special prominence" to those parts of the tour, or Observations,† in which I have not been anticipated "by any one of our countrymen." I feel that the paper has assumed an undue length, but it will be easy for the Comm. of Publication to draw a pencil over those parts of it which it may seem to them undesirable to have published.

 It is lately reported that Rawlinson has found the name of Belshazzar in one of his cuneiform inscriptions.

^{† &}quot;Observations on a ride through Kûrdistân, from Mosûl to the Monument of Kel-i-Shin," is the title of Dr. Lobdell's communication. Extracts from it will appear in our next Number.

If Prof. Gibbs has shown you my letter to him of January last,* you are aware that the excavations in Koyunjik were prosecuted vigorously, and with much success, at the beginning of the year. It is hardly necessary that I should enter into further details in regard to the palace discovered by Col. Rawlinson's agent, as he has given some account of the discoveries to the Trustees of the British Museum, and a few extracts have appeared in the first Report of the Excavation Fund of the Assyrian Society, which, I doubt not, you have seen. Mr. Wm. Kennett Loftus, the superintendent of excavations for that Society, has this morning shown me some sixty drawings which he will send by to-day's post, through Lord Stratford de Redcliffe, to London. They embrace views of most of the discoveries made by him at and near Werka, an immense mound about three days below Baghdad, formerly supposed, by Rawlinson and some others, to be the site of Ur of the Chaldees. A cylinder recently found by Mr. Taylor, British Vice-Consul at Busrah, at Mugeir, a mound twenty-five miles West of the Euphrates, having on it the name Hur, has shaken the faith of these antiquarians in regard to the site of Ur; and it seems, indeed, to upset many previous speculations about the ruins in that quarter. It remains to be seen, however, whether the cylinder has been correctly interpreted!

The walls of little cones, the sarcophagi and their contents, rings, beads, neck and head ornaments, the bricks inscribed with cuneiform characters, the Egyptian relies from a mound called Phara, and the views of the ruins, are of great interest, as the mounds in that part of Babylonia have been, as yet, but very imperfectly explored. While some of the remains are evidently Sassanian, Mr. Loftus is confident of the very extreme antiquity of others. That some of the inscriptions are of the most primitive Babylonian character, is plain to any one who has compared the writings of different eras.

The remainder of the drawings, which I have mentioned, are mostly photographic and crayon sketches of slabs in the palace of Asr-akh-pul, the son of Esarhaddon, at Koyunjik, which were not copied by the artist of the British Museum, in consequence of sick-

ness which necessitated his return to England.

Mr. Loftus has found several more rooms in what is now called the North palace, and a few of the present drawings represent the character of the sculptures on their walls. A few of the slabs are most exquisitely finished; the figures have a bolder relief than any hitherto discovered. The good and evil geniuses, the monstrous combinations of man, eagle and lion, at the doorways, are not less interesting than the lion-hunt in boats, the chase of ibexes and wild asses by archers and spearmen on high-spirited steeds, and by the king in

^{*} Published in this Journal, vol. iv. no. 2, pp. 472, ff.

rials consist chiefly of inscribed tablets in stone and in clay, bronzes, bricks and sculptured monuments of various kinds, all illustrating the remarkable advancement of that ancient civilization. It is confidently believed that the whole history of Assyria may be restored to a very early period, and that discoveries of the most important character will be made in connection with the literature and science of the Assyrian people."

Oroomiah, March 8, 1855.

Dr. Wright, whose missionary duties lie more directly with the Mohammedans of Persia than my own, is prosecuting inquiries respecting the Royal College at Tehran, and Persian schools there and elsewhere; and he will be happy to write you on these subjects, when he shall have obtained the information desired. Such matters are not to be accomplished with rail-road, nor electro-magnetic, speed, in this truly oriental land.

7. From Letters from the late Rev. H. Lobdell, M.D., of Mosûl.

Mosůl, Mesopotamia, Sept. 25, 1854.

It gives me pleasure to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of May 20th, informing me of my election as a corresponding member of the Oriental Society. It will be my endeavor to furnish for your Journal an occasional communication.

I have but just finished an account of my tour in Kurdistân, viâ Arbeel, to the monument of Kel-i-sheen, which will probably be longer in reaching you than this letter, as it will go from Constantinople by ship. from a letter which I recently received from Mr. Loftus, of whose labors, among the Assyrian and Babylonian remains, you are of course always glad to hear. The letter is dated Mosul, June 10, 1854.

"I have just returned from an expedition to Lower Chaldea, where I have again visited Warks and the 'Ur of the Chaldees,' as well as various adjoining mounds. The results are interesting, as records have been obtained as early as the time of Abraham, or about 2000 B. C.

"This evening, I float down the Tigris to Ninroud, where we have just discovered the first inscribed and sculptured slabs of the palace of Phul of Scripture—the husband of the once almost fabulous Semiramis.

"Enclosed I send a circular of the Society, which may be interesting to you and your circle."

I enclose the circular which Mr. Loftus sent to me, and which possibly may not reach you from any other source.

[From this circular of the Society for Exploring the Ruins of Assyria and Babylonia, we make the following extracts.

COMM. OF PUBL.

"It would appear, from a statement by Mr. Layard, that, since the publication of his second work, remains have been found of a much earlier period than any previously taken from the Assyrian mounds. From one inscription it would even seem that temples existed of the 19th or 20th century before Christ, ascending almost to the earliest known Egyptian period. The annals of those Assyrian kings who are mentioned in Scripture, and who are closely connected with the Jewish people, have not yet been fully completed, and the chronicles of the wars with Samaria and of the destruction of that city are, as yet, unfortunately not entire, although reference to them has been met with on several fragments.

"Besides the ruins of Assyria, enormous remains exist in Babylonia which have scarcely been visited by Europeans, and which there is every reason to conclude contain objects of the very highest interest.

"A photographist will accompany the Expedition, and will take copies of all objects of interest discovered. In England facsimiles of all the drawings and inscriptions will be issued, as often as they come to hand, together with explanatory letter-press, the publication of which Mr. Layard has kindly undertaken to superintend.

"It will be less the object of the Expedition to obtain bulky sculptures than to collect materials for completing the history of Assyria and Babylonia, especially as connected with Scripture. These mateand influence. The Bakeles followed the Shekanies, and arg a grade behind them; and after them come the Pangwes, who have but recently appeared. They are a very numerous and warlike people, independent and fearless, and a terror to their more civilized neighbors, with whom they are beginning to mingle. They are larger in stature, and better formed, and of a shade lighter complexion, than the other tribes. They wear but little clothing, but cover their persons with a preparation of powdered red-wood and oil, which gives them the appearance of red men at a short distance. They manufacture, from their native ore, beautiful and well-tempered instruments, such as knives, daggers, or two-edged swords, and spears; and in war they use them with great dexterity. They also use the cross-bow and poisoned arrows. They are cannibals, but their appetite for human flesh and blood is only gratified on prisoners taken or killed in war, and persons accused of some crime. Their ideas of spiritual things nearly resemble those of the other tribes, being exceedingly gross and indefinite. Superstition seems to be a part of their mental constitution. They manufacture and wear on their persons numerous charms, or fetiches, as a protection from evil, and to secure them earthly good; but none of them have any reference to the soul, or to a future state.

Respecting their [the Pangwes] language, I can state nothing definite. It differs materially from the other dialects used nearer the sea, but, having a knowledge of them, we think it may be acquired readily. At no distant day I hope to forward you specimens of it.

6. From Letters from Rev. Dr. J. Perkins, of Orumiah.

Oroomiah, March 9, 1854.

You may be aware that, a few years ago, the king of Persia built a college, the edifices costing about one hundred thousand dollars, to be furnished with European professors. Of the six or seven German professors connected with it, two have recently died-another loss to the cause of science and civilization in Persia. This college has made a very hopeful beginning in the work of introducing European light into this country. While the practical sciences occupy a prominent place in its course of study, it also does much for the advancement of literature and general intelligence.

Oroomiah, July 28, 1854.

In the paucity of other matter to communicate, and to assure you of my continued interest in your Society, I send you below an extract VOL. V.

partly to open the way for inquiring of you whether there is, probably, in your Society (A. O. S.), or in any other in our country, as the Smithsonian Institution, or elsewhere, any such interest in such a thing as a Zulu grammar, as would induce them to publish one at their own expense, if properly prepared and offered?

Umsunduzi, Sept. 12, 1854.

I wrote you last May, among other things, in respect to a circular from the S. Afr. Aux. Bible Soc., naming, I think, the queries then proposed. After examining the subject, and discussing it with my brethren of the Mission, and of the Zulu Grammar and Dictionary Commission, our conclusion was that the plan of a uniform version of the Scriptures for the Kafir and Zulu dialects is not, at present,

practicable.

In comparing a late edition of the Psalms in Kafir with our late edition in Zulu, I found, on an average, one principal or notional word to a verse in Kafir, not known in Zulu, or else known in a sense quite different from what it has in Kafir, as appears from the translation. I also found, further, that about half the essential or notional words actually used in the two editions—the Kafir and Zulu—differ, while the other half are the same: that is, when the best words are taken in the two dialects, respectively, about one half are naturally the same, and the other half different.

I see by the last papers that a meeting—"Alphabetical Conference"—has been held in England, at the house of Chev. Bunsen, to "devise a uniform system of expressing foreign alphabets by Roman characters." I shall be interested to know the result. A uniform version can never be had in the Zulu and Kafir, without a uniform alphabet; but the latter may be had, and would be of much service, without the former.

5. From a Letter from Rev. A. Bushnell, in Equatorial Africa.

Něngeněnge Olombo Mpolo, July 26, 1854.

I have commenced a new station on a small island at the junction of the Nkāmā and Bākwĕ, the two head-streams of the Gaboon, about seventy-five miles from its mouth. There is but one town, with a small population, on the island; but within ten miles there are more than thirty towns, inhabited by people of three different tribes, viz: Shēkanies, Bakĕlĕs and Pangwes. These tribes have descended from the interior one after another, as they are named. The Shĕkanies followed the Mpongwes, and rank next to them in civilization

of smaller dimensions than the other, and is of a dark grey color. It faces in the same direction. Dr. Grant supposed there were inscriptions only on the South-East face of the stone, but it is my impression that they existed originally on both sides, and that they have been defaced from the northern side by the ravages of time. I thought that I discovered traces of the letters on that side, though, as I passed the spot at the early dawn, I ought not to be very confident. The stone appeared to be of a softer texture than the one on the top of the mountain. These ancient relies carried me back in thought thousands of years, and I felt an inexpressible desire to read the lesson of history written upon them. An impression of Kelesheen was taken two years ago by a learned Russian gentleman, Mr. Khanikoff of Tiflis, now acting Consul at Tabreez, on porous paper. This is now in the hands of Col. Rawlinson of Bagdad, who, it is hoped, will be able to decipher its meaning.

P. S.-Kel is used in Koordish for a stone set up on end, as in a

grave-yard. Hence Kel-e-Sheen means a green upright stone.

4. From Letters from Rev. L. Grout, S. Africa.

Umsunduzi, May 27, 1854.

From the S. African Auxiliary to the British and Foreign Bible Society I have just received (as member of the Zulu Grammar and Dictionary Commission), through the local Government, a copy of the following queries respecting the difference between the Kafir and Zulu dialects, etc., with a view to their ascertaining what means can be devised for assisting the missionaries of different Societies in the work of translating and circulating the Scriptures among the natives of S. Africa.

"1. Is there that degree of affinity between the Kafir and Zulu, as would warrant the hope that one standard version of the Scriptures, with occasional dialectic variations, either to be introduced into the text of two separate editions (one for the Kafirs and the other for the Zulus), or to be inserted in the margin of one edition, would meet both languages or dialects?"

The preparation of a Zulu grammar, which I still have in hand, progresses slowly, partly from sickness of late in my family, and partly from want of assurance, as yet, from Government, that they will provide the means for printing both that and the dictionary.

But I design to go on with the preparation of the grammar to the best of my time and ability; and I make the above remarks ing" over the paper a brush made of strips of felt, rolled into the form of a surgeon's roller (or bandage), ground smooth on one end. Finally, a polish is given to the surface by striking on the ink with a ball resembling those formerly used by printers in the U. States and elsewhere, before the invention of elastic rollers. The operation is done very skillfully, and is decidedly the most beautiful method of printing practised by the Chinese. The stone used is of a very fine grain and homogeneous structure, and gives out a clear ringing sound upon being struck. The color of those that I have seen has been, of some, greyish, and of others, almost black.

Lest by any accident the copies I sent last month should fail to

reach the Society, I take the opportunity to send duplicates.

It will be seen that the Chinese have only taken an impression of such parts [of the monument] as were in Chinese characters, omitting the cross, etc., and also the names of the priests, etc., mentioned by Kircher. There are however two rows of Syriac letters in the copies sent, one on each side of the Chinese, and near the bottom; which being in a line with the Chinese name of the author of the inscription and of the copyist, could not be omitted, and were therefore preserved.* It is also to be observed that in the Chinese Repository it is said that there are 26 characters in a column, which is an evident typographical error for 62.

3. From a Letter from Rev. A. H. Wright, M.D., of Orumiah.

Oroomiah, July 22, 1854.

A few days ago, I returned from a journey across the mountains of Koordistan.

On the way, both in going and returning, I visited that celebrated pillar, with cuneiform inscriptions, on the top of the mountain between Ooshnu and Ravandooz. The stone is about 2 yards long, 2 feet wide, and 1 foot thick, and is of a dark green color. Hence its name in Koordish, Kel-e-Sheen, green stone. It stands in an upright position, one end being inserted in a large square stone, partly in the ground, and cut for the purpose. It faces E. S. E. Both sides are covered with inscriptions, the most distinct being on the southern face. I counted 40 lines on one side, and 42 on the other. My Koordish guides would not allow me to examine this interesting relic of a former age but a few minutes, apprehending an attack of robbers, who infest that locality.

I visited another stone with similar inscriptions near the village of Sidek, five or six hours South-West of the one above named. It is

^{*} These Syriac lines, containing the date, are precisely the same as given by Kircher on the sides of his plate. The characters are evidently Estrangbelo.

period long anterior to the invasion of the Mongols who established the Yuen dynasty (A. D. 1280). Thirdly, its antiquity, the religious terms employed, the Syriac letters, and the admissions of the Jesuit missionaries themselves, forbid the idea that it was invented by them, and indeed it is hard to see how any one would believe them guilty of a fraud to commemorate the labors of a sect who had anticipated them in China, and had been condemned and anathematized by the Roman Church as heretical. I cannot therefore resist the conviction that the monument in question does really exist in the province of Shen-st, and that it is the work of the Nestorian or Syrian Christians, whose churches and converts still survived in no inconsiderable numbers in the time of the celebrated Venetian traveller Marco Polo.

Accompanying the impression from the Syrian monument, I sent also a copy of another and more modern specimen of Chinese lithography, viz., a sheet containing a Chinese native tract, which by a species of pious fraud is attributed to the philosopher Lau-tsz', the founder of the sect of Tau or Reason. This is one of the most celebrated religious tracts of the Chinese. To cause it to be printed, distributed, or read to or by the people, is considered an act of great merit, capable of atoning for a multitude of sins. The accompanying impression is a fac-simile of the hand-writing of the famous Commissioner Lin, who was so energetic in his endeavors to put down the opium-traffic, and in his warlike measures against the English. It is a very beautiful specimen of fine writing, and was engraved from the original in the following manner. The paper having been laid upon the stone (previously sized with a thin coat of paste), with the blank side toward the stone and the letters uppermost, was then smoothly and evenly applied by means of a hard brush or broom (made of the fibres of the Chinese hemp-palm, Chamerops Excelsa). When dry and firmly attached, the letters were carefully cut into the stone by a seal-engraver, the operation differing from the ordinary method in the letters being sunk instead of raised, and not reversed. This allows the engraver to follow very exactly the strokes, etc., of the writer, executing in fact a very accurate fac-simile. In printing from the stone, the paper slightly damped is first laid upon the stone, and smoothly applied by means of the hard brush. The operator then taking a strip of felt in one hand, and a small wooden hammer in the other, goes over the stone, applying the felt to each part successively, and hammering upon it briskly all the time. The paper is thus driven into the depressions or sunken strokes of the characters, while in the blank spaces it presents a smooth and even surface. The ink (commonly called in the U. States India-ink) being rubbed with water to the proper consistence, the operater next proceeds to apply it by drawing or "wip-

2. From a Letter from Rev. D. B. McCartee, M. D., of Ningpo.

Ningpo, Feb. 6, 1854.

I had the honor, about a fortnight since, to forward to your care, by ship, an impression of the "so-called Syrian monument" referred to by my respected friend the Rev. E. C. Bridgman, D. D., and concerning which certain inquiries were addressed last year by the Oriental Society to missionaries in China. The existence of such a monument will not, I am sure, be doubted, when one knows that it is well known to Chinese amateurs in calligraphy, and that copies, or rather impressions taken from the stone by a species of lithography peculiar to the Chinese, are in ordinary times easily to be obtained from dealers in copy-books, which are always printed by this method of lithography. Owing to the disturbed state of the empire at the present time, and the distance of Si-ngan-fu in the province of Shen-sī, from this place, the visits of these travelling dealers in inscriptions, etc., have been almost entirely prevented, and it was only after some search and negotiation that I at length succeeded in obtaining two copies from a Chinese gentleman, who had sent them to a shop in this city, for the purpose of having them cut into strips and mounted for binding into books. This has caused the long delay in my answer to the circular of the Society addressed to the Mission of which I am a member.

On the question as to whether the monument referred to is really to be attributed to the Syrian or Nestorian Christians who had missions in China at the time when the inscription professes to have been executed, viz. A. D. 685, very much has been already written, as may be seen by reference to the Chinese Repository, vol. xiv, page 201, and the Land of Sinim, by the Rev. W. M. Lowrie, pp. 37-42. I shall therefore be very brief in what I have to communicate on the subject. In the first place, the impressions sold (one of which I sent), and the testimony of the Chinese, would show conclusively that such a monument is now in existence, even were we to reject the testimony of the early Roman Catholic missionaries, quoted by Kircher and others. Secondly, it was evidently not got up by the Chinese, as they would have no object in trying to impose it as a monument of antiquity upon others; moreover, it uses terms and speaks of doctrines with which even those Chinese who are familiar with the inscription as a specimen of fine writing are unacquainted, and which they cannot explain; and finally, the Syriac characters which compose part of the inscription seem conclusive. These characters are mistaken by the Chinese for Man-chu or Mongolian characters, which indeed they somewhat resemble (being written vertically, instead of horizontally), although the monument dates back to a

Not only the father and paternal grandfather of the deceased king are said to have been kings of Sidon, but also his maternal grandfather. What was the order of succession between them, or indeed where they are to be placed at all, we have not the means of deciding; but the ancient form of the characters and the purity of the language of the inscription (as far as it can be made out with certainty), with the fact that Sidon appears to have been ruled by native independent sovereigns (though their independence may be questioned), induce us to place it before the conquest of Alexander,

namely as early as the middle of the 4th century B. C.

It however by no means follows that because we are now without the means of answering these questions definitively, we shall always remain so. The fondness of the Phœnicians for commemorating in this durable manner public and private events, the fact that no systematic exploration of the sites of towns in Phœnicia and most of her colonies has ever been undertaken, the extensive ruins that are known to exist (above all those of Tyre herself), and the number of educated men now in northern Africa and the Levant, lead naturally to the hope and expectation that many more extensive and more interesting monuments of this people will ere long be discovered than have yet been brought to light.

VIII. EXTRACTS FROM CORRESPONDENCE.

1. From a Letter from Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Orumiah.

Seir, Oroomiah, Jan. 16, 1854.

Since writing you, I have made a pretty thorough examination of the Jews' language, as spoken in this vicinity, and have now the materials for drawing up a paper on that subject. When you see Dr. Robinson, will you be good enough to consult with him as to the question whether it is worth while to give the details of that language, or only a few outlines of the grammar.

When I shall get time to attend to the subject again is quite uncertain. Our missionary labors demand most of our strength and thoughts. naturally caused the Phoenician language to be regarded as differing much more widely from the Hebrew than it does in reality; but the inscription before us confirms the opinion held since the discovery of that of Marseilles, that the Phoenician language in its purity, besides a slight tinge of Aramaism, differs but little from the Biblical Hebrew. This is a gratifying discovery for two reasons: first, because it facilitates the correct reading and interpretation of the inscriptions themselves, and secondly because each document in it that is brought to light will prove a direct contribution towards elucidating the lan-

guage of the Hebrew Scriptures.

The forms of the letters in the Sidon inscription and that of Marseilles are very similar, the principal difference being that, as a general rule, the characters of the former have a slightly more rounded and consequently less antique contour. The 'Ain, however, of the former is always a complete circle; whereas in the latter it has the modern characteristic of an opening at the top. In the Sidon inscription the Yod runs through many different forms, from the oldest to the most recent; and the forms of 7 and 7, to which is sometimes to be added which in that of Marseilles are accurately distinguished) are utterly confounded together, so that there is no distinction that holds between them, either in the form of the head, the degree of inclination from the perpendicular, or the length of the stem. Our copies of it are certainly much better executed than those of the generality of the inscriptions we possess; yet under the circumstances nothing but a plaster cast or other fac-simile can be regarded as a satisfactory basis for a final interpretation of the monument.

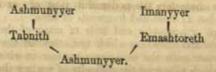
The orthography of this as of other Phoenician inscriptions is characterized by a more systematic omission of the matres lectionis

than is found even in the oldest Hebrew writings.

As for the language of the inscription it bears marks of antiquity which are obsolescent in the Biblical Hebrew: such as the use in plain prose of primitive words which in Hebrew are found not at all or only as poetical archaisms; the retention of the fem. afformative n, of the \gamma of the plural of verbs, and perhaps of the \subseteq preformative of the Hiphil; the non-employment of the definite article in repeated instances where it would be used in Hebrew, &c.

As a contribution to Phœnician history we have the names of the defunct ruler and his ancestors to the third degree both on the pater-

nal and maternal side, thus:



CONCLUSION.

The reader who has perused the foregoing attempt at explaining the inscription will scarcely need to be reminded that in it some things are certain, others doubtful, and others little better than guesses. Error and imperfection are the usual fate of first essays of the sort; but a beginning must be made, and it will be comparatively easy for minds coming fresh to the subject and applied directly to the doubtful passages to make a nearer approximation to the truth.

Dr. Movers (Art. Phonizien in Ersch. u. Gruber's Encyklopædie, p. 425) divides Phœnician inscriptions, as respects the forms of their letters, their language, and their age, into two classes. The older, to which belong those of Marseilles, Carthage, Citium, Malta, Athens, and most of the coins of Phœnicia and the neighboring regions to the north, exhibit the old Phœnician type of letters, a regular orthography, and a language still free from foreign influences and later degeneracies. These advantages, especially the graphic ones, are found in their greatest completeness in the inscription of Marseilles, which is demonstrably the oldest, belonging to the first half of the 4th century B. C., while the monuments of northern Phœnicia and Cilicia belong to the latter half of this century. The second class of monuments proceed from times and regions where the culture and the language of the Phœnicians were considerably affected by foreign elements: these are the so-called Numidian inscriptions, and also those found in Sardinia and in other Liby-Phœnician countries, together with the Punic coins, which belong to the Liby-Phœnician cities on the coast of Africa, to the islands of Cossura and Ivica, and to several Turditanian cities. In this latter class both the form of the letters and the orthography are equally degenerate. There is hardly one of these numerous inscriptions that does not present doubtful characters, and the guttural and vowel letters are confounded in them in a manner without parallel in the Shemitish languages.

It is to the former class, as was to be expected, that our inscription belongs. Its interest is greater both on this account and as being the first inscription properly so-called that has yet been found in Phoenicia proper, which had previously furnished only some coins and an inscribed gem. It is also the longest inscription hitherto discovered, that of Marseilles—which approaches it the nearest in the form of its characters, the purity of its language, and its extent—consisting of but 21 lines and fragments of lines.

The corrupt orthography and style of many of the inscriptions found in Africa and elsewhere which first attracted the attention of scholars, together with the inaccurate manner in which they were copied, and which enhanced the difficulty of reading them correctly,

22

אים מיבו שר which is in the dwelling of our deity, i. e. which is situated in the land of Phornicia, the peculiar dwelling-place of the national god לכלה The MS, copy has מיבור זים בינולה. The MS, copy has מיבור מיב

ממלח עצטח to stretch out (or stretching out) the fortresses, i. e.

enabling us to erect the long line of fortifications.

אש פכלת which I have made, i. e. reared, constructed. So the MS. copy. The form of the third letter in the lithograph edition would allow us to read מש בעלח of which thou art Lord; but the sense is not so good.

and they have constructed them, the plur, used impersonally, i. q. they have been constructed. 750 to cover with boards, and

hence to build, construct.

Line 20.

סילים on, upon. Either a fam. sing. or plur. abstract noun, lit. top, used as a preposition. See on עילים 1.12.

ban border, boundary, Heb. bans .

to set firm, establish, strengthen, Polel infin. of pro. The deceased king claims not only to have assisted in erecting temples to secure to his people the favor of their gods, but also to have constructed fortresses to defend them against the assaults of their human enemies,

Line 21.

ואל יעד and let him not remove. כרד: fut. spoc. Hiph. of יעד: as for them, used absolutely. See Ges. Lex. under 5 14. c.

יסנדכם shall humble them; taking the verb as the Piel or Hiphil of סבר to fall down, to prostrate oneself. Comp. איסרונים. I at first read יסרונים, as in line 9, supposing that the copyist had omitted a portion of the third letter, which made it resemble a 2; but as the reading of the MS. copy supports that of the lithograph, it is safer to yield to their joint authority.

Line 22.

מיקציה שנולכת הא and they shall cut it off, that kingdom. This pleonastic use of the pronominal suffix before the noun forming the object of a verb is found in Hebrew (Nord. Heb. Gram. II, 109).

ואכחן. Here we are presented for the first time with the Phoen. pron. of the 1st pers. plur., which agrees in its termination with the frequently occurring suffix 7. It is used in the nominative absolute both here and in the following line.

Line 17.

בת לאמם a temple of the peoples. באפים plur. of באל, in Hebrew a poetical term. The meaning seems to be that this is a temple to which the nations should come to worship (comp. 1 Kings 8, 41-43). Blau thinks that he has found this same noun in the third fine of the Eryx inscription in a contracted form in the word mubb to her people (Ztschr. der D. M. G. III, 441).

. From דכל to be thin, slight, small; like Syr. ען.

בהד thereby. הדה is here taken to be i. q. Chald. אחה. Heb. הזה. Buxtorf shows (Lex. Chald. col. 489) that x3 corresponds in the Targum to the Heb. rat, which is used absolutely without reference to any particular noun. The meaning will then be that those who worship in this temple shall in consequence receive pardon for their sins. Comp. 1 Kings 8, 30-53.

Line 18.

ארץ ים the land of the sea, i. e. lying on the sea-coast.

ובעל צרן lit. the Lord of Sidon; like בעל צר the Lord of Tyre, in the first Maltese inscription.

מתרח a temple to Ashtoreth. According to Movers (Die Phoenizier I, 602, 605) a large temple of Astarte in Sidon is spoken of both by Achilles Tatius and by Lucian.

שם בעל the glory (lit, name, renown) of Baal. Baal is the sun, or king of the heavens, and Astarte the moon, or queen of the heavens; hence it appears she is called his glory, his bright and beautiful counterpart.

ארן מככם Lord Milcom. So ארן בעל חמן Lord Baal Hamman,

Numid, inserr, 1-3. Milcom, or Moloch, in his character of the Phoenician Mars, is here said to have given the Sidonians their city; meaning that they had obtained it originally, or (which is more probable) that they had recently regained it, from other possessors by force of arms.

Line 19.

דאר desire, i. q. Heb. ארן. If the context would permit, we might read Tra (in the O. Test. also written Tra) Dora, the southernmost town of the Phænicians; and so we might find in this and the following line the names מרח Marathus and בבל Gebal.

ייפר אר and beauty of the earth. So the Tyrians applied to their city the appellation בלילח יפר perfect in beauty, or perfectly beautiful, Ezek. 27, 3; comp. 27, 4, 11, 28, 12, 17.

Line 12.

אר behold, like Arab. 31. The same word seems to have stood in

line 17, although the N has disappeared.

in life, or among the living, an expression found in several inscriptions of Athens and Citium (see Ges, Monn. Phoen. p. 349 b).

מאנך כחן as I was resting (sleeping !). און act. part. of ראנך מון suff. 1 pers. sing. in the Aramæan manner (Hoffm. Gr. Syr. p. 177), which is also used in the Syriac with a preceding pronoun (Hoffm. p. 345).

Line 14.

אמעשתרת Emashtoreth (i. e. mother of Astarte). In line 3 of the Oxford inscription we have also the name of a woman אמתעשתרת Amatashtoreth (handmaid of Astarte).

Line 15.

priestess. The mase, priest and priests occur repeatedly in the Marseilles inscription. Movers shows (Die Phænizier, III, 512 sq. 547 sq.) that Astarte was the highest national goddess of the Sidonians, and especially of their ruling race: so that the high priest of the goddess was the high priest of the land, and the office was the prerogative of the metropolis and was filled by the nearest relative of the king.

our lady. The term nzn is found repeatedly in inscriptions applied both to deities and to mortals. See Blau in Ztschr. der

D. M. G. HI, 434.

Line 16.

בת דן temple of justice. It would appear that among the Phoenicians the temple of worship was used also as a hall of justice, as among the Hebrews, whose בית דין הגדול or great court of justice was held in the temple at Jerusalem.

ארח. Supposed to be i. q. Heb. אורות, and to mean around, about, by. I at first read בת רכא בת ים a temple of justice, a temple

of the sea, i.e. by the sea.

איהר. Supposed to be i. q. Heb. איהר peg, and then used figuratively, as in Heb. and Arab., in the sense of support. See Rosenmuller on Zech. 10, 4, where it stands parallel with מדר corner-stone. As for the מ prosth., comp. איר (1. 3, 13) i. q. Heb. די.

מחרת stars. We may suppose this word to be chosen by way of

allusion to the meaning of the name name.

magnified, honored, worshipped; part. Pual of אדר . The > Piel part, occurs in the following line.

Line 11.

תלתי. So in the MS, copy of the inscription. The lithograph edition has מומי ...

If it be correct to read this as a proper name, it is probably that of the goddess Neith (Nyto), the Egyptian Athene worshipped at Sais. (See Plat. Tim., quoted by Parthey in his Vocab. Copt. p. 567, and Plut. Isis et Osiris, cap. 9). The Egyptian orthography of the name was or or or or or i, i. e. NeT (Is. et Osir., Parthey's edit., p. 176). Gesenius thinks that he finds the name in certain Athenian and Carthaginian inscriptions under the form non Tanith or ta-Neith, the first letter being the article, and that consequently Nyto, Tavaius, and Avaius are but different forms of the same name (see Moun. Phoen. pp. 115-118, 171, 172); but this is left for others to decide.

Whether we regard this as a pret, fut, or part, it is of the mase, form; so that the gender of the preceding noun (supposing it to be feminine) is neglected. Comp. Ges. Monn. Phoen.

p. 216, and Blau in Ztschr. der D. M. G. p. 442.

מולח appears to be i. q. Syr. בילח , Chald. אמנים, used like מולח

in the sense of thing.

ארבות that slayeth, part. Hiph. of און to die, with the preformative retained. Judas considers that he has found this form of the Hiphil in the fut. און בארן (Étude Démonstr. p. 135). The word משמח סכנעוד also with בארן in line 22. This phrase מארם סכנעוד in line 17 of the Marseilles inscription, which unfortunately is a broken one, so that the sense is left doubtful. Various explanations of the word משמח are proposed by Movers and Ewald; but neither of them would suit the context of our inscription.

b) to them. The change from the singular to the plural and vice versa in propositions of a general nature, where the subject is indeterminate and may be regarded at the will of the writer as consisting of one or many, is so common in Hebrew that we

feel no surprise at meeting with it here.

שב dwelling. Supposed to be formed by apocope from שבי.

שנה דן מכלות good is the judgment from on high, i. c. from the places above, the sky, heaven, מוב דל being a fem. used as a neuter. The allusion is to the punishments decreed and executed by Heaven against the wicked for their misdeeds. We might also read מכלות או from above the sky, taking או as i. q. Heb. או vapor, and hence cloud, sky; like Heb. און dust, cloud, and then sky, heaven, as in Ps. 89, 7. 38. It must be remarked however that the MS. copy of the inscription, which in general appears to be the most entitled to confidence, has און instead of און מכלות און און מכלות א

shall not have (1.15). The verb 722 is i. q. the Arab. 55, which means originally to stand, and then to exist, to be, like Ital. star and Span. estar. See Movers, Phoen. Texte II, 97; Ewald, Jahrbb, der bibl, Wiss, I, 198; and Blau in the Zeitschr. der D. M. G. III, 441.

Line 9.

- be considered as the plural termination retained before a suffix as in the verbs, or as the Nun demonstrative of the pronoun, the so-called Nun epenthetic. Comp. Ewald on the ברכם of the Marseilles inscription, Jahrbb. der bibl. Wiss. p. 201.
- ריסרדנם and let them terrify them. מרה i. q. Syr. אש to fear; Pah, to terrify.
- the gods. The Phoen. אלן appears to be the Arab. און ilahon

with the He elided. We have here a gratifying confirmation of the genuineness of the Plautinian Punic text, this being clearly the alonim of the Poenulus, on which the scholiast Sisenna remarks, "alon lingua Punica esse deum;" although nearly all interpreters have agreed in transcribing it פברים or פבריבים i. e. most high ones, superi. Comp. Abdalonimus (מכֹכֹל בֹּנִי שׁׁׁ the name of a king of Sidon under Alexander the Great (Justin xt, 10). This word occurs again in lines 16 and 22, and in the singular in 1.18.

משל a ruling head, i. e. chief, prince; comp. אישׁ מוֹשֶׁל, 2 Chron. 7, 18.

with cutting off, abscission. Used to give emphasis to the following verb.

biring cutting them off (shall be). Infin. of rind or yie with a demonstr. and suff., the verb governing the suffix and the following nouns in the accusative. I at first assumed here a root ring, and supposed the pret to be used emphatically for the future.

Line 10.

ארם דא that man; and with a fem. noun, אדם דא that thing (l. 11), אדם דא that kingdom (l. 22). We have here the primitive demonstrative איז (see Hupfeld in Zeitschr. f. K. d. Morgenl. II, 147), which Gesenius finds in the fourth line of the Sardinian inscription. Its plural א אלנם הקדשם אלנם הקדשם אל those holy gods (l. 22).

Line 6.

עלה. We may derive it from the Aram. אלה. to enter, and consider it to mean an entrance, opening, door; or from Heb. אני to go up, to ascend, when it will signify the upper part, top, lid. Either of these meanings will suit the context, as in each of the subsequent instances where it occurs it forms the complement of the verb אווים to open. On account of the close connexion of the two languages it appears safer to adopt a Hebrew etymology when one offers.

שני my sleep, from ישר, which is repeatedly used in Scripture of the sleep of death. Hence the phrase משכב שלי the resting-place where I sleep (lit. my resting-place of sleep) is closely analogous to the שני my quiet resting-place of the Oxford inscrip-

tion (Ges. Monn. Phoen. p. 130).

ארכום men. To avoid assuming a plural form of this noun, which is unknown in Hebrew, I at first read אים מיי דבר כך is unknown in Hebrew, I at first read מיי דבר כך i.e. break open the tomb; but the

objections to this are still greater.

אר ארם רברכך אר אף אפם, if men speak to thee, seil. urging thee to do this. In the verb the final Nun of the fut. 3d pers. plur. is retained, as occasionally in Hebrew and regularly in Aramaic; and so in ביקצנה (l. 2), רקצנה (l. 2), רקצנה (l. 22).

The only illustration that presents itself of this word is the Arab. it sing, which is applied also to the cooing of doves, the stridulous noise of locusts, the twanging of a bow-string, &c. It may be considered as the act. part. (with prep. and suff.) signifying he who sings or mutters to thee, thine enticer. This seems forced, but it is the best I can do with it.

Line 7.

bn or; and so in line 10. This use of bn is found also in the Marseilles inscription. See Movers, Phoen. Texte, II, 110.

Line 8.

אל יכן לם let them not have. So repeatedly in the Marseilles inscription; comp. especially the phrase בל יכן לכהגם the priests

Line 4.

בנת I built. Whether this is to be considered as written defectively and pronounced banti, or whether it is to be read in the Aramæan manner beneth, it is not easy to say. The former opinion would seem the most probable from the fact that the verb בלכחי above (if correctly interpreted) follows the Hebrew usage, as does also the verb siccarthi or sicorathi of Plautus, were it not that the omission of a sign for that the end of a word is an anomaly unknown to the Shemitish languages.

my prohibition or my curse. Buxtorf (Lex. Chald.) explains the Talmudical word קינם p as a vow of prohibition, and קינם as juramenta, vota cum execrationibus. True, he says קרנם is corrupted from קרבן, and if so, it could hardly be a Phoenician word; but it is difficult to see how this can be the case, as

p has a very different meaning.

מטלכת kingdom. The word also occurs in this form in lines 6, 10, 20, 22, and only once (I. 9) in the form מטלכת; and this agrees with the conclusions arrived at by Gesenius and Movers, who state that the fem. of Phœnician nouns is formed by far the most frequently in ה, seldomer in א, and never in ה. Why the form מטלכת should be used in line 9 I cannot say. מטלכת is probably the true reading on the coins of the two Jubas (Gesen, Monn, Phœn, Pl. 42).

ing to the Greek שון and Lat. ne, is found in Phonician for the first time in this inscription, where it occurs repeatedly. is used in the same sense in line 15 of the Marseilles inscription.

sign of the accusative, i. q. Heb. אות . This form favors Hupfeld's opinion that און is from the Aram. אות i. q. ישו i. q. ישו . It

agrees too with the Plautinian pronunciation yth.

משכבי my resting-place. בשכבי is used in the sense of bier, coffin, in Is. 57, 2. 2 Chron. 16, 14. and in the Oxford inscription (Ges. Monn. Phoen. p. 130).

Line 5.

Lex. art. (מְלֹלָה). The king may be supposed to call himself the son of his deity, either as his worshipper or as claiming descent from him in the style of Oriental sovereigns. As a counterpart to the expression idol or god of the sea, sea-god, to denote the god of a people bordering on the sea, we have the term ארץ דם land of the sea, applied (l. 18) to the Sidonian territory.

At the beginning of line 13 in the lithograph is a mark which resembles 5. If it were this letter, it would indicate that here probably are two nouns in the relation to each other of possessor and possessed, which relation in the former instance is indicated by their juxtaposition and in the latter by the prep. 5. But this does not appear to be the case; for the character differs in form from the other Lameds, and likewise projects somewhat beyond the margin of the inscription, so that we are justified in concluding that it is not a letter at all, but a mere scratch or flaw in the marble. This conclusion is confirmed by the MS. copy of the inscription received from Dr. DeForest, which presents no trace of the character in question.

. Here ארך is supposed to be the word אירי written with א

prosthetic, like Syr. | hand.

פיתטבנאל. Perhaps the first part of the word is that of the Plautinian name Muthumballes, which, however, Gesenius reads במה , and Quatremère מחובעל. May not its etymology

be בני־יתן־בַּן־אל

מבב במרג Kal. In the same sense Is. 14, 18: all the kings of the nations בישבר איש בביתו lie in glory each in his own house. Comp. too the oft recurring phrase יישבר עם אבותיר and he slept with his fathers. Gesenius remarks (Monn. Phoen. p. 438), that the act. part. is always written defectively in Phoenician. It should be observed, however, that both here and in the plural termination the Phoen. vowel may be a, in which

case no mater lectionis is required.

in my sepulchre. The connexions in which the word סכנים in my sepulchre. The connexions in which the word occurs besides the present instance (lines 5, 7, 11, 21) show clearly that it signifies a coffin or sarcophagus. Accordingly we may regard it as meaning literally a hollow vessel, and compare Arab. • a bee-hive, a ship; a horse's nose-bag, a saddle-bag, wallet; from • to be empty. Or we may suppose it to mean literally a polished vessel, from the root יול to polish; which last is singularly suitable to the description of the sarcophagus by the correspondent of the New York Journal of Commerce, who says: "The lid is a fine blue-black marble, intensely hard, and taking a very fine polish."

33

name is also found in another inscription of Citium since discovered by the Grecian archæologist L. Ross (Art. Phoenizier, in Ersch u. Gruber's Encyclop. p. 424). In the Sidon inscription the forms of \(\gamma\) are so confounded that, although the name occurs in it no less than four times (lines 1, 2, 13, 14), the proper reading cannot be determined from it. Supposing that the inscription of Ross (which I have not been able to see) is sufficiently clear to settle the question, I have followed the reading of Movers. The name \(\frac{72228}{2228}\) \(\begin{array}{c} \text{Equo\$\varray} \text{reguo} \varray \varray \text{reguo} \varray \varray \text{reguo} \varray \varray \text{reguo} \varray \va

מלך אשמנעיר King Ashmunyger. In the titles מלך אשמנעיר, מלך אימנעיר, מלך אימנעיר, מלך הבנה the appellative מלך אימנעיר, מלך הבנה before the name of the sovereign, in accordance with the best Hebrew usage; but it has not as in Hebrew the article.

Line 2.

חברת. Perhaps i. q. Heb. מבנית form, image, and hence to be read Tabnith.

מנילח a thrust, wound, from נכל (whence Heb. בנילה a sickle) = Arab. לבל to pierce. This and the following words appear again in lines 12, 13.

Line 3.

בלכתי (איניט I suppose to be employed, like the Pers. בֹנְינִיט , which also means literally to neallow, in the sense of to receive, to suffer, as בילים בל to be afflicted; so that בילות בלעתו will mean I received (or had inflicted upon me) a wound. It is difficult to reconcile this form of the 1st pers. pret. with the Aramean form מון (line 4), מעלה (l. 10), unless we suppose it to be emphatic

unless we suppose it to be emphatic.

בסך I at first proposed to read either מסקים shelterers, protectors (Hiph. part. of מְבֶּבֶּים), or perhaps better מספים anointed ones (Hoph. part. of מְבָּבֶּים), in the sense of the passive of Kal, as in Ps. 2, 6. So that the phrase מַבְּבֶּבִים עם would signify the off-spring or descendant of crowned heads or princes. Both these readings are however untenable, as they suppose an anomaly in the orthography of the plural termination, which elsewhere throughout the inscription is written, in the Phoenician manner, defectively. The reading adopted assumes מַבְּבָּב to be i. q. the Heb. מַבְּבָּב, and to mean a molten idol, a brazen god; and this may be either Baal (see 2 Chron. 28, 2) or Molech (see Ges.

19. the desire and beauty of the earth, our glorious delight, which is in the dwelling of our deity, to stretch out the fortresses which I have made; and they have been constructed

20. on the border of the land, to strengthen all the Sidonians for ever. My curse to every kingdom and to every man: Let

him not open my cover,

 and not remove my cover, and let him not take the fruit of my resting-place, and not remove the sepulchre of my resting-

place. As for them, those

 holy gods shall humble them; and they shall cut off that kingdom and the man that slayeth, that it may be ill with them for ever.

NOTES.

Line 1.

בירה בל in the month Bul. What this means is shown in I Kings 6, 38, where it is said, בירה בל in the month Bul, that is, the eighth month. The occurrence of the term Bul in this place seems a sufficient refutation of the idea that this and some other ancient names applied to months in the Bible were rather appellatives than ordinary names.

ינשר is the Aramaic form for the Heb. עשר

All C. The curved longitudinal stroke signifies 10, and the perpendicular strokes are units (Gesen. Monn. Phoen. p. 85, sqq.)
There are two coins published by Swinton (Philos. Trans. Vol. 4, Pl. 31), but omitted by Gesenius, which bear the dates

IMMNHAV (year cxxvi) and IMMUNHAV (year cxxviii).

Under both of them occurs the character A (whose alphabetitical value is that of 3), of which Swinton offers no explanation. Perhaps it may be a contraction for \$\frac{1}{2} = \text{Heb. } \frac{1}{2} = \text{Circle, cycle, age, but employed in the sense of annual revolution, year. In that case we may read \$\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2} \text{III} \text{ the 13th anniversary, or year, of my king or the king. For this use of the pronoun, comp. the Heb. \$\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{2} \

TRANSLATION.

 In the month Bul, in the year fourteen, the 13th anniversary of the king, King Ashmunyyer, king of the Sidonians,

son of King Tabnith, king of the Sidonians, spake King Ash-

munyyer, king of the Sidonians, saying:

 I, son of the molten sea-god, have received a wound from the hand of Mithumbenel; I am dead, and am resting in my sepulchre and in my grave,

. in the place which I built. My curse to every kingdom and to every man: Let him not open my resting-place, and

- let not a son of liars seek that I destroy a son of liars, and let him not remove the sepulchre of my resting-place, and let him not take
- the fruit of my resting-place [or] the cover of the resting-place where I sleep. Yea, if men speak to thee, hearken not to thine enticer. Any kingdom or

any man who shall open the cover of my resting-place, or who shall remove the sepulchre of my resting-place, or who

shall take the fruit of my

 resting-place, let them not have a resting-place with the shades, and let him not be buried in a grave, and let them not have a child, and let it go ill

because of them, and let the holy gods terrify them, even the

kingdom with the ruling prince; wholly cutting

them off, even the kingdom or that man who shall open the cover of my resting-place, or who shall remove
 my sepulchre. Neith shall know of that matter. Yea, a man

that slayeth they shall have no dwelling in peace. Good is 12. the judgment from on high! Behold in life, as I was resting

- beneath the sun, I, son of the molten sea-god, received a wound 13. from the hand of Mithumbenel; I, the king, am dead. I Ashmunyyer, king of the Sidonians, son
- of King Tabnith, king of the Sidonians, grandson of King Ashmunyyer, king of the Sidonians, and my mother Emashtoreth,
- priestess of Ashtoreth, our lady the queen, daughter of King Imanyyer, king of the Sidonians, behold we built the temple
- 16. of the gods, the temple of justice, by the sea—and justice is the support of the stars! There shall they be worshipped; and we
- 17. who have built a temple for the peoples, behold our guilt shall be diminished thereby, and there shall my children worship. And we who have built temples

to the god of the Sidonians, in Sidon, the land of the sea, a
temple to Baal-Sidon, and a temple to Ashtoreth the glory of

Baal, to us Lord Milcom giveth a city

21 ב דן מעלות אד בחים החת שמש כאנך נחן נגילת בלעתי בן מס 13 ך ים מאיד מיחמבנאל מה אנך [המל]ך אנך אשמנעיר מלך צדנם כן 11 מלך חבנה מלך צדנם בן בן מלך אשמנעיר מלך צדנם ואמי אמעשתרת 10 כהנת עשתרת רבתן המלכת בת מלך אימנעיר מלך צדנם אם בנן אית בת

זו אש בנן בת לאמם [א]ר רשען ידלל בהד ויש בני שם מאדרם ואנחן אש בנן בתם 20 עלת גבל ארץ לכנן כל צדום לעלם קומי את כל ממלכת וכל אדם אל יפתח עלתי 22 אלנם הקרשם אל ויקצנה ממלכת הא והאדם מהמת כירעם לעלם 10 אלנם אית בח דן אדת ים ויש דן איתר שתרת שם מאדרם ואנחן ואל יעד עלתי ואל יעמס נב משכבי ואל ישא אית חלת משכבי לם יסגדנם לאלן צדנם בצדן ארץ ים בח לבעל צדן ובח לעשחרה שם בעל וער יחן לן אדן מלכם אית ראד ייפי ארץ תרגן האדרת אש נשם שדר למדת עצמת אש פעלת ויספננם

2 בן מלך תבנת מלך צרנם רבר מלך אשמנעיר מלך צרנם לאמר נגילה ו בירח בל בשנח עסר וארבע רווו ג למלכי מלך אשמנעיר מלך צדום

ה בלצתי בן מסך ים מאיד מיתמבנאל מת ושכב אנך בחלתי ובקברי

+ במקם אש בנה קנמי אה כל ממלכה וכל אדם אל יפהה איה משכני ו

ס כוב משכבי עלה משכם שני אף אם ארמם ירברנך אל השמע ברנמך כל ממלכה ד אל יבקש בן מנם כאישם בן מנם ואל ישא אית הלה משכבי ואל יעמ

8 שכבי אל יכן לם משכב את רפאם ואל יקבר בקבר ואל יכן לם בן וירע כל אדם אש יפתח עלת משכני אם אש ישא אית חלח משכני אם אש יעמס ננ מ

החתום ויסרדנם האלנם הקדשם את ממלכא בראש משל בנמל ק

10 צהנם איה ממלכה אם ארם הא אש יפהח עלה משכני אם אש ישא נו הלתי נאיה ידע ממלה הא אם ארם מהמה אל יכן לם שב שלם מו put to death by Artaxerxes. With these circumstances the tenor of the inscription of Sidon coincides in two important particulars. In the first place, several lines of this inscription are occupied with an enumeration of buildings erected, and such buildings as could not well have been wanting except in consequence of some casualty. These public works evidently constituted a leading feature of the reign of Eshmun'ived II. But Sidon was rebuilt after its destruction in the time of Artaxerxes, and before Alexander's conquest of Phosnicia; for the latter, about B. C. 320, found a king reigning there, supported by Darius, and took the city (see Arrian, Exped. Alex. ii. 15, 6; Q. Curtius, De Rebus Gestis Alex. iv. 1, 15 ff.). In the next place, the mother of Eshmun'iyed II. is spoken of in the inscription as a reigning queen, for it appears that the architectural works commemorated were executed under her and her son's joint direction; which implies that her husband was no longer living. These coincidences render it quite probable that the father of Eshmun'iyed H., called Tabnith in the inscription, was no other than the Tennes of Diodorus. Another consideration, showing the inscription to be not later than Alexander's conquest of Phoenicia, is its frequent reference to a confederacy of Phoenician kingdoms, which can scarcely have existed after Alexander's system of administration over conquered countries had been established there.

The question remains, from what era is the inscription dated. In view of the circumstances which have been alluded to, it seems most probable that the era of this inscription is the re-building of Sidon between B. C. 350 and 320; and, as it is dated in the year 14, it may be set down as very near the truth, that it belongs to the latter half of the generation intervening between the destruction of Sidon in

the time of Artaxerxes and its surrender to Alexander.

We now give place to an independent interpretation by our highly esteemed co-laborer Mr. Turner.

E. E. S.

VII. THE SIDON INSCRIPTION, WITH A TRANSLATION AND NOTES, By WILLIAM W. TURNER,

This document is provocative of many remarks palæographical, philological, historical, and mythological, with which scholars will doubtless favor the world in due time. I however shall confine myself almost wholly to contributing my mite towards the reading and interpretation of the inscription itself, though taking occasion to add such observations on the topics connected with it as shall spontaneously suggest themselves.

the dead, which is of great interest for comparison with the representation of Sheol in the Hebrew Scriptures, as, for example, in the fourteenth chapter of Isaiah. It is important to add, in respect to the language of the inscription, that it accords with the view now generally entertained of the Phoenician language, that it was nearly identical with the Hebrew in its words, inflections, and construction.

The connection of the dynasty referred to with personages of Sidonian history already known, involving the date of the inscription, is a point of the highest interest, as is apparent, not only in itself, but because the value of the contents of the inscription depends, in a great measure, upon its determination. We will, therefore, briefly state some grounds for the opinion that this inscription belongs to the latter half of the fourth century before Christ. It is to be observed, that the only Sidonian era, hitherto known to us, is that used on the autonomous coins of Sidon, which, as already stated, was coincident with B. C. 111; and it will be remembered that the numeral signs for the dates on those coins, as also on the coins of Ptolemais and Marathus which have been preserved, are identical with the numerals found in the first line of this inscription. One might be disposed, therefore, to count the year 14 of the inscription from B. C. 111, making its date to be B. C. 97. This conclusion, however, does not force itself upon us, and there are reasons for believing the inscription to be much more ancient; so that its era must be different from that of the coins referred to. A comparison of this inscription with those collected by Pococke in Cyprus, to which Gesenius assigns an age not long posterior to Alexander, at the latest, shows it to be older, paleographically considered, certainly not more recent, than those. To this is to be added, that one of those very inscriptions of Cyprus reads כאשׁמכניכי — To Eshmun'ived. giving us the same name as that of the king on whose sarcophagus the inscription of Sidon appears; and, considering the well-known intimate relations between Sidon and Cyprus, it seems not unlikely that the same person is intended. But this identification is rendered more plausible by what Diodorus tells us (Bibl. Hist., § 42 ff.) of a king of Sidon named Tirrys, cotemporary with Artaxerxes Ochus, and subordinate to him, who revolted from the Persian king about B. C. 350. It has been already observed, that the name of the father of Eshmun'iyed II. of the inscription, הבנית, serves to confirm the supposed connection between that Greek name and the name of the goddess חוח (חנית). This, so far as it goes, would indicate an identity between Tennes and the Tabnith of the inscription. Now Diodorus says that Sidon, in consequence of the revolt under Tennes, was besieged by Artaxerxes, and at length, having fallen into the hands of the Persians, was set on fire and destroyed by the Sidonians themselves; and that Tennes, although he had betrayed his city, was

L. 20, b .- This passage is a repetition of line 4. b. as follows: קונמי אח־כל־מטלכות, i. e. "my imprecatory prohibition, in conjunction with all the kingdoms (is as follows)."-

L. 20. c. - יכל־ארם אל יפתח עלתי, i. e. "and let no man open

my entrance."-

I. 21. a. - יאל יערה עלחי ואל יעמס לב משכבי, i. e. "nor pull down my entrance, nor remove the inner part of my place of repose."-See the note on line 6. a.

L. 21. b. ואל ישא אית חילת משכבי, i. e. "nor take away the

enclosure of my place of repose."-

L. 21, c. - רמר יספר הרן, i. e. "let whosoever is refractory have a judgment,"-Comp. line 9. a. We read , here, by a slight alteration of the Phoenician text, substituting 4 for 1.

L. 22.a. - מאלונים הקרושים אלה ויקצונו המטלכות , i. e. "by these holy gods, and let the kingdoms cut him off."-The initial מאלונים of מאלונים comes from line 21. אלה, rather than by, is sanctioned by hily in Plant. 1, 9 : see Monum. pp. 368, 438. On the agreement of השמלכות with יקצפן (masc. pl.) see Gr. Hebr. § 757. 2; and on the grammatical form of דעד, Id. § 82. 1.

L. 22. b. הוא וארם מי המית כי ירעם לעולם, i.e. "him, and the man who kills; so that it may be ill with them forever."-The repetition of the pronoun which is the object of the verb

74 XP., is emphatic: see Gr. Hebr. § 865. 2. a.

To these notes may be properly appended some brief remarks on the contents of the inscription. The substance of it, as will have been seen from the translation given, is a series of direful imprecations against any one who may in any way violate the repose of the deceased king. But, what is of more importance, it incidentally adds to our lists of kings of Sidon the names of three in succession, of one dynasty; mentions the public works of one of them, and of his mother; gives intimations of the mutual relations of the princi-pal cities of Phonicia, and of the position of Sidon, in reference to the others, at the date of the inscription; and indicates the sort of government then wielded by the Phoenician kings, showing it to have been theocratic. The particular gods who were the objects of worship are also named: Baal and Ashtoreth, the gods of Sidon and Tyre in the most ancient times of which we have any record (see 1 Kings 16: 31, 11: 33), and Eshmun, a recognized divinity of the Phoenicians. This inscription also presents a view of the state of

L. 17. b.—טים כיאור הים ואנחני אשבניני בחים, i. e. "let the name of the Light be exalted! and it is we who have built the temples."

L. 18. a.— לאלוני צירונים בצירון ארץ ים בית לבעל צירון, i. e.
"of the gods of the Sidonians, in Sidon, the land of the sea:
the temple of Baal-Sidon."—On אלוני for אלוני, see Monum.
p. 58. With בעל ציר comp. בעל ציר Baal (tutelar god of) Tyre, Monum. p. 96, Inscr. Melit. 1.

L. 18. b.— ביל שמולך שם בעל, i. e. "and the temple of Ashtoreth, the name of Baal (be exalted)!"—There appears to be an ellipsis, here, of באס, which is easily supplied from the

context: see lines 16, 17.

L. 18. c.— מלכים ארון לכף ארון מלכים, i. e. "and until the Lord of kings shall give to us"— ארון מלכים means either Baal, or some superior human potentate; see the note on line 1. b.

"Us" = our dynasty.

L. 19. b.—) אַדְּנֵגְּ לְנְעְרֵהְ אַנְעָמָהְ הְּיִשְׁמֵּבְּלֵחְ וְיַטְּמֵבְּבְּּלְ , i. e. "we have taken possession for Marathus of the fortifications which she made, and we have added to."—From a very early period, the city of Marathus and the island of Aradus lying opposite to it, were politically united under the king of the latter. In the time of the Seleucidæ, Marathus was destroyed by the

Aradians. See Die Phoen., II. i. pp. 100-102.

L. 20. a.—מעלות זבול ארץ לכון על־צירונים לעולם, i. e. "the citadels of the borders of the land, in order to protect all the Sidonians forever." The initial m of מעלות comes from line 19. This word seems to have the same double meaning which המב has in Hebr.: comp. אור מולות מעלות אור in line 12. a. and Ps. 18: 34 with 2 Kings 17: 32. On אור אירונים, see Die Phon., n. i. p. 92: the name "Sidonians" is here applied to the people of all the kingdoms of the Phoenician confederacy, Sidon being the political head.

(by Sheol) within my covert; there is an end of burthens

within my vestibule."-

L. 13. b.—ן אוכי אומיניד מלך אירונים מן, i. e. "as for me, me Eshmun'lyed, king of the Sidonians, son of."—On the repetition of אוכי, see *Gr. Hebr.* § 851.

L. 14. a.— זָב בָּן בִּירוֹנִים בַּן בִּירוֹנִים בַּן בָּן, i. e. "king Tabnith,

king of the Sidonians, grandson of."-

L. 14. b.— חלה אשמכפיר מלה צירונים ואמי אמשחות i. e. "king Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians, and my mother Amashtoreth."—The name of the king's mother is probably a contraction from משחות שוחות the handmaid of Ashtoreth: see Monum. p. 132, Inscr. Cit. 2.

L. 15. a.— המלפת המלפת ביהור המלפת, i. e. "priestess of Ashtoreth our lady, the queen."—On the fem. sign n in בוְהָנֶת and מבר , see Monum. p. 439. The title of רבת is given to the goddess חנית in several Phoenician inscriptions

of Carthage.

L. 15. c. ביוכר אית־בית, i. e. "lo, we have built the house of."—

L. 16. a. ים אית בית דין ארץ ים, i. e. "the gods, the house

of judgment, of the land of the sea."

- L. 17. a.— יְשְׁשֵׁנֵינֵג בֵּיְח לָאְמֵּי מָרְגִּר שׁוֹע נִיר לֹלֶב הַה וְיָשֶׁב לִי i. e. "who have built the house of my mother, wide spread, rich, the light of the midst of the hill, and my abode."—

L. 9. a.—אלמי אחד ממלכא ה. e. "let whosever is refractory have a judgment by the holy gods in conjunction with the kingdom."—The י of המדין has the force of a relative: see Nordheimer, Gr. Hebr. § 1093, 2. a. On אלונים, see Monum. pp. 368, 369, Pun. ap. Plaut., and compare the name Abdalonimus, given to a Phænician king by Quintus Curtius and Justin; the initial N of this word is a permutation for r: see Judas, Etude Démonstr. p. 111. The final N of Model of the service of the ser

L. 9. b.—המשלכות איה־מעלכות בן מלק ציהונים איה־מעלכות, i.e. "through the head-rule of the son of the king of the Sidonians over the kingdoms."—The words מבלכות איה־מעלכות come from line 10. The p of page is a permutation for p; and the n of page to the same for איהונים, the same for איהונים, the same for איהונים, the same for איהונים this clause, see note on line 4. b., and comp. line 6. c. The offender is threatened with a judgment by the protecting gods of the kingdom of Sidon, through the headship of Eshmunlyed's successor over the Phænician confederation.

L. 10. a. " אם ארם הגא אשיפתח כלת משכבי, i. e. " would that that man who shall open the entrance of my place of repose."—

L. 10. b.—אם אית חילחי, i.e. "would that he who shall take away my enclosure."—The word הילחי comes from line 11.

L. 11. a.—איזה היהים באריה אני, i. e. "I pray that he may have experience of this saying."—On the grammatical form of אחריה, comp. Gr. Hebr. § 358; and for the meaning given to it, see Id. § 152.

L. 11. b.— אָם אָדָם מִי הַמִּיח אַל יְפוֹן לְמִי שְׁדֵה שׁלוֹם טוֹב . i. e. "would that the man who kills—let there not be prepared for any one whomsoever a field of sweet peace."—The ב of בוב comes from line 12. On שְׁדֶּה for מִידֶה, comp. Monum. p. 58.

L. 12. b.) This passage is a repetition from line 2. b.—line 3. a. as fol-L. 13. a. ∫ lows: מגולמי בלעתי בין מוסכי ממאירים יחם בין אולמתי i. e. "I have been carried away, I have been swallowed up L. 5. ה. יואל יבקש בין מנוער מאישים בין מנוער, i. e. "nor scrutinize, within my place of sleep, how it is with men within the place of sleep."—The יואל comes from line 4.

L. 5. b.—טא יתרחילת משכבי ואל יכלס, i. e. "nor take away the enclosure of my place of repose, nor remove."—The

ם of יעמוס comes from line 6.

L. 6. a.—יבשת ה', i. e. "the inner part of my place of repose."

From line 3. b. and the parallelism in lines 5–6 between אל ישא אית־חילת משפרי
א ישא אית־חילת משפרי, it appears that by ישא אית מושרי within the הדלת.

L. 6. b. עלית משבה שלי אף אם אדם מי רב דן כאל, i. e. "if thou enterest my place of repose, although a man who art chief judge, like El."—The change in this line to the form of direct address adds force to the threatening. With דָם בְם בּיתוּה שׁבְּים בְּים בּיתוּה שׁבְּים בּיתוּה שׁבְּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה שׁבְּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה שׁבִּים בּיתוּה בּית

L. 6. c.—השמל בדין מכל־ממלכות, i. e. "mayest thou hear a judgment by all the kingdoms."—This clause imprecates a judgment upon the supposed offender, on the part of the

Phoenician confederation: see note on line 4. b.

I. 7. a.—יבל־ארם אשׁבּפּקח עלה משׁבּר, i. e. "and as for every man who shall open the entrance of my place of repose."—
The p of יבל comes from line 6.

L. 7. b. אם אשישא אית־חילת משמבי, i. e. "would that he who shall take away the enclosure of my place of repose."—

- L. 7. c.—אם משכבר אם, i. e. "would that he who shall remove the inner part of my place of repose." סַבְּבִר of the word משׁבַבר comes from line 8.
- L. 8. מ. מל יבון למי משכב את דמאים ואל יקבר בקבר בתר ... "let there not be prepared for any one whomsoever a place of repose in the society of the Rephaim, and let him not be buried in a sepulchre."—On מאים, see Thes. sub voce.
- L. 8. b.—היבון לנגי פון וירוכ חחת. i. e. "nor let there be prepared a son for any one whomsoever, and let it be ill with him below."—The word חחת comes from line 9. "Below" =in Sheol.

L. 3. a.—יה אלמחירים יחם בין אולמחירים been swallowed up (by Sheol) within my covert; there is an end of burthens within my vestibule."—On אולמחיר see Lex. sub אולמחיר and Prov. 1: 12. Respecting מבים, and Prov. 1: 12. Respecting אולמחיר and אולמחיר and Ezek. 40: 7; in the latter word, the fem. form takes the place of the mase. of the Hebrew: see Monum. p. 440. For the meaning given to מבין, comp. מבין before a sing noun in Hebr., and the use of Arab. בין intra, in the same connection. Observe, in reference to this passage, that the sarcophagus on which this inscription was found, was disinterred "near the walls of an ancient edifice."

L. 3. b.—יולתי בחילתי בחילתי i. e. "and I am reposing in my enclosure and in my sepulchre."—On חילתי, see Lex. sub יחילת: the word in Hebr. generally denotes a rampart around an open space. With line 3 compare Is. 14: 18.

L. 4. a.—מְּטְקֵּים אָשֶׁבְּיִרְהִי, i. e. "in a place which I have built."—
ישָׁה for אַשֶּׁר is explained by supposing an assimilation of ה to the following consonant, before the dropping off of the initial א.

L. 4. b.—חובל־ממלכת אח־בל־ממלכת, i. e. "my imprecatory prohibition in conjunction with all the kingdoms (is as follows)."-For the reading p we are indebted to Mr. Turner: see Buxtorf, Lex. Chald, sub בכל־מעלכות By הוסם is to be understood the several kingdoms which at the period of the inscription composed the Phoenician confederation. Movers states (Die Phoen., 11. i. p. 550) that, in the time of the Persian supremacy, all the Phœnician cities were united in a confederation, at the head of which stood the royal cities of Sidon, Tyre, and Aradus; and that the central power of the union was a council, consisting of the kings of Sidon, Tyre, and Aradus (Sidon taking the lead), and three hundred other representatives of the three principal cities, together with the high-priest of Ashtoreth. This council took cognizance of affairs of peace and war, and doubtless of the interests of the common religion. The disturbance of the repose of the dead was viewed as a sacrilegious act: see line 9.

L. 4. c.—משמבר אים יפחוז אים יפחוז אים יפחוז אים . i. e. "and let no man open my place of repose."—The full form אים for הא before the object is peculiar, but admits of no question. In the Punic passages of Plautus, this particle is yth; comp. also

Gesenius, Thes. sub voce.

[The frequent occurrence of this name in an inscription purely Phenician (see lines 1, 2, 13, 14, 15) is a voucher for its Phenician origin, and shows that Eshmun was a Phoenician divinity: comp. Movers, Die Phonizier, Th. 1. p. 527 ff., who combines Eshmun with the celestial sphere, or primum

mobile.-s. w. G.

L. 2. a. מַלְהָ מְבַנִית טֵלֶהְ צִירוֹנִים, i.e. "son of king Tabnith, king of the Sidonians."-Respecting תבנית, see Monum. pp. 115-118, and Die Phon., I. p. 616 ff. It is probably identical with Tirry; the name given by Diodorus to a king of Sidon in the time of Artaxerxes Ochus: see Bibl, Hist., xvi. \$ 42 ff. The double r of this name is explained by הבבית. The name חנת (תנית) occurs in several Phoenician inscriptions (Athen, 1.; Carthag. 1, 2, 3, 5), as belonging to a female divinity, and has been supposed to be identical with the Greek Terris. In the application of this name to a man there is an ellipsis of עבר, as in 'Aσταφτος derived from ששתורת for עשתרות in בית (like the ellipsis of בבר עשתורת for בית עשתרות, Deut. 1 : 4.), the name of a king of Tyre. Gesenius supposed the divinity הכת to be originally Egyptian; but Movers claims for her an Assyrian origin. The tablets of Nineveh may decide the question, and fully identify name with nin.

L. 2. b.—יבר מלה אַשׁמִנְעִיר מַלֹהְ צִידוֹנִים לַאמֹר נְגַוֹלְתִי מַלֹּהְ אַשְׁמֵנְעִיר מַלֹּהְ צִידוֹנִים לַאמֹר נְגַוֹלְתִּי . i. e. "speaks king Eshmun'lyed, king of the Sidonians, saying: I have been carried away."—On בְּנְלַתְּּ for בְּנֵלְתִּי see Monum. p. 58; Prof. Green first suggested the possibility that the character following the a of this word might be 7, which gave

us our reading.

L. 15. priestess of Ashtoreth our lady, the queen, daughter of king Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians, lo, we have built the house of

"16. the gods, the house of judgment, of the land of the sea; and we have established the (house of) Ashtoreth—let the name

of the Light be exalted! and it is we

"17. who have built the house of my mother, wide spread, rich, the light of the midst of the hill, and my abode—let the name of the Light be exalted! and it is we who have built the temples of

"18. the divinity of the Sidonians, in Sidon, the land of the sea: the temple of Baal-Sidon, and the temple of Ashtoreth—the name of Baal (be exalted)! and until the Lord of kings shall

give to us

" 19. the delectableness and beauty of the land of Tyre, the garden of the plain country, we have taken possession for Marathus of the fortifications which she made, and we have added to

" 20, the citadels of the borders of the land, in order to protect all the Sidonians forever. My imprecatory prohibition in conjunction with all the kingdoms (is as follows): And let no man open my entrance,

* 21. nor pull down my entrance, nor remove the inner part of my place of repose, nor take away the enclosure of my place of repose. Let whosoever is refractory have a judgment

" 22. by these holy gods, and let the kingdoms cut him off, him, and the man who kills; so that it may be ill with them forever.

Notes.

In the first line of Inser. Cit. 1. some numerals may be plainly seen, after the expression ΓΩΨΩ, and followed by ..., πλ as in the inscription before us. Gesenius has left this passage unexplained: see Monum. p. 125.—1, w. c.

TRANSLATION.

Line I. In the month Bul, in the year fourteen, 14, departed the king's king Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians,

" 2. son of king Tabnith, king of the Sidonians. Speaks king Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians, saying: I have been carried

away,

4 3. I have been swallowed up (by Sheol) within my covert; there is an end of burthens within my vestibule; and I am reposing in my enclosure and in my sepulchre,

"4. in a place which I have built. My imprecatory prohibition in conjunction with all the kingdoms (is as follows): And

let no man open my place of repose,

* 5. nor scrutinize, within my place of sleep, how it is with men within the place of sleep, nor take away the enclosure of my place of repose, nor remove

" 6. the inner part of my place of repose. If thou enterest my place of repose, although a man who judgest like El, mayest

thou hear a judgment by all the kingdoms.

" 7. And as for every man who shall open the entrance of my place of repose, would that he who shall take away the enclosure of my place of repose, would that he who shall

remove the inner part of my place of repose,-

8. let there not be prepared for any one whomsoever a place of repose in the society of the Rephaim, and let him not be buried in a sepulchre, nor let there be prepared a son for any one whomsoever, and let it be ill with him below.

" 9. Let whosoever is refractory have a judgment by the holy gods in conjunction with the kingdom, through the head-rule of the son of the king of the Sidonians over the kingdoms.

" 10. Would that that man who shall open the entrance of my place of repose, would that he who shall take away my enclosure.—

"11. I pray that he may have experience of this saying. Would that the man who kills,—let there not be prepared for any

one whomsoever a field of sweet peace

"12. in the midst of the high-places of the Light, among those living under the sun, after the manner in which I am resting. I have been carried away, I have been swallowed up (by Sheol) within my covert;

" 13. there is an end of burthens within my vestibule. As for me,

me Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians, son of

" 14. king Tabnith, king of the Sidonians, grandson of king Eshmun'iyed, king of the Sidonians, and my mother Amashtoreth,

VOL. V.

זו "אשבנן בה לאם מ רד שע ניך ללב הר וישב לי ⁴שם מאר רם ואנהן אשבנן בהם 20 "עלה גבל ארץ לכנן כל צדנם לעלם "קנמי אח כל ממלכה "וכל אדם אל יפחח עלהי 22 אלנם הקרשם אל ויקצן הממלכת מהא והאדם מ המה כירעם לעלם 15 אבהנת עשתקת רבתן המלכת לבת מלך אזמנעיר מלך צרנם "אם ננן אית בת 16 אלנם אי הבת דן ארץ ים ליישדן אית דשתרת שם מאר רם ואנחן 18 "כאלן צדנם בצדן ארץ ים בח לבעל צדן לובח לעשתרת שם בעל יועד יחן לן אדן מלכם 10 "אית דאר ויפי ארץ צר גן האר(ר)ץ אשנשר "שרן למרח עצמת אשפעלת ויספן למ 13 כי "ממאירם יתם כן אלמת "אנך (ך) אנך אטמנעיר מלך צרנם כן 14 "מכֹך הבנת מכֹך צדנם כן כן "מכֹך אשמנעיד מכֹך צדנם ואמי אמעשחרת "ואל יער עלתי ואל יעמס לב משכבי "ואל ישא אית־חלת משכבי "לם יסר דן מ ב "בן מעלות אר בחים החת שמש כאנך נח "נ(נ)נולת בלעתי בן מס

סנ צתנם אית-ממלכת "אם אדם הא אשיפתח עלת משכני אמ אשישא אית-זו הלהי בנא יהידע ממלה הא "אם ארם מ המה אל יכן לם שר שלם מר 6 ס"לב משכבי "עלה משכב שלי אם אם אדם מי רב דן כאל "השמע בדן מכ(כ)ל ממלכה ו פ "אל יבקש בן מנם כאישם בן מנם "ראל ישא אית-חלת משכבי ואל יעמ ז ⁴כל אדם אשיפתח עלת משכני [™]אם אשישא אית־חלת משכני °אם אשיעמס לב מ 2 "בן מלך הבנה מלך צדנם "רבר מלך אשמנעיד מלך צדנם לאמר נגזלה s "בלעתי בן מסבי ממאירם יחם בן אלמת "ושכב אנך בחלתי ובקברי ג "בירח בל בשנת עסר וארבע -111[1] "גל מלכימלך אשמנעיר מלך צרנם 4 "במקם אשבנת "קנמי את כל ממלכת "וכל אדם אל יפתח אית-משכני ר שכבי "אל יכן לם משכב את־רפאם ואל יקבר בקבר "ואל יכן לם בן וירץ ההח "לם ויסר דן מהאלנם הקושם את ממלכא "בראש משל בן מלק

COPY OF AN INSCORPANS THE PHENESIAN CHARACTERS ON A SAREDPHACUS The state of the title till the title title of the title title of the made by Mr. C. V. J. Sen Drede white of the place of the state of the particulation of the particular of the partic (god with to be the board he by the board he by the the board to the Land to have been a facility to hand to be hard to be the facility to hand to be the facility of the facility somed a literal home he light hay gram of the y flamble in grand to y them be had he Exchambersoych mobining Kan poin Ambo hypry links ab felt hy och HARBAREMENT OF BONNING BONNING AS AND A SHOW BY AND MANNEY SOLD milensymphy who me by delandsymtetetellery me tydethaba y Byth has bether you et to bahy whay by box and my to you to 2 State on the Age of RANDALEN y mind & Boy Show berg ham my your Elite francis boh Agy Exxx Axx bank he yayning the obenth of to The hardward har for for for for the sale had a hard for the for the form t hyphylly yf seth fethyl anhygabh y fath an mus a om y by FE Hamilal Many Et 7 by 64 hor pagh for oth y him by and from which * Hedry of the how have him before the Mark that the tent of the 如此在并在的大型工作的。在在100年中自了文层是在各种的各种的各种的各种人以下一种方面各种人以外 TO THE MENT SERVICE OF THE STANDARD SOUND am beneficial supported by the polyment of the by the by he had a history de manight ogsterogged agate for at thosoght the worth out of her you be agreed toggithe Exploses grant to the notes of principality and the total the fit

COPY OF AN INSCRIPTION IN PHŒNECIAN CHARACTERS ON A SARCOPHAGUS

Disinterred within a mile of the City of SIDON, on the 19th of January, 1855.

made by Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck.

サイタヤダケガタルのケサンギダムサかけんかんへ1111一のタタギアクそのドチかりちの日のかり いりつかられた日のイナメタイルイトがやなんるかんかんとかれれるまれるのかのでる。 40NLX ymgquyph BhNXXWMLX Jygyggyggyggyggyggyggmxxyygygguggghx 5 a to the horald a plant had to the both to be by the bold and the bold to the bold and the sale of 494Zyonuxxxmgdwyph Bhaxxwnwxyxvgdwypho Bhjanxygd ? ありれるといれてからかんともないとれるのかまれたときまれるるまかんははいい。 HMXXMMhypodxxxxmmxxxdmhypodhmboxxhxmmxxmy 学がらりかりかりかけなりを日子はなるなるのかのか日ののなからしのはなるる 12 4944944492044WX 44X d 44X d 44X494/MYOXX444MAL 15 かりかれを行り州を州行の中りとりないとかるとりとからかりかりかりゅうかのからすける 4/9/49 wx 486 xy 499 x 44 yw 49 g w my 9 3 9 66 g m 40 w 9 9 17 4 4 6 / 9 / 4 9 w x 17 4 d h 4 4 9 x 6 4 4 pmg oy Log zwepg pwolfgy 6 g + h og 6 pg 4 m + 9 x 4 9 + 9 x 4 9 + 4 L x h 18 4年行うるかりからうかんなりからからかんそうののののなりののをする19かでのながでかりまるかかは10 44973MHLM9dw4pLBpNKKwMLKy29dw49434gymhKympLogomlKy21 460640929/4744983783/6464434CDM7684499334668 22

Several American scholars have interested themselves in the reading of this inscription, and have communicated on the subject with the writer. These are Prof. J. W. Gibbs of Yale College, Prof. W. H. Green of Nassau Hall, Rev. Dr. J. Murdock of New Haven, Rev. Dr. W. Jenks of Boston, Mr. W. W. Turner of Washington, Mr. W. A. Miller of Albany, and Rev. Dr. C. F. Crusé of New York. It is understood, also, that Rev. W. A. Thomson, and Rev. Dr. E. Smith, well-known American missionaries in Syria, and accomplished scholars, have succeeded in reading the greater part of the inscription. From these gentlemen, however, no communication relative to the particulars of their interpretation is known to have been received, as yet, in this country. Here it is proper to observe that portions of the inscription, of considerable length, present little or no difficulty to one at all acquainted with the Hebrew; while other portions are quite difficult to be interpreted. It must also be remarked, that the similarity of some of the Phœnician letters to one another (particularly of I and n, which differ only as to the length of their lower limb; and of d and r, which differ only in the direction in which they incline, while the b differs from either d or r only in its lower limb being curved; and the ts and t, some forms of which also differ only in the direction in which they incline) gives room to suppose that the copyist may not in all cases have distinguished the letters which make the correct reading; and there is some reason to believe that the stone-cutter may have made occasional mistakes in the original lettering. The obscure passages, therefore, allow of some latitude of interpretation. The following translation has been made by the writer in consultation with Professor Gibbs, and with the valuable assistance of his suggestions and criticisms. It is presented with diffidence, vet not without hope of its contributing to the elucidation of the monument. In the Hebrew transcript, some letters which are supposed to be superfluous in the original, the stone-cutter, or the copyist having carelessly inscribed the same letter twice, are enclosed in parentheses. A character which it seems necessary to supply in the first line, is distinguished by brackets.

ble;" but refers to a re-examination of the original by Rev. Mr. Thomson, after it was first copied, which led him to "correct a few letters," and adds that Mr. Thomson had "sent his copy to Chevaller Bunsen, who has placed it in the hands of Prof. Ditterich [Dieterici], who will publish it." But whether either of the copies sent to this country embraces these corrections is not known.

than thirty feet square by fifteen in height, the ornamental work of

which was of the highest finish."*

Not long after this discovery, the writer received from Dr. H. A. DeForest, of the Syrian Mission of the American Board, a manuscript copy of the inscription. Another copy was sent to the Albany Institute, and was very promptly lithographed under the auspices of that association. A copy of this lithograph, engraved on wood, was published in the United States Magazine for April 15th. It is understood to have been Dr. C. V. A. Van Dyck, a missionary of the American Board in Syria, who made the copy from the original. The plate attached to this paper is the Albany lithograph (copies of which were obtained through the kind assistance of Mr. H. A. Homes of the State Library at Albany), with some numbers added over certain letters, referring to the following variations found in the copy received from Dr. DeForest:

1	4	11. 2	16. A
2	7.	12. Not found in DeF. MS.	17.
ž 4	7	Not bound in Der. M.S.	18,
LACON VILLE	4	7	19.
ý	ů L	14.	9
4	10.	15.	4
TER SET		7	200 PO

^{*}There is reason to believe that further excavations on Phoenician soil would lead to other important discoveries like this. A correspondent says: "Cannot the Society induce some of your wealthy and generous Bostonians to give the aid of their long purses to some American Layard, for exploring the sites of ancient Tyre, Sidon, Citium, etc. There is every reason to believe that such researches now undertaken would meet with the richest reward."

† A letter from Dr. Smith of Beirut to Dr. Robinson, dated May 15, 1855, says that the inscription still remained "covered in the earth and inaccessi-

an average forty-six letters, and the whole in perfect preservation. No Phœnician monument which can compare with it in length and condition, has ever before been discovered. It is also unique as regards its locality, having been found at Sidon, in the very heart of ancient Phoenicia. Nor is its intrinsic interest out of keeping with these external circumstances which give it a peculiar value. This discovery was made on the 19th of January last, in the course of excavations undertaken with a view to finding treasure. For some time past, it seems, there has been a vague tradition current at Sidon, that treasure might be found by digging in the old grave-yards of the city; a tradition verified in 1853-54 by the discovery of three copper pots, each containing eight hundred pieces of gold of the coinage of Philip and Alexander of Macedon. Some of these goldpieces have been sent to this country, and two of them are in the Cabinet of the Oriental Society. The search for gold being prosecuted with renewed ardor, this inscription was disinterred. The following account of the circumstances is extracted from a letter to the editor of the Journal of Commerce, dated Beirut, Feb. 11, 1855.

"On the 19th of January last, some men were digging for more hid treasure in an ancient cemetery on the plain of Sidon, called Mughorat Tubloon, when, at the depth of about twelve feet below the surface, and near the walls of ancient edifice, they uncovered a sarcophagus, upon the lid of which there is a long Phœnician inscription. The lid is of a blue-black marble, intensely hard and taking a very fine polish. The lid is about eight feet long by four feet wide. The upper end is wrought into the figure of a female [?] head and shoulders of almost a giant size. The features are Egyptian, with large, full, almond-shaped eyes, the nose flattened and lips remarkably thick, and somewhat after the negro-mould. The whole countenance is smiling, agreeable and expressive beyond any thing I have ever seen in the disinterred monuments of Egypt or Nineveh. The head-dress resembles that which appears in Egyptian figures, while on each shoulder there is the head of some birda dove or pigeon-and the bosom is covered by what appears to be a sort of cape, with a deep fringe, as of lace. On the lid, below the figure-head, is the inscription, consisting of twenty-two lines, closely written.

"In the meantime a controversy has arisen in regard to the ownership of the discovered monument, between the English and French consuls in this place. The Turkish governor of Sidon, in this state of the matter, has closed up the ground and protected it by a guard of soldiers while the question is before the courts. Mr. Thompson informs me that in the process of the diggings the men opened large and elegant rooms cut out of the solid rock, one of which he had entered and examined, and which could be hardly less

plete; two in Oxford, complete or very nearly so; and three in London, one of them incomplete. The number of manuscripts relied upon is, for each portion of the text, from six to eight, in general seven. This is all the manuscript-material known to exist in the European libraries, and is regarded as forming a sufficient foundation for a satisfactory text, considering the well known minute agreement of the Vedic MSS. The aid of other manuscripts would hardly be of much value, unless they should be of another school, and present a sensibly different text; and of the existence of such even in India there is as yet no evidence. For these statements respecting the manuscript authority for a text of the Atharva, we are indebted to a private communication from Mr. Whitney.

The second fasciculus will embrace an introduction to the Atharva, a commentary on the text, consisting of critical and explanatory notes, with citations from the pada-pâtha, or analyzed text, of this Veda, from the prâticâkhya, or grammatical explanations, belonging to it, from its anukramani, or catalogue of authors, subjects and metres, and from its sâtra, or ritual, together with a concordance of

the Atharva with the other collections of Vedic hymns.

A brief notice of this very important publication must suffice for the present. Even in its incomplete state, it will be appreciated by all who apply themselves to the study of Vedic literature, as well as confer honor upon its editors, and upon the enterprizing publisher. May it also be happily completed!

E. E. S.

VL PHOINICIAN INSCRIPTION OF SIDON.

The great work of Gesenius on the existing monuments of Phœnician writing and language, published in 1837, embraces eightyone inscriptions, of various lengths, exclusive of legends on coins. Since that time, many more have been brought to light. According to a late writer,* there had been discovered, in 1852, thirty-five inscriptions not known to Gesenius. The most important of all these, undoubtedly, is the monument of Marseilles, discovered in 1845, which gives us what may be called the sacrificial code in force at a temple of Baal in that city. But this is, much mutilated. For particulars in regard to many of these, the Etude Démonstr. de la Langue Phén. et de la Langue Libyque, Paris, 1847, by Mons. A. C. Judas, may be consulted. The present year has added to the number another very valuable inscription, in twenty-two lines, each line containing on

^{*} F. Hoefer in a volume of the series published at Paris under the title of "L'Univers," as we are informed by Mr. Abbot of the Boston Athenaum.

3. Roth and Whitney's Edition of the Atharva-Veda.

Atharva Veda Sanhita herausgegeben von R. Roth und W. D. Whitney. Erste Abth. Berlin, Ferd. Dümmler's Verlagsbuchhandlung: 1855. pp. 890, gr. 8vo.

WE welcome this edition of the so-called Fourth Veda with peculiar pleasure. Each of the other Vedas had already found its editor, and was being drawn upon for illustrations of Indian antiquity, far in advance of what could be derived from the Sanskrit literature of the epic age. But the Atharva remained unappropriated, and its contents were almost wholly unknown to the learned world, until our countryman Professor Whitney, at the suggestion of Professor Roth of Tübingen, whose lectures he had been attending, undertook, in conjunction with him, to edit it. The larger share of the work done has thus far fallen to Mr. Whitney; so that this edition of the Atharva, though enriched by the learning of one of the first Sanskritists of Germany, may be regarded as in a great measure the fruit of American scholarship. Nor need we refrain from expressing, in this connection, the hope that, when the work is completed, the nationality of one to whom it will certainly owe a large part of its merit, may be distinctly recognized even on the title-page. Editions of Sanskrit works by American scholars are not as yet so numerous that our country can afford to lose any credit in this respect which may properly fall to it.

It is unnecessary to repeat what is stated by Mr. Whitney himself, in previous Numbers of this Journal, respecting the internal character and the age of this Veda, and its relations to the other collections of the same name.* The volume before us embraces the whole of the Atharva-text, with the exception of the twentieth book, which, being made up chiefly of extracts from the Rik, is regarded as an appendage, and not as originally a part of it. Whatever is peculiar in that book, however, will be included in the second fasciculus of this edition. The nineteenth book, also, is considered to be of later date than the previous eighteen, and has caused much labor to the editors, on account of the corrupt state of the text found in all the manuscripts. The reading of the manuscripts in all important places in this book where corrections have been made, is given in the margin, in order to facilitate a judgment upon the emendations adopted. Occasional emendations of the manuscript-readings, in other portions of the text, are left, as we learn from Mr. Whitney, to be pointed out in the notes. The number of manuscripts collated for this edition, either for the whole text, or for portions of it, is quite considerable: namely, seven in Berlin, all incomplete; one in Paris, com-

^{*} See Journ. Am. Or. Soc. vol. iii. p. 305, ff., vol. iv. p. 254, ff.

has shown, in his "Easy Lessons in Chinese," that many of the compound primitives agree in their construction with the phonetic theory; and whoever will read his illustrations and his dissertation on the structure of the Chinese language in the "Middle Kingdom," vol. i, chap. 10, will probably be better satisfied with Dr. Williams's exposition than with that of the so called "Discoveries in Chinese."* Mr. Andrews, after giving his views of the mode of analyzing one hundred and forty-one characters, containing, as he thinks, the emblem of a tree, says: "If the solutions which I have offered prove in any good degree satisfactory to the learned, then I have to state that I am certain I should be able to give an equally satisfactory account of most of the remaining emblems of the language, throughout their composition in the elementary characters," We would say that many of his analyses are very unsatisfactory, while some of them are extremely fanciful and absurd; e.g., the characters which he has numbered 110, 111, 112, and others where the same element occurs. What he calls a wood-pile, if examined in ancient Chinese dictionaries, is found to be a real picture of a bird, so plain that a child would recognize it. The eighth character in his list is also easily explained by reference to ancient dictionaries, where the horizontal line is replaced by three mouths, which the lexicographer says are the roots (rootlets by which the tree takes its nourishment). These facts, so obvious on inspection of ancient Chinese dictionaries, would have been far more to the author's purpose than the analyses he has given. The analysis which the author has given of many other characters is very unsatisfactory, while their true analysis is not so obvious. The system of symbolic analysis of Chinese characters might undoubtedly be prosecuted to much advantage in the study of Chinese, and yet the book before us shows that the author has made little if any advance upon the previous labors of others in the same department, and his book is by no means worthy of the title which he gives to it, of "Discoveries in Chinese." M. C. WHITE:

^{*}According to the analysis of Chinese characters adopted by Chinese philologists, as exhibited by Dr. Williams in the "Middle Kingdom," vol. i, chap. 10, there are 608 characters evidently pictorial in their origin; 740 composed of two or more pictorial symbols with significations derived from the combined meaning of the elementary symbols; 107 in which the idea is indicated by the position or mode of combination of the elementary symbols; 372 with significations derived by inverting or changing the original position of the elementary symbols; 598 with metaphorical meanings, as when a picture of the heart is used for the mind; and 21810 characters formed on the phonetic system, i. e., by combining two more simple characters, using one merely to express sound, and the other to convey an idea slightly modified from the original idea expressed by that part of the character when used alone.

The typographical execution of the work is far superior to that of any similar work with which we are acquainted, and we trust it will meet with such an extensive sale as to remunerate the author and the enterprising publishers, and encourage the author, or other Chinese scholars, to prepare other popular works on the Chinese language, and thus facilitate intercourse with our oriental neighbors, both in their own country, and on our western shores.

Discoveries in Chinese, By STEPHEN P. ANDREWS. Published by Charles B. Norton. New York, 1854.

This author has advanced no theory, or principle, in regard to the structure of Chinese characters, which has not been well known, and acknowledged, by the great majority of European and American

sinologues, for at least thirty years.

It has long been well known that the simplest Chinese characters are of hieroglyphic origin, and that many of the compound characters have been formed by the union of two or more hieroglyphic symbols, the compound character deriving its meaning in part from each of the hieroglyphic symbols of which it is composed. Chinese philologists who wrote two thousand years ago tell us that other characters are formed of two elements, one of which, dropping its own signification, acts as a phonetic, to give sound to the new character, while the other hieroglyphic element drops its sound, or name, and gives merely its signification, in whole, or in part, to the new character. This is what is called the phonetic system. Mr. Callery has endeavored to show that most, if not all, compound characters, have been formed on this phonetic plan, while Mr. Lay has advanced the opinion, that even in those characters generally supposed to have been formed on the phonetic plan, the phonetic or primitive gives a shade of its own meaning to the complex character of which it forms a part.

The only shade of novelty in Mr. Andrews's proposition, is the opinion that all the phonetics, or primitives, as they are frequently called, of which there are about fifteen hundred in common use, many of which are themselves compound characters, derive their own signification, when used as independent characters, from the signification or position of all the elementary symbols of which they are composed; or, in other words, that the phonetic principle has had no influence in the construction of compound characters which are themselves afterwards combined with radicals, or elementary symbols, to form still more complex characters. Chinese scholars generally allow that the principle of combined symbolism applies to many of the compound phonetics, or primitives, and to very many combinations of radicals with primitives. Dr. Williams of Canton

Of Dr. Morrison's Chinese Grammar Remusat also says: "Dr. Morrison has sought to give Chinese equivalents for the auxiliary forms to which he had been accustomed in his mother tongue. He has translated anolicisms, and phrases composed of the auxiliary verbs, to have, to be, to do, can, &c., with all their combinations, moods and tenses, . . . he has given as pattern-phrases such forms as will seldom or never be found in [Chinese] books," Somewhat similar criticisms might be applied to this work of Dr. Hernisz. He has taken the verb to have as a model for verbs, giving a great variety of English forms with a Chinese translation; as, I have, I had, I shall have : let me have : I have not, I had not, I shall not have : I had no bread ; I have no bread ; I shall have no bread ; have I ? have I not? had I not? shall I not have! with other variations of number, person, &c., varying also the objects after the verb, &c., &c. The Chinese character used as a translation of to have signifies, primarily, there is, and the form I have signifies, literally, there is to me, &c. A Chinese word of such primitive signification, when carried through all the English forms of the verb to have, appears in many situations uncouth and inelegant in Chinese,

Some of the phrases are not idiomatic Chinese, while others are such as would be seldom or never heard in conversation, or found

in Chinese books.

In the author's list of fractions, he has given the ordinals third, fourth, fifth, &c., instead of one third, one fourth, one fifth, &c.

The list of nouns, adjectives, pronouns, verbs, and adverbs given in the Progressive Exercises are generally correct, having been collected from the authors quoted in the preface of the work. There are, however, some errors which appear to be typographical, and should be corrected in a table of errats.

We have thus freely noticed what we consider imperfections in this work, yet no one but a student of Chinese can appreciate the difficulties encountered in compiling such a work. The author has evinced great patience and skill in compiling and carrying his work through the press, and has succeeded as well as could have been expected in a language so difficult as the Chinese, with no native teacher at hand to aid him. The general plan of the Progressive Exercises is good; and for the class of persons for whom the book was written, it will answer a good purpose. Indeed, it is almost the only book in the market for the use of such. For thorough students of the Chinese language, other and expensive books are desirable; but for those who merely wish a moderate practical knowledge of Chinese, the work of Dr. Hernisz is at once cheap and available. A good index to the work would add greatly to its value for practical purposes.

the sound of an English letter has no equivalent in Chinese, it should be represented by a character of somewhat similar sound, and for a discritical mark have attached the ninth radical, which signifies man, and which is commonly used in the formation of vulgar characters having sounds different from the sounds attached by classical usage

to the character without this addition.

In the portion of the work which the author calls the Spelling-Book, he pursues no uniform plan in spelling English words with his Sinico-English alphabet. In the following examples we have merely put in place of the Chinese characters the English letters for which the author has given them as representatives. Leaf is spelt l-e-f; lead (metal), l-e-d; copper, k-o-p-e-r; brass, b-r-a-s; pebbles, p-e-b-l-s; steel, s-t-el; quartz, q-a-r-t-z; mine, m-i-n; lime, l-i-m; marble, m-a-r-b-l; while the final e is retained in ore, ape, table, and nine. One is spelt o-a-n: two, t-u: three, t-r-e: five, f-i-f: although the author has a Chinese character for w which he has used in the words seven and eleven. But in seven all the letters are given, while eleven is spelt e-l-e-v-n. Thirteen is spelt t-e-r-t-e-n; while thirty is spelt with all its letters; and thousand is t-o-s-e-n-d. Thus it is evident that the author neither follows the English orthography, nor the natural sounds of the words, nor any other system consistent with itself. No guide is given to show the Chinese reader how the words, spelt with this alphabet, are to be divided into syllables; no marks are given to show which part of a word is accented; nor has the Chinese reader any means of determining whether a concatenation of these new alphabetic characters is to be taken as a single word, or several words. The corresponding Chinese characters, which give the meaning, are not, in this respect, a correct guide.

For practical purposes, this Chinese alphabet and the spelling-book are almost entirely useless. A revision that should adapt them to the purpose of teaching the Chinese the use of the English alphabet, and the practical method of spelling words, would be nearly equiva-

lent to a reconstruction de novo.

4th. Our views of the Progressive Exercises for learning Chinese may be best expressed by first quoting the criticisms made by Remusat in 1822 upon the grammars of the Chinese language written by missionaries before his time. He says that the Romish missionaries, in their grammars of the Chinese, had endeavored to give a literal rendering into Chinese of all the shades of meaning expressed by the various inflections of nouns, and moods and tenses of verbs, given in Latin grammars. The absurdity of this proceeding, he says, must be evident to any one who carefully considers the nature of a language which admits of no inflections of nouns, and in which the verbs have no forms equivalent to many of the moods and tenses, &c., found in Latin verbs.

Thus the Chinese reader would pronounce the name of each letter in the word, in succession, instead of pronouncing the word itself. This is a difficulty experienced by every one who attempts to represent the sounds of proper names by Chinese characters. Where combinations of consonants and vowels are used to form syllables unknown to the Chinese, they make as many syllables in the pronunciation as there are characters used to spell the word. In the Treaty between the United States and China, made by the Embassy to which Dr. Hernisz was attaché, the word President, when pronounced by the Chinese according to the sounds of the characters

used in the treaty, is Pi-li-si-tien-teh.

Had the author analyzed the sounds of a few common Chinese words, showing to the Chinese readers of his book, first, specimens of characters of which the pronunciation is a single vowel-sound; then, words with two vowels combined; then, words formed of a consonant followed by a single vowel; then, a consonant with two vowels; then, more complex combinations in Chinese words; then, how the Chinese themselves combine their initial consonants, for which they have representatives in the "foreign dividers of sound" (as they are called), which are found in native works, he might have enabled his Chinese readers to understand the nature and use of alphabetic characters. After this, by an easy synthesis, he could have shown that the English language has the same elementary sounds, combined somewhat differently from what are found in Chinese words; and by proceeding from simple to more complex combinations, he could have led on the Chinese scholars to pronounce English words, showing, of course, how words are composed of one, two, or more syllables. This course would have required a dissertation in the Chinese language itself, as an introduction to a Sinico-English alphabet. In the construction of such an alphabet those characters should be selected of which the common use in Chinese pronouncing dictionaries, as representatives of initial consonants, has already partially established their use as consonant-letters. The characters to represent vowel-sounds in such an alphabet, should also be those representatives of final sounds used in Chinese pronouncing dictionaries, where they will answer the purpose; and where others are required, they should, if possible, be those characters of which the pronunciation, in the court-dialect, consists of a single vowel-sound; or if the character is pronounced with the union of two or three elementary sounds, the description of its alphabetic use should point out whether the first, second, or third elementary sound, of which its common pronunciation consists, is to be employed when it is used as an alphabetic symbol. A character should be selected to represent each vowel-sound, thus giving sometimes several characters as the equivalent of a single letter in the English alphabet. Where

themselves will often add a supernumerary word or syllable with the rising inflection at the close of a question, when the sentence properly ends with another tone). Yet hundreds of persons who speak English or Chinese well, may have no clear idea of the inflections of the voice as described by elocutionists. If these various modifications of the voice are essential parts of Chinese words, it may be asked : how are the various passions and emotions of the speaker indicated? We reply, by slowness or rapidity of utterance, high or low pitch of voice, soft and plaintive or loud and gruff enunciation, and by appropriate tones on final particles destitute of meaning. Such ideas, passions and emotions as require peculiar modifications of voice to give them their proper expression, are represented by words to which are essentially and constantly attached those peculiar modifications of the voice. With these remarks we are prepared to say that an early and careful study of Chinese tones, is of great importance to every one who would acquire a practical

acquaintance with the Chinese spoken language.

3d. In order to enable Chinese to learn English, the author has selected characters which he thinks may be used as an alphabet, to illustrate the sounds and use of the English alphabet, and has given numerous examples of spelling English words with this Sinico-English alphabet. We are sorry to find that many indispensable elements of such an alphabet are wanting in the system of the author, if indeed it may be called a system. The author has given for each of our vowel-letters a Chinese character having a sound like one, only, of the vowel-sounds represented by that letter, while for the other vowel-sounds he has given no representative in his alphabet. For each of our consonant-letters, he has given a Chinese character, the pronunciation of which begins with the consonant sound (or one of the sounds) represented by that letter, and ends generally with a short vowel. He has given no intimation to his Chinese readers, that the consonant-sound only is to be enunciated, while the final vowel in the sound of the Chinese character is to be dropped. His entire Sinico-English alphabet consists simply of very good names for all the letters in the English alphabet, without enabling the Chinese scholars to understand the sounds of the English letters when used for spelling words. The consequence is, that a Chinese, studying this book, would give to each word spelt with the author's Chinese alphabet as many distinct syllables as there are letters used in spelling the word, as in the following examples:

Rest would be pronounced Urh-e-sih teih.

Bush " " Pih-wuh-sih-hae.

Help " " Hae-e-lih-pei.

Local " " " Lih-o-kih-a-lih.

Pilfer " " Pei-i-lih-fei-e-urh.

From these sources the author has compiled a series of progressive elementary exercises in Chinese, somewhat in the style of the modern progressive lessons employed for learning French and German. With but limited experience in the practical use of the Chinese language, it was not to be expected that the author could compile a work of this kind free from errors. While therefore we admire the enterprise with which he has undertaken so difficult a task, we feel at liberty to examine the work on its own intrinsic merits, and point out whatever errors might otherwise mislead those who

use the volume for learning Chinese.

1st. The author states that he has adopted the orthography of Morrison and Medhurst, as simplified in the more recent publications of American sinologues. It ought to be known that Morrison and (after him) Medhurst, have represented Chinese sounds by ordinary English orthography, often employing combinations containing silent vowels; while Dr. Bridgman, Dr. Williams, and other American missionaries, have adopted what is commonly called the continental orthography, which, when applied to the languages of unenlightened nations, is known as the system of Sir William Jones, which with slight variations has been followed in romanizing the languages of India, of the islands of the Pacific, and of the native tribes of North America. In this system every vowel-sound has a separate letter to represent it, or, if one letter represents more than one sound, they are distinguished by discritical marks, and no elementary sound has more than one alphabetic representative. No silent letters are admitted in the system. This gives definiteness to all the combinations of letters used for writing the sounds of a foreign language. This should be called the system of Sir William Jones adapted to the Chinese language, and not a modification of the system employed by Morrison and Medhurst.

2nd. Few Chinese scholars would agree with the author in the opinion that "a knowledge of the Chinese tones is not required in order to speak the language intelligibly." Chinese tones consist essentially of such qualities of enunciation as are known in English by the designations monotone, rising, falling and circumflex inflections, semitone or plaintive strain, tones of command, scorn and contempt, forcible emphasis, and also an abrupt or suddenly interrupted tone of voice. Each word must invariably be spoken in its appropriate tone, or it becomes, essentially, another word, and conveys an entirely different idea. The tone is an essential part of the word. It is true that a person living among the Chinese may learn many words and phrases, and pronounce them correctly by imitation, without any theoretical knowledge of the tones; just as every one who speaks the English language would ask a direct question with a rising inflection at the close (just as the Chinese

clause rákshate 'mám "protect ye this person," in which rákshata has the stress of voice, its right to possess the latter is not affected by the prefixing of a vocative, or of more than one; and we have equally rásavo rákshate 'mám, and vígve devá vásavo rákshate 'mám.

The cases in which the verb is allowed to preserve its accent are not thus exhausted. There are sundry particles (so particularly hi) of which the presence in the same sentence gives it the power to do so, and not infrequent instances of a more isolated character, and less reducible to rule, are found to occur. The Indian grammarians, also, give a whole series of rules for such cases, the arbitrary and unphilosophical character of many of which is at the first glance apparent. Enough, indeed, we believe, will have been already said, to show that we cannot in any manner depend upon the presentation of the facts which is to be found in the native grammars; that their rules can only be understood after they have been compared with the facts themselves, as recorded for us in the accented texts. To these, then, it becomes us to make our first and most assiduous application; when once the Vedas are made public in their entirety, and have been thoroughly examined and excerpted for this particular purpose, we may expect to be able to see much farther than at present into the details of the system, to comprehend parts of it which are as vet dark to us, and to recast into an intelligible form the teachings of the native authorities. For that time we must perforce wait, with what patience we may.

W. D. W.

 Hernisz's Guide to Conversation in English and Chinese, and Andrews's Discoveries in Chinese.

A Guide to Conversation in the English and Chinese Languages:
for the use of Americans and Chinese in California and elsewhere.
By Stanishas Henrisz, M.D., Attaché of the U.S. Legation to
China, Member of the Am. Oriental Soc., etc. etc. Published by
John P. Jewett & Co. Boston, 1855.

This work was printed in Paris, with the beautiful Chinese type of Marcellan Le Grand, and published by J. P. Jewett & Co., at the moderate price of five dollars per copy. It contains one hundred and seventy-nine oblong octavo pages, this form affording facilities for placing the columns of English and Chinese side by side.

The author informs us in his preface that he has never had the assistance of a native Chinese teacher, but that he has obtained his knowledge of Chinese from the works of Gonçalvez, Medhurst, Bridgman, and Williams, and from the Chinese Imperial Dictionary.

violation of the principle is Rik r. 134.3, prá cakshaya ródasi vásayo 'shásah; where, if ródasi is to be connected with the preceding verb, as the sense seems to demand, and as the commentator also understands it, the following verb ought to be accented, vásáya: that it is not so accented is simply an error in the tradition, which we are

fully authorized to correct.

Another prominent rule under the same general head is wont to be given in the following form: a verb retains its accent when immediately preceded by another verb. Thus in pre 'ta mrnata sahadhvam, "go on, slav, overcome," or in tesham pahi grudht' havam, "of them drink, hear our cry," mrnata, sahadhvam, grudhi are said to be accented because of their standing in contact with the words which severally precede them. But it will now be apparent to every one, almost before we have time to point it out, that this is merely a particular case under the general rule just established : a verb under such circumstances must necessarily occupy the initial position in its own clause; and it is on that account, and not from any mysterious influence which the contiguity of another kindred form has upon it, that it retains its proper accent. Taking one of the examples formerly given, and altering a little the arrangement of it swords, so as to read idhmam bharama krnavama havi ashi te, although the accent of krnáváma would seem to be brought thereby under the action of this rule, we should not in fact change the ground upon which the accent was already before preserved to it. And in like manner, if we read in the instance last cited påhi tësham grudhi' havam, we have taken away from grudhi neither the reason for its accentuation, nor the accent itself; that is only to be effected by changing its place with regard to its own object, as tésham pahi hávam crudhi, in which case it would have been brought into a position corresponding to that of pahi, and would, like the latter, lose its accent.

Once more, we are told that a verb between which and the beginning of the sentence only vocatives intervene, is also suffered to retain its accent. This, too, is evidently a case of a like character with those already noticed. A vocative forms no part, properly speaking, of the sentence or clause to which it is attached; it does not in any manner enter into its logical structure; it is a mere appendage thereto, an interjection, a parenthesis. If, then, the verb be preceded only by such a form, it still remains, in effect, at the head of the sentence, and is accordingly accented. If we have the

VOL. V.

^{9; 52.6: 64.2; 67.12; 70.10; 74.6; 76.4; 89.7; 91.6, 13; 104.1, 10; 106.11; 108.4; 111.5; 116.7; 133.2; 138.2 (}twice), 5; 147.5; 156.3; 161.5; 164.5, Atharva r. 8.3; 17.2. n. 5.4; 10.7. iv. 5.6; 11.12; 21.1. v. 2.9. vr. 9.1; 44.1; 99.3; 136.2. vr. 48.1. vr. 1.12; 2.3; 4.1, 13, 18. ix. 1.8; 6.61. x. 4.12; 8.26. xr. 3.31. xr. 4.48, 55. xr. 45.5; 49.6.

ciently significant to call for an examination, and may perhaps lead to the discovery of a common principle which shall account for both.

The second general class of exceptions depends, as already said. upon the position of the verb in the sentence. And under this head, we are first taught that, if it stand at the commencement of the sentence, the verb retains its accent. The word sentence, as here used, signifies not the logical sentence only, but also the metrical; the verse, namely, or the primary element of the full verse, the pada (of which, for instance, four compose the ordinary cloka). This is a rule which does not seem to call for any special explanation or defense; it is in accordance with what is shown elsewhere, not only by the Sanskrit itself, but by other languages also: so the Greek always accents at the beginning of a sentence the words and forms which in other situations are deprived of their independent stress of voice, and appear as enclitics. But this rule also is, in the form as given, only very imperfectly stated: it requires to be so extended as to read: that the verb is always accented if it stand at the head of its own particular clause in the sentence. We have here, evidently enough, only such a development of the rule previously presented as is most natural and plausible, and was even to have been in advance expected. Nevertheless, as it has not hitherto, so far as we are aware, been recognized and noted, it is incumbent upon us to support and illustrate it by citing examples. In Rik, then, 1. 79.11, we read yo no agne 'bhida'saty anti duré padishta sah "whoso, O Agni, near or far, would do us harm, let him fall !" In x. 101, 8, again, ma' vah susroe camasó dr'nhatá tám "let not your bowl of offering spill, hold it firm." In 1. 31. 17, á' sádaya barhishi yákshi ca priyám "cause them to take seat upon the barhis, and make acceptable offering." In 1, 94. 4, bhárame 'dhmám krnáváma havl'nshi te "we will bring fuel, we will make libations, to thee." In Atharva II. 35. 4, vicrakarman námas te páhy àsmá'n "O Vicvakarman, homage to thee, protect us." În vi. 3. 2, pà'tu grâ'và pâ'tu sómo no anhasah " protect us the grinding-stone, protect us Soma, against distress." Here the several verbs padishtá, dr'nhata, yákshi, krnáváma, páhi, pá'tu (in the second case), retain their accent in virtue of this rule, and no one can fail to see and acknowledge the propriety of their doing so, if the general principle of the accentuation of a verb when it occupies an initial position be allowed. In a note are given, for farther consultation, the passages illustrating the rule which have been collected in an examination, not very thorough, of the first and tenth books of the Rik, as well as those which we have as yet found in the text of the Atharva.* The only instance anywhere noted of a

^{*} Rik 1 31, 3; 32, 12; 34, 11; 48, 3; 54, 11; 58, 7; 61, 2; 62, 3; 79, 2; 80, 3; 93, 7; 94, 3, 12; 100, 18; 103, 2 (twice); 118, 2; 121, 3; 157, 4; 163, 3; 165, 12; 173, 3; 174, 1; 182, 1, 4. x. 28, 3 (twice); 31, 3; 34, 14; 40, 5,

down by arbitrary theorizing; and it has even been but partially understood, and imperfectly described, by those who have been the mediums of the transmission to us of its facts.

Such being the present condition of the investigation, it cannot but be of interest and importance to establish new rules or principles, or to reduce to a more exact and philosophical form of statement such as have been already laid down, and this we shall accordingly endeavor in a few points to do, without entering into anything like

a thorough discussion of the whole subject.

There are two general classes of exceptions to the rule which deprives the verb of its accent; the one dependent upon the character of the sentence in which the verb may be found, the other upon its position in the sentence. For the former the following summary statement may be given: the verb loses its accent in a primary or independent, but retains it in an accessory or dependent clause. The Indian grammarians, and their European followers, have described the phenomenon in a different manner, keeping out of sight its true efficient cause. They say merely that the verb retains its accent in a clause which contains any forms, whether of inflection or derivation, coming from the relative pronominal root ya. But these forms constitute, with few exceptions, the whole apparatus of words which condition the dependency of a clause; and we farther find that those exceptions themselves are allowed by theory, and possess in practice, the same influence upon the verbal accent: they are cet "if," which is equal to yadi: net "lest," Latin ne, equal to yan na: kimcit and kindred forms, used interrogatively, containing an idea of "whether," German ob etwa: and even when the clause, without containing any particular word which necessitates or indicates it, is to be understood as dependent, its verb maintains its accent. This last is described as "a clause containing ca with the signification 'if,'" but although that particle is generally present, it has its own proper meaning "and," and is by no means equivalent to yadi or cet.* Now by this new statement of the phenomenon we seem to have advanced at least a step toward the comprehension of it. We need go no farther than to the German to find another language which exhibits a marked difference in the manner of treating its verbs, according as they stand in independent or in accessory clauses; the verb in the latter being removed from its natural place, and forced to take up a position at the very end of the clause: and although the analogy between the two cases of a change of place and a change of accentuation is not palpable, the fact that they are due to a common cause is suffi-

^{*} So Atharva xi. 3. 56, for example: nd ca prandm rundddhi, sareajydnim jiyate "and even is his breath not stopped, he suffers nevertheless a general harming;" or xv. 13. 7, kárshed enam, nd cdi 'nam kárshet "does he invite him, does he also not invite him." i. c. "whether he does or does not invite him."

of words of which the character and relations to the sentence are so peculiar as to authorize us to expect in different languages differences in their treatment, it is that of the vocatives. We are taught that in Sanskrit the vocative has its own peculiar accent (namely, upon the first syllable) when it stands at the beginning of a sentence, but is elsewhere left unaccented. And we can notice even in our own usage, that a vocative, if preceded by anything addressed to the person or thing which it indicates, is reduced to a position of decided inferiority with respect to tone, which, if it do not amount to entire encliticism, we may readily conceive to be by another language pushed to that extent. This is illustrated not only by the example which Mr. Bopp cites: "Come! Frederick," as if the verb alone possessed the power of subordinating the vocative, but equally well by "Thou then! Frederick," or "Never! Frederick, will I desert thee." The attention of the person addressed is assumed to be already gained, and the vocative is a mere parenthesis in the sentence, uttered, like any other parenthesis, in an undertone and monotone: if, on the other hand, his attention is sought, the name is first called,

and has a full tone given it.

With the other class the case is altogether different. That a form of the finite verb, which we are wont to regard as the very life of the sentence, as by itself capable of constituting a sentence complete in all its parts, which so often combines into itself ideas and relations that in another language, or in other parts of the same language, appear as independent words or accessory clauses—that this, of all other words, should lose its independent tone, and be reduced to the subordinate position of an enclitic in the sentence, is certainly strange enough; and one might, at first sight, almost feel justified in denying its truth. Nevertheless, we fully believe that the time is not yet come for resorting to so extreme a measure: that we have first to endeavor to comprehend more fully the nature of the phenomenon as laid before us, in all its rules and all its exceptions, and to strive faithfully to find some analogy or reasonable ground for it. It is supported by far too weighty evidence, as an actual phenomenon, not to require to be considered as such until all the arts of explanation shall have been essayed upon it in vain. The possibility of its complete comprehension has not yet been given. To expect to obtain such from the rules of investigators and theorists so shallow and unphilosophical as the Indian grammarians, would be the height of unreason, and of accented texts, by the minute examination of which our view might be filled up and corrected, too few have as yet been published, nor have those few been studied with a special eye to this matter. So much as this, at any rate, we can seem to see clearly; that it is a true linguistic phenomenon which we have here placed before our eyes; its outlines are not such as would have been laid

There is one highly interesting department of the subject of Sanskrit accentuation which our author's plan has not allowed him to discuss directly, or in full, because its phenomena are confined to the Indian language alone, so far as has been remarked, and find nothing analogous in the other dialects of our family. This is the loss on the part of certain words in the sentence of their proper accent, unless under the operation of especial causes, which preserve it to them. Other languages, to be sure, as for instance the Greek, have their classes of properly accentless words, which attach themselves more or less closely, as proclitics or enclitics, to some other more prominent word in the sentence, and others which do or do not receive an accent, according to the degree of significance which in different cases may belong to them: such the Sanskrit has also: but it is not to them that reference is now made; there are, besides these, two important and extensive categories which the Sanskrit alone deprives. of accent. These are the vocatives, and the forms of the finite verb. Mr. Bopp briefly considers the subject in a note (note 37, p. 240), and disposes of it very summarily by denying the facts, and accusing the Indians of having in this respect misapprehended or misrepresented their language. He finds it so incredible that forms of the length and fullness of vigvamitra and abubodhishamahi should have no distinguishing stress of voice, that he prefers to believe that both vocatives and verbs did in truth always retain their own proper accent, but that in the situations where this is allowed them by the Indian grammarians, they were so much more strongly and impressively accented, that the stress ordinarily laid upon them was not noticed or noted at all. We cannot find this counter theory satisfactory, or even plausible. Such a denial of the actuality of a phenomenon of which the explanation seems difficult, is a confession of weakness which science should not feel willing to make until after a much more thorough investigation than this subject has yet received, at the hands of our author or of any other person. And the chief or only difficulty which our author puts forward seems, after all, to be by no means the greatest of those which are to be contended against: who would have thought of rejecting as impossible and false the accentuation of a dvandva like unmocanapramocané, or of a compound verb accented upon the preposition, like práty abubodhishamahi? the number of successive syllables which are left unaccented in a sentence is certainly not the main thing: if a certain category of words is to be stripped of its accent, it is of but inferior consequence whether the individual words which come under it are longer or shorter in respect of form: the true point which calls for explanation is their reduction at all to a subordinate and enclitic condition. But so far as concerns the vocatives, this too does not appear to be a matter of so extreme difficulty. If there is any class

words, which needs only to be fairly stated and calmly considered to be rejected without a formal refutation. But the argument is hardly better founded in facts than in theory: of the two most frequent secondary suffixes forming abstract nouns, tra and ta, the former receives itself the accent, the latter draws it forward to the syllable next preceding itself: and if it is true that ti forms numerous paroxytone feminine abstracts, it is true also that they are quite as fre-

quently oxytone.

It can hardly remain a matter of doubt, after this examination of the arguments by which Mr. Bopp supports his theory of the principle of Sanskrit accentuation, that it is unhesitatingly to be rejected, as founded only upon doubtful, or arbitrary, or mistaken interpretations of certain phenomena, which, even did they speak unequivocally in its favor, would not be sufficient to give it more than a degree of plausibility as one of the general secondary tendencies of the language. And it is especially unfortunate that our author should have allowed a theory so insufficiently established to govern and direct him to such an extent as is actually the case, in his arrangement and comparison of the facts which he has so industriously collected. He holds to it with much consistency, or persistency, throughout the whole course of his work; we have not remarked that he allows anywhere the possible existence of a principle of accentuation more primitive than this, or inquires whether any of the facts inconsistent with it which he is compelled to take notice of may not be original, and find an explanation in the history of the earliest growth of the language. We cannot attempt here to follow him through all the points where we conceive him to have been misled by this means into an erroneous explanation, estimation, or comparison, of the phenomena presented by the two languages which he primarily treats. We shall have accomplished all that we desired, if we have shown the untenability of the theory which would account for the Sanskrit accentuation by a general law of secondary origin, and have preserved to the linguistic investigator the precious possibility that under its apparent anomalies are hidden valuable hints as to the first growth of language. We have not been solicitous, when opposing the interpretation forced by Mr. Bopp upon his facts, to substitute for it another of our own, as recognizing the extreme difficulty of the subject, and the necessity of tracing every point sought to be established carefully through the whole body of phenomena of the language; which has hardly been practicable hitherto. The possibility of doing so, however, is greatly facilitated by the work before us, which, as a careful collection and presentation of all the phenomena of accent still admitting comparison in the various Indo-European languages, is, for completeness and convenience, far in advance of anything which had before been produced.

indeed, be inclined to claim that the ground of his argument was only shifted, inasmuch as there was room still to allege the existence of a tendency toward a more energetic accentuation of the intenser forms among the primary derivatives themselves, and to cite this case in evidence of it. The plea when reduced to this form is hardly of force enough to demand an answer, considering how numerous are the cases in which the root maintains its accent before the suffix. while yet no such reason can be assigned for it. Very plain indications are not wanting, however, that the Sanskrit did not feel the alleged need of representing the intensifying of the idea in comparative and superlative formations by a modification, or at all events not by a retraction, of the accent. There are other, and much more usual, suffixes employed to form adjectives of comparison, namely tara and tama, which are actually appended to nominal themes; and these, as a general rule, leave the accent of the theme just where they find it: thus we have from mahat, mahattara, mahattama; from púnya, púnyatara, púnyatama; from bhágavat, bhágavattara; from ratnadha', ratnadha' tama. The exceptions to this rule occur chiefly in formations from pronominal and prepositional roots and themes (the suffixes appearing in part in the briefer forms ra and ma), and the variations of accent which they exhibit are directly opposed to those which our author's principle would require: so from yá come yatará and yatamá; from ká, katará and katamá; from adhás, the comparative ádhara, and the superlative adhamá; from út, ápa, úpa, in like manner, úttara and uttamá, ápara and apamá, úpara and upamá; and from pára, paramá.

One more argument is brought forward by Mr. Bopp in support of his theory of Sanskrit accentuation. The abstracts, he tells us, show an inclination to accent their first syllable, and the abstract is in so far the highest potency of a word, as it presents the radical idea without any limitation or foreign admixture; to it therefore belongs of right the most impressive mode of accentuation. But is there really any ground for establishing such a distinction in favor of the abstract above the other derivatives from a root! It seems, at any rate, not entirely consistent with the superior dignity which had already before been claimed for the forms of the finite verb; they, surely, do not present the radical idea without limitation or foreign admixture; they allow its limitation by both subject and object, and the intrusion into it of the foreign elements of modality and time. And can one seriously compare the nomen abstractum with the nomen agentis, for instance, or the nomen possessivum, and appreciate the existence of any quality in the former which should give it a claim to be clearly designated as superior to the latter? Surely we have here but another instance of an arbitrary determination of rank, upon grounds purely imaginary, between classes of

their accent in the majority of instances where they are found, and in the rest to lay upon them a stress intended to be a particularly

powerful one.

Mr. Bopp next brings forward the accentuation of the first syllable in all comparatives and superlatives formed by the suffixes iyas and ishtha; "which," he says, "is not easily to be explained except upon the supposition that the language felt with reference to these formations the necessity of representing the intensifying of the idea by the highest intensification of the accent likewise; therefore, e.g., from the oxytone positive svadu come the comparative and superlative svå'diyas, svå'dishtha," etc. This argument would at least seem to be more to the point, if it were actually the case that sva'dlyas, svá'dishtha were formed from svádú, and that they in truth exhibited a change, a retraction, of accent. But this is not so. It has, indeed, been usual, following native Indian authority, to account these comparatives and superlatives as secondary derivatives, and to form them from nominal themes, but it is truly remarkable that a theory so discordant with the facts should have been permitted so long to pass unchallenged. We are accustomed to hold that the individuality of a nominal theme, as distinguished from its root, is constituted by its formative suffix, taken in connection with the particular form of the root presented therewith. What shall we think, then, when called upon to derive kshepiyas, for example, from kshipra; to accomplish which we have first to strip off from the latter the suffix ra whose addition to the root kship first constituted it a theme, and then farther to take a different form of the root itself ! Is that a philosophical etymological process ! This is not an unfair example of the class; compare farther váriyas from uru, rájishtha from rjú, gámishtha from gantár; a host of others as striking might be adduced: notice also the numerous cases of such comparatives and superlatives to which even Indian theory can assign no corresponding positive; as kaniyas, kanishtha, jya'yas, jyéshtha: remark, finally, the permission given in the Vedic language to form at will such derivatives from any root, whether simple or combined with a preposition. These indications are unambiguous, and point, all of them, to the same conclusion, which cannot be avoided; that all these formations in fyas and ishtha are primary derivatives from the root itself, and stand upon an equality with, instead of being subordinate to, the themes which occasionally bear to them the relation of positives. In the instance cited above, then, of svå'diyas and svå'dishtha as compared with svådû, we have by no means a case of retraction of an already located accent, but only an example of the usual variety of accentuation shown in the formation of derivatives, the root retaining itself the stress of voice before certain suffixes, and yielding it up to others. Our author might,

ation. But so far is the Sanskrit from tending to lay any particularly energetic stress of voice upon its verbs, that in most instances, and unless some special circumstances interfere to prevent, it deprives them of all accent whatever. It would be strange if a class of words should be left ordinarily unaccented, which had been chosen out to bear an especially energetic accentuation. But the strength of the argument was perhaps intended to lie rather in the comparison made between the active and middle verbs on the one hand, and the passives on the other, which latter lay the stress of voice upon their characteristic syllable ya, immediately following the root; "because," says our author, "they lack the energy of self-action." In reply to this it may be remarked, in the first place, that we seem to have here only another instance of a classification made on insufficient grounds: that it is not easy to perceive a notable distinction in respect to the quality of the action, as such, between the two classes set up; their differences residing rather in the different relations of the subject and the object to the action; that it would be quite as plausible to make other of these relations than the one which has been chosen for the purpose, the ground of the division: to draw the line, for instance, between the active verbs on the one side, and the middles and passives on the other (particularly as the whole history of language illustrates the near kindred of these two forms of the verb), or between the transitives and intransitives. But farther, if the verbal accent is intended to indicate the dignity and efficiency of the verbal forms, how does it happen that so many verbs active and middle, and those just the oldest and most original which the language possesses, do still accent, in the majority of their forms, the ending? why, while the imperfect lays the stress of voice upon its first syllable, does the perfect lay it upon its last, or its penult ! why, if the passive accents its formative syllable from weakness, does the causal, certainly the most energetic of the forms of the verb, do the same? Evidently, a rule which is founded upon a doubtful classification, applies to only a portion of the phenomena which come within its sphere, and has the directest analogies against it, is to be rejected without long hesitation: the real principle or principles lying at the base of the varied system of verbal accentuation have not been reached.

The accent of the vocative is another point adduced by our author in support of his law. This case in Sanskrit has the stress of voice, when it has it at all, upon its first syllable; "plainly," we are told, "in order to distinguish in a very impressive manner the name of the person called upon." To this it is a sufficient answer to say, that, excepting in certain exceptional situations, the Sanskrit vocative receives no accent at all, and that it would be a remarkable inconsistency on the part of the language to deprive a class of words of

but not one has been pointed out as attempting to mark the absolute dignity and force of a word, as compared with other words, by distinguishing any one of its syllables above its fellows. Nor is there anything plausible in the idea of attaining such an end by such means: it seems next to impossible to understand, to make the mind appreciate, how the drawing back of an accent toward the beginning of a word should be able to give that word an added importance in the general sum of discourse. It might, for one reason, be even easier to believe this of a throwing forward of the accent: it is a familiar observation, namely, of which those especially who speak the English language will not fail to appreciate the justice, that in a polysyllabic word the syllables which precede the accent are uttered with more force and distinctness than those which follow it: a full and sonorous pronunciation, then, at any rate, would be assured to a word rather by accenting its final than its initial syllable. Considering this absence of analogies or antecedent probabilities in its favor, we have a right surely to demand that our author's law be supported by evidence both full and unequivocal derived from the facts of the language. Let us examine somewhat in detail that which he adduces, and see whether it bears this character.

In the first place, he claims that a very striking proof of the dignity and efficiency belonging to the accentuation of an initial syllable is furnished by the fact that monosyllabic nouns, in both Sanskrit and Greek, lay the stress of voice in the nominative and accusative of all numbers upon the theme, while in the other cases it rests upon the ending: the former cases are thus, he says, indicated as the most exalted and distinguished of the series. This seems to us to mean just nothing at all. What is there in the nominative and accusative that entitles them to claim a superiority in rank over the other cases, what appreciable tangible quality, which could furnish ground for a distinction such as is here claimed to be made? More frequent of occurrence they are, indeed; and they express simpler and more direct relations of the theme to other words; but herein, surely, lies a reason much more plausible for the difference of accent, that the endings which express the more complicated relations have a greater significance, and relative importance to the theme, than the others, and therefore receive the stress of voice. When the theory of the nature of the case-endings, and of the manner in which they became attached to the theme, is more thoroughly understood, we may expect to comprehend better the cause also of the varying accentuation; but we are not called upon to accept in the meantime any such explanation of it as Mr. Bopp gives.

The next argument offered is that verbs active and medial do in general accent their first syllable, and that thus the energy of the action residing in the word is emblematized by its energetic accentuat least in believing that it may have preserved more of that accentuation than any other language of the family has done. Perhaps the time has not yet come when its system can be so thoroughly examined as to settle the question in all points satisfactorily, but it is clear that the subject is deserving of the most minute and searching investigation, and that in the meantime we have to look with distrust at alleged general laws, and see whether they are not put

forth on insufficient grounds.

Mr. Benfey, in his Sanskrit Grammar (§ 4), makes the characteristically bold and sweeping assertion, that the principle of the Sanskrit system of accentuation is to lay the stress of voice upon the modifying syllable, whether prefix or suffix, to the exclusion of the root or theme itself. He adds, however, that this original principle has been, in the progress of the development of language, supplanted in some instances by other word-shaping influences. To this Mr. Bopp remarks (note 35, p. 238) that he would have been nearer the truth had he said "in most instances," inasmuch as in the great majority of the phenomena as they lie before us the principle is violated. Mr. Benfey has not deigned, or has not ventured, to defend and establish his theory, but is content barely to state it, with an illustration or two, leaving it to the good pleasure of his readers to accept or reject it: probably most of them will agree with Mr. Bopp in disposing of it in the latter way, since it seems to find support neither in the facts, as a general law of secondary origin, nor in sound theory, as a primitive and original principle. For in the very earliest concretion of syllables into words, the accentuation could hardly be otherwise than a logical one, distinguishing the "radical" syllable; it would only be after a certain stock of words was already constructed, that the comparison with them, or the conscious and intentional farther modification of them, would lead to a laying of the stress of voice upon the naturally less important formative syllable, and thus introduce the other principle; after which the two would subsist together, and the application of the one or the other be made to depend upon the nature or degree of the modifying influence of the affix.

We have now, then, to examine Mr. Bopp's general law of Sanskrit accentuation, and see whether it is entitled, in view of its own intrinsic character, and of the evidence which he is able to adduce in its support, to be accepted by us as satisfactorily established. And it is not too much to say, in the first place, that the former, its character, furnishes no presumption in its favor, but rather the contrary. Nothing analogous to it has been noted elsewhere: other languages are found which have remodelled their accentuation upon phonetic grounds, or which have singled out the most significant syllable of each word to receive the distinguishing stress of voice,

farther to play, in illustrating the most ancient history of our family of languages. It has aided so remarkably in accomplishing this, chiefly in virtue of the freedom which it has always maintained from general modifying influences of a later and secondary origin, of the purity in which it has preserved its forms as originally constructed, allowing us to look directly through them upon the formative processes. Now we might hope to receive no insignificant aid in our last analyses of forms from the accentuation, if that too had been transmitted to us in unimpaired purity. What we may hold to have been the character of the primitive accentuation of a language will depend, of course, upon what is our theory as to the earliest growth of the latter. If we belong to the school of philology of which Mr. Bopp himself is to be regarded as the founder and head, we believe that there was a time in the history of language when it consisted only of roots, all independently significant, and that polysyllabic words and forms first grew up by the subordination of some of these significant syllables to others, their concretion, as it were, about a nucleus: that the whole apparatus of suffixes and prefixes, which are attached to a root, and express merely modifications of the central idea conveyed by that root, or its relations to others, had once a separate existence and value of their own, and that the method in which the combination into a new compound individuality was effected, was in great part the yielding up of their own independent accent on the part of some of these syllables: there was first a reduction of accented words to proclitics or enclitics, and then a closer fusion of the aggregation into a unit. Of course, in the growing together of such a compound unit, that syllable would retain its accent, and become the nucleus of the new formation, which was felt to be most prominent among them: the less significant atoms would subordinate themselves to the more important. General laws and tendencies, whether of a phonetic character, or such as Mr. Bopp thinks he has found in the Sanskrit, could not arise and exercise their influence until later, when the language consisted of words already formed and developed. If, then, we are able to separate a word into its root and the accretions thereto, and can be assured that its accent has not been altered since it first grew into a word, we have no unimportant hint given us respecting the nature and comparative value of its elements, as estimated at the moment of its origination: a hint that may yet be of the utmost value to us in accomplishing the very difficult task of thoroughly comprehending and explaining the reduction to their present form and meaning of the various formative syllables. It would doubtless be going altogether too far to claim that the Sanskrit does actually offer to us the original accentuation in primitive purity, yet the analogy of its other qualities, and the general appearance of its phenomena, warrant us

understood. However the Indian grammarians may in their theories assume the complete identity of the two kinds of svarita, there are cases where they are compelled practically to acknowledge their fundamentally different character. To illustrate this: if an acute is followed by a circumflex, no difference, as regards the notation of the accents, is made in the texts, whether the latter be the independent or the enclitic: the two phrases devâ's cà (ca being of itself destitute of accent, but receiving in such a position the enclitic svarita), and devâ'h svâr, are marked with precisely the same accent signs: but let another accented word be appended, and the difference immediately appears; while the câ loses its circumflex and becomes anudâtta (or anudâttatara), as in devâ's ca tê, the svâr still maintains its proper accent, and we read, for example, devâ'h svâr â'bharan (Ath.V. iv. 23, 6).

We must regard ourselves, therefore, as authorized still to believe, that the proper Sanskrit circumflex is a phenomenon of independent origin, resulting from the coalescence of an accented with an unaccented syllable, and that it should, in a philosophical treatment of the general subject, be held distinctly apart from those subordinate and comparatively insignificant modifications of tone, which are claimed to be the involuntary accompaniments of the accented

svilable.

Mr. Bopp claims that he has discovered the general law or principle which governs the accentuation of both Sanskrit and Greek, although prevented from exhibiting itself so distinctly in the latter language as in the former by the contrary influence of the phonetic laws. It is this: "the farthest retraction of the accent (toward the beginning of the word) is regarded as the accentuation of greatest dignity and force:" that is to say, the Sanskrit and Greek accent is a method of indicating the comparative rank of different words or classes of words, and its place is determined by reference hereto; the stress of voice being laid in those words which are deemed of most importance and dignity upon the first syllable, or one of the first. Our author lays down this law, preparatory to making it the basis of his comparative investigations, at the outset of his work (p. 16), and proceeds at some length to establish and illustrate it from the actual phenomena of the two languages in question.

It is in truth a matter of so much consequence to determine, especially as regards the Sanskrit, whether any such general law has exercised a modifying and altering influence upon an earlier accentuation, that we shall be justified in inquiring somewhat particularly whether the alleged principle is to be accepted as satisfactorily established. The importance of the question grows directly out of the part which the Sanskrit has played, and which we expect it still

a long t' assimilates a short i, rendering the whole result acute, a short i is allowed no representation at all in the accent of the compound of which it forms a part ! that, where the method of the Catapatha Brahmana is followed, and an a', for instance, is combined with an i, the tone of the stronger element is given up in favor of that of the weaker? In the more frequent case of the conversion of the accented vowel into a semiyowel, we might indeed sooner grant, that if the semivowel itself be left out of account, and not allowed any such vowel pronunciation as should qualify it to take part in bearing the tone which originally belonged to it, the independent and enclitic svarita would fall together, and have the same value : that in the word súar, for instance, if the ú were absolutely consonantized, only that kind of tone would remain to the a, which the a also of vi'ra, borrowing for itself a slight share in the higher tone of the preceding syllable, might exhibit. The Indian theory would then be consistent with itself, and would sacrifice together the vowel quality and the accent of the converted vowel. Yet we, on the contrary, should be fully justified in maintaining, from the evidence furnished by the Vedas, that it still retained a share in both; that the two vowels were pronounced together as an improper diphthong, and that each contributed its part to the accentuation of the syllable. It would evidently have a direct and important bearing upon the question before us, if we could find any evidence that the independent circumflex had been first noted and named, and its designation afterward transferred to the enclitic which a later theory had set up. or a more acute analysis discovered. Nor do we despair of the possibility of doing so. The etymology of the word searita does not seem to be as yet fully ascertained. It is now generally derived from svara "accent," and explained to mean "accented, having the stress of voice." To this there are two weighty objections: first, that no reason can be given why this accent should be chosen out to receive such a name, as if it were the sole, the most frequent, the principal accent, which it is far enough from being: second, that in the earliest grammatical language the word svara means very much more frequently "vowel" than "accent," and it seems that the former must be the original signification, from which the other is in some way derived. We might then conjecture that svarita came from svara in this sense of "vowel," and meant "vocalized, exhibiting the conversion into a vowel," as applied to the syllables in which the re-vocalization of the semivowel was necessary, in order to give its full enunciation to the accent; such syllables constituting probably nineteen-twentieths of those which do receive the independent circumflex. We would not put forward this etymology with too much confidence, but rather reserve the point for farther examination and decision, when the early grammatical phraseology shall be more fully and completely

the word sumanasyámánas, only the first two and the last syllables are allowed to be pronounced in the general tone, the na falling below it, and the ma being retained during its first half-mora at the same pitch as the syá: it might be expressed to the eye in the fol-

lowing manner: su ma na anas. Of these two subsidiary accents, the first, or proclitic, is generally styled the anudattatara; the other, or enclitic, is known as the svarita. Now we certainly ought to allow ourselves to be instructed by the native authorities on matters of such nicety as this connected with pronunciation: at the same time, we know very well the tendency of the Indian grammarians to over-refinement of analysis, and to pretty arbitrary theorization where there is any occasion or excuse for it, and are justified in examining with some jealousy their teachings even upon points like these. And it appears that the proclitic accent, at any rate, is a comparatively late afterthought. So much is indicated even by the name itself, which is a comparative of anudatta, and is, strictly taken, an absurdity, anudatta being treated as if it had a positive meaning, "depressed," instead of the merely negative one "unelevated:" such a derivative could not have been formed from it until its own meaning had become conventionally fixed by long usage. The Pratiçakhyas, so far as known to us (we have not access to them all), neither contain the name of this accent, nor any indication that its existence had been recognized. With the enclitic svarita the case appears to be different: neither the early grammarians (of the Praticakhyas), nor the later, regard it as in any manner distinct from the proper or independent circumflex which we have spoken of above; the two are confounded together as quite identical, and have in common exercised the ingenuity of the native theorists, which has amused itself with dividing them into numerous sub-forms, having each its pecuhiar designation. Their example is followed by the two German grammarians, who describe the enclitic svarita as the main fact, make it their starting point, and proceed to explain the other from it. In the union, say they, of an udatta with its following syllable, the latter having already through the influence of the former an enclitic svarita, the first accent is entirely lost, and the other takes its place, so that the result is a svarita syllable. But we must confess that this loss of a principal in a subsidiary accent, this sacrificing of the acute to its own shadow, this elevation to entire independence of a tone possessed of so little inherent force that, if a second acute follows it, it disappears altogether, and is replaced by the anudatta (as is the case), does not strike us as very plausible. Are we to believe that, when a fully accented & or o absorbs or elides a short a, the tone of the former is utterly destroyed, and only that weak echo of itself which it would have lent to the other vowel is left ! that, while

iting both the elevated and the general tone of voice within the compass of the same syllable. It is, then, identical in physical character with the Greek circumflex, and we have found a new parallelism, unremarked by our author, between the systems of accentuation of the two languages. There is, indeed, a grand difference between them in regard to the use they make of this accent: the one showing such an inclination for it as to make it the general rule for a vowel or diphthong resulting from contraction, or for a penult of long vowel quantity when not followed by a long final syllable; the other admitting it, with very rare exceptions, only upon syllables properly disyllabic, and composed of two uncombinable vowel sounds. But as the Greek circumflex is so named from its nature, and not from its value or frequency as a phenomenon of the language, there exists no reason whatever why, in a general treatise at least, we should not transfer the names acute and circumflex to the Sanskrit also, and avoid encumbering our terminology with new titles not

universally intelligible.

This comparison of the circumflex and the svarita has already oftener than once been made with more or less fullness, and it is a matter of surprise that Mr. Bopp should have so entirely overlooked it. Perhaps it is owing to the method in which the latest Sanskrit grammarians (Boller and Benfey) have treated the general subject of the svarita. Neither of them has followed the guidance of his Indian predecessors in explaining the physical character of the accent: Boller calls it simply a "clear-sound" (Hell-laut), adopting a title first proposed by Ewald (Zeitsch. f. d. K. d. Morgenlandes, v. 438 ff.), and founded upon an etymology of the Indian name which is now acknowledged to be a mistaken one: Benfey describes it as a tone midway between udatta and anudatta, instead of a combination of the two; both theories necessarily exclude any comparison with the Greek circumflex. But while in this particular deserting the native authority, and in some measure because they have done so, they have, in our opinion, suffered it to mislead them in other respects into giving an account of the phenomena of the svarita which is insufficient and unphilosophical. In endeavoring to make this apparent, we must first call attention to the complete later Indian theory respecting the accent. It is held, namely, that the sphere of influence of the accent is not limited to the syllable upon which the stress of voice properly falls, but that it produces also a certain effect upon the preceding and following syllables; upon the former the voice is said to fall a degree lower than the general level of pitch, in preparation for its exaltation to the height of the udatta; while the other, instead of being pronounced in its entirety upon the anudatta pitch, retains at its commencement a remnant of the udatia tone, so that the fall of the voice takes place in, and not before, it. Thus, in

forms are equivalent (when Mr. Bopp, p. 13, says the contrary, he is simply in error); in like manner acarya equals, and is to be pronounced, acari-a, virya viri-a: had the accent been originally sv-ar. ku-á, ácári-á, viri-á, the syllables would, when combined into one, have preserved the udatta belonging to the vowel which still remained the vowel of the syllable. But besides these words, of which the themes themselves have the avarita, there is a class which come to exhibit the same accent upon some of their cases in the course of declension. Mr. Bopp takes notice of the phenomenon (p. 14), but, not comprehending the nature and value of the svarita, is able to present but a lame and unsatisfactory explanation of it. It is, briefly stated, this: nominal themes, ending in an accented i or u, long or short (there are exceptions to the rule), which letters before a caseending beginning with a vowel are converted into y or v, receive upon the ending, in the so-called strong cases (Nom. Acc. Voc.) svarita, in the weak udatta. So from nadi', vadhu', are formed in the nom, dual and plural nady au, vadhvas, in the dat, and gen, singular nadyá'i, vadhvá's. This, Mr. Bopp says, can only be because the strong cases have a right to a greater fullness of form than the weak, and retain accordingly for the final vowel in such cases a more properly vowel pronunciation: that is to say, that nadyau is really rather nadi-au, while nadyai is and remains nadyai. But, in the first place, there is an absence of all evidence that the semivowels were really pronounced less like vowels in the weak than in the strong cases; the Vedas show them to be quite as frequently resolvable into the vowels in the former as in the latter: and farther, it can in no way be made to appear that a vowel is rendered less capable of bearing the neute if preceded by another vowel; that, for instance, supposing the case-ending of nadyau to be entitled to the udatta, the re-conversion of the y into i would have any tendency to take that accent from it. The true explanation of the difference of accentuation, as between the two classes of cases, is to be found in the difference of the point upon which the stress of voice really falls; being in the strong cases the final vowel of the theme, in the weak the vowel of the ending. This change of accent from the theme to the ending has extensive analogies in the language; so especially in the classes of monosyllabic and participial themes. Let us compare, for instance, the declension of na'u and mahant: they form, in the cases instanced above, na'vau, maha'ntas, like nadi'-au (equivalent to nady au) vadhú-as (to vadhvàs); and on the other hand navé, mahatás, like nadí-á'i (or nadyá'i), vadhú-á's (vadhvá's).

From this general statement of the circumstances attending the occurrence of the svarita in Sanskrit, it can hardly fail to be clearly apparent that that accent has been correctly described by the Indian grammarians, that it is a compound of udatta and anudatta, exhib-

that half a mora of the a itself is uttered in the higher key: the effect is the same; the combined syllable retains and represents the accents of both its constituents. In the much more numerous cases where an accented final vowel coalesces with an unaccented initial into a long vowel or diphthong, the same result, as regards the accent, might be looked for: yet the general tendency of the language is too strongly against the breaking down of the accent within the limits of the accented syllable to allow of this: grammatical theory does indeed permit the exhibition of the svarita in every such instance, and in a single text, the Catapatha Brahmana, that is made the invariable rule; but in ordinary Vedic usage, the accented portion of the compound elevates the unaccented to its own level, and the whole is udatta. A single exception is made: if a short accented i coalesces with a short or long unaccented i, the long i which they together form still retains the accentuation of both its elements, and is svarita: the Atharva Praticakhya expressly exempts from the influence of the rule the case of a long accented i' uniting with the unaccented vowel: the first element is there strong enough to assimilate the other, and the result is an udátta. It is not easy to see why a like coalescence of two u's should not be subject to the same laws: perhaps the case is not provided for only because it so very rarely, if ever, occurs; it never, at any rate, presents itself in the Atharva, nor have we remarked it in such parts of the other Vedas as have come under our examination. There is one more method in which a svarita is originated: when a final o or e causes the elision of a following initial a (unaccented), the former has its udattas converted into svarita; so indró agát becomes indrò 'gát. The whole phenomenon of this elision is not easily to be explained phonetically; it seems clear, however, that the vowel is regarded as in some manner absorbed into the preceding diphthong and made a part of it, and its accentuation is represented in the compound by the reduction of the voice to the general level before the close of the syllable. Thus far we have had only cases of the production of the sparita by the action of the rules of Sandhi: there are others, however, of not frequent occurrence, in which a word, as written in the present state of the language, has the svarita instead of the udatta resting upon its accented syllable. All such cases belong to the class of those first mentioned above, the syllable containing before its vowel a y or v; and this y or v is, no less than the other, a product of euphonic rules from an original i or u: the accent points us back (as remarked by Böhtlingk; Erster Versuch, etc. § 4.) to a time when the syllable was pronounced as two, of which the first was accented: it is well known that in the Vedic language these syllables are often, even generally, to be so divided in reading, in order to fill out the measure: so svar, kea are to be read su-ar, ku-a, to which the other

cepting in a syllable containing a long vowel or a diphthong, and thus affording space and leisure for making audible such a process; and this would be especially favored, it should seem, by an improper diphthong, so called, of which the two component vowels retain still so much unblended individuality that they are hardly less capable of exhibiting a difference of accentuation, as regards one another, than would be two distinct syllables. Now, for whatever reason, it is found that in the actual usage of language only the latter of the two cases, that in which the syllable commences upon the higher key and is brought back to the lower, has been recognized as calling for especial notice in designating the accentuation. Of such character, namely, the Greek circumflex plainly appears to be; a combination of acute and grave, udatta and anudatta, within the limits of a single syllable. It is not necessary to review here the evidence upon which this account of its nature is founded: the writers on the theory of the Greek accent, ancient and modern, so explain it, and without

doubt correctly: we pass to the Sanskrit svarita,

The svarita is said by Panini (1. 2. 31), to be a "conjunction" of the other two (udatta and anudatta), and its commencing half-mora is said to be udatta. Precisely the same description, in effect, is given of it in the Praticakhyas (so that to the Atharva-Veda, I. 17, says "half a mora at the beginning of a svarita is udatta"). Nothing could be plainer or more intelligible than this definition, and we shall not be justified in rejecting it unless the evidence afforded by the phenomena of the language should be clearly and decisively against it. That, however, is not the case; they rather speak conclusively in its favor, as we shall perceive upon taking note of some of the main circumstances connected with the occurrence of the accent. The Sanskrit svarita is, upon the whole, not very frequently met with: in the actual accented language laid before us in the texts of the Vedas, it is in the majority of instances the product of the euphonic rules, and we will accordingly first consider it as so originated. When a final i or u (short or long), comes to stand in the sentence before a dissimilar initial vowel, the two syllables are combined into one, the former vowel being converted into its corresponding semivowel, y or v: if, now, the final vowel has been udatta and the initial anudatta, the resulting syllable has the svarita; so vi and agat, on being written together, form vyàgát (to indicate, as our author does, the swarita by the grave accent). Here there is, in fact, no real change of accent : each constituent of the new syllable retains its old tone: the vowel is anudatta as before; the semivowel still retains enough of the vowel quality in its pronunciation to be capable of an elevated utterance, as udatta; and the result is precisely the searita which the grammarians describe. Or one may prefer to say that the semivowel partially assimilates the vowel, and

Let us inquire a little into what constitutes in general the accent of a word. The answer is readily given, that it is a stress of voice laid upon one of the syllables composing the word. But in what consists the expression of this stress of voice? is it simply a more forcible utterance of the accented syllable, in the same musical tone in which the others are uttered, or is it accompanied by a change of pitch, an elevation of the voice? The latter, certainly, as is allowed by all who have treated of the accent, and as any one may readily convince himself by experiment. It is indeed practicable to communicate the stress without at the same time raising the tone, but one must watch himself narrowly, and exercise some constraint upon the organs, in order to accomplish it. It is so easy and natural a process: the vocal cords being stretched to a certain degree of tension, the special effort, which expels through them a fuller and more rapid current of air, at once sets them vibrating on a higher key. And this elevation of pitch is even the more prominent element of the effect produced; especially may we suppose this to have been the case in those ancient languages whose absolute accent, or tension of voice, was so weak as to allow the quantity of syllables to remain the guiding and controlling motive in the construction of verse: there, at any rate, the accent will have consisted meinly in the alteration of the tone. This is entirely in harmony with the descriptions given us by the ancient grammarians; so the usual Sanskrit accent is called udatta "raised, elevated," and Panini and his predecessors agree in defining it as the utterance of a syllable uccais "in a high tone," in distinction from other syllables, which are spoken nicais "in a low tone," and are called anudatta "not elevated:" the Greek acute is similarly described; and as we can find no ground, either in theory or in the facts, for questioning the accuracy of these definitions, we may unhesitatingly admit them as accurate, and regard the equality of the principal and most frequent accent in the two languages as established beyond question.

How is it then farther as regards the circumflex and the svarita? And how are we, in the first place, to explain at all the existence of another and different accent by the side of the one already treated of! It is to be noted that the elevation of the voice, or its depression again to the ordinary level, may be not so instantaneously effected as not to be perceptible in the process, and may take place within the limits of the accented syllable, instead of between it and its predecessor or successor. That is to say, the accented syllable may be commenced upon the general pitch, and made to rise, so that (to avail ourselves of the Indian terminology) its beginning is annuâtta, and its end udâtta, or the process may be reversed, and its commencement may be elevated, its final mora reverting to the undistinguished level. Neither would be likely to be the case ex-

conjugation, and word-formation. And as the forms could not be placed side by side for the purpose of a comparison of their accent, without showing at the same time their other resemblances, the same work serves also as an almost complete comparative grammar of the two languages. Its interest and value are so evident, that we surely do not need to spend time in recommending it to the attention of all who give themselves to higher philological studies. We will therefore rather occupy ourselves here with the consideration of a few points of which our author's treatment appears not to be entirely satisfactory and successful. The chief strength of the work, it may be remarked, lies in its industrious compilation and lucid presentation of the external phenomena themselves which in the two languages under discussion admit of comparison; and considering especially how imperfectly those of the Sanskrit had as yet been examined and systematized, and how much accordingly of that preliminary labor which should fall rather to the share of one specially versed in a language, and which a general philologist like our author may expect to find already performed for him, remained for himself to accomplish, the success of his collection is worthy of all praise and acknowledgment. His general views and explanatory theories, on the other hand, are less happy, and seem to betray sometimes a lack of the clearest insight into the character of the facts with which he

This is notably the case with his explanation of the Sanskrit accents (pp. 11-16). He fails to make a distinct exhibition of his subject, and misses the opportunity of pointing out a striking correspondence between the two languages which he wishes to compare, It can hardly be said, indeed, that we receive any proper account of the nature of the Sanskrit accents. We are simply informed that they are two, called the udatta and the svarita, the former corresponding to the Greek acute, while the latter is found much more rarely, and only on syllables of a certain character; what is the physical relation of the two, and why the one is so limited in its range, we do not learn; the whole manner in which our author speaks of the svarita, indeed, shows that it was to him a mysterious something, of which he did not comprehend the properties. So he says, for instance (p. 13), that "from the circumstance that in all cases the searita extends itself over two vowels at once, we must necessarily conclude that it is a weaker accent than the udatta or acute, which falls with its whole weight upon a single point, while the force of the svarita is broken by its being drawn out over two vowels," etc.; surely a very unsatisfactory determination of the relations subsisting between the two, particularly as it seems quite as natural to regard that accent which brings two vowels under its sway as more powerful than that of which the authority is confined to a single vowel.

Slavie dialects, some, prominent among which is the Russian, have maintained down to the present time an entire freedom of place for the accent: but the Polish accents invariably the penult, and the Bohemian as invariably the initial syllable. The Lettish follows likewise the latter method, of initial accent, while its nearest relation, the Lithuanian, is unfettered, like the Russian. The Celtic dialects show an equal diversity when compared with one another, the Welsh laying the stress of voice upon its penult, like the Polish, the Irish upon its first syllable, like the Bohemian and Lettish. The Sanskrit itself was found to allow its accent to rest upon any syllable of a word, whatever might be the quantity of the former or the length of the latter.

Not to inquire at present which of all these methods of accentuation is most ancient, or whether it is possible to claim the honor of primitiveness for any one of them, it is plain that any particular comparative treatment of Indo-European accent is not practicable, As between the Sanskrit and the Lithuanian and Russian, indeed, ground for comparison might be supposed likely to be found; yet the two latter dialects stand so far removed in point of time, place, and degree of development, from the former, that on the whole but few interesting resemblances are to be traced out; such as were still discoverable have been carefully collected by our author, and are presented in the course of his work. With the Sanskrit and the Greek, however, the case is widely different: the remarkable analogies existing between the systems of accentuation of these two languages were noticed from the first with much interest, and have more than once been made the subject of treatment, although never with anything like the fulness and completeness which the book before us aims at and attains. The laws to which the Greek accent has been compelled to submit, limiting the stress of voice to the last three, or, in case of a long final vowel, the last two syllables of the word, restrict, of course, to a certain extent, the parallelism; yet so numerous and comprehensive are the forms and classes of words on which these laws have exerted no modifying influence, that the sphere of comparison is less narrowed by them than might be anticipated. It is rather in the case of the longer compounded verbal forms, denominatives, secondary derivatives, compounds, and the like, which, being of later growth and less regular formation, would not at any rate be expected to exhibit so close resemblances, that the probability of the latter is in advance greatly diminished by the restrictions imposed upon the freedom of the Greek accent.

The work before us then exhibits, with the clearness and distinctness which is wont to characterize the productions of its author, the phenomena of the agreement and disagreement of the Greek and Sanskrit accentuation, throughout the departments of declension,

V. BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES.

 Bopp's Comparative Accentuation of the Greek and Sanskrit Languages.

(Read before the Society May 23, 1855.)

Vergleichendes Accentuationssystem, nebst einer gedrängten Darstellung der grammatischen Uebereinstimmungen, des Sanskrit und Griechischen, von Franz Bopp. Berlin: Dümmler, 1854. 8vo, pp. viii. 304.

THE work of which the title is here given has been recently issued from the press, in fulfilment of a promise already some time since made by its learned and venerable author. It may be regarded as in a certain sense a supplement to his great work, the Comparative Grammar of the Indo-European Languages. Neither external circumstances, nor the nature of the case itself, permitted him to include the department of accentuation along with those of phonology and inflection, in the plan of the Grammar. When the publication of the latter was commenced (in 1833), both the rules and the illustrations of Sanskrit accent were still buried in the manuscripts, and it was not until ten years later that Böhtlingk's most timely and welcome First Attempt respecting the Accent in Sanskrit, introduced the subject to the attention of scholars, and initiated the investigations which soon placed it in great measure within their knowledge. And even then there was no good reason for taking note of it in a general comparative grammar. The ground of comparison was too limited: the various sub-families, and even closely kindred dialects had deviated too widely from their original and from one another in respect to accent, to furnish matter for extended discussion and statement. In the case of almost every one of them, some general accentual law had spread its influence through the whole mass of words and forms, modifying original variety into regulated similarity. The phenomena which the different languages thus came to exhibit are highly curious and interesting: they are in part stated by our author in his Preface. Of the nearly related Latin and Greek, the former had (not without retaining plain indications of an earlier different state of things; see Dietrich in Kuhn's Zeitschrift, vol. i.) confined its accent to two syllables, the penult and antepenult, and made its choice between the two on strictly quantitative grounds: the Greek allowed it upon one of three, the three last, and was but partially limited by quantity in its selection among them. The Teutonic languages have established in the main, and with but unimportant variations among the single dialects, what is called the logical principle, accenting the radical, or most significant syllable. Of the

symbols are themselves, too, each marked with a disk, connecting their cosmological import with the sun and moon as rulers of the heavens.

The symbolic forms of the two principles beneath the sun's disk on No. 2, strike the eye, at once, as identical with the so-called arrowhead and wedge of which the various characters of the cuneiform inscriptions, in all their varieties, are made up. It seems evident that the application of these forms to the expression of thought in

historical and other monuments had a sacred origin.

It would be rash to hazard any conjecture as to the absolute age of these cylinders. But, while the design No. 2. is evidently more primitive than No. 1., the presence of the sun's disk upon the latter, whereby it differs, as is believed, from all the discovered slabs of Ninevel, on which the other parts of the same scene are represented, would seem to show that both cylinders express the idea intended to be conveyed by such representations, in an earlier form than the slabs.

IV. VESTIGES OF BUDDHISM IN MICRONESIA.

In Horatio Hale's Ethnography and Philology, Philad. 1846, p. 78, is the following notice concerning Tobi, or Lord North's Island, which forms the southwestern extremity of the Micronesian range.

"According to the native traditions, a personage, by name Pitakat (or Peeter Kart), of copper colour like themselves, came many years ago from the island of Ternate (one of the Moluccas), and gave them their religion, and such simple arts as they possessed. It is probably to him that we are to attribute some peculiarities in their mode of worship, such as their temple with rude images to represent the divinity. In the centre, suspended from the roof, is a sort of altar, into which they suppose their deity comes to hold converse with the priest. The temple is called vere yaris, or spirit-house."

There is evidently in this statement an allusion to Buddhism, although the author seems not to have been aware of it, and although

the facts themselves are greatly corrupted.

Pita-kat, instead of being the name of a missionary, is the name of the sacred books of the Buddhists, which are called Tri-pittaka or Bedagat. The vere yaris are the viharas, or cloisters, of the Buddhist monks. Both of these terms occur abundantly in the Memoir on the History of Buddhism in the first volume of this Journal.

This vestige of Buddhism in Micronesia is the more important, as this portion of the Pacific Ocean is now visited by missionaries and intelligent navigators.

The applicability of this explanation to the illustration of the very similar device so common on the sculptured slabs of Nineveh, will be apparent to any one who recalls the latter to mind. One point of difference, however, deserves special notice. On those slabs, instead of the hand of the priest directing the effluence from the sun upon the tree, we have a basket held in his hand, which, as Layard says, appears to be of metal in the earlier sculptures, and may be so in all. This basket must be intended to denote the conveyance of the sun's influence, represented by the lighted cone, to the tree. A reason for the difference here pointed out is discoverable in the circumstance that on the slabs the sun's disk is not introduced; so that the union of the two principles could not be expressed without some such expedient. For the same reason, this union is indicated on the slabs, not by the action of lighting the cone, but by the action of

bringing it, after being lighted, into contact with the tree.

No. 2. is closely analogous to No. 1., but exhibits the same idea in a form more fully siderian and probably more ancient. In this, the centre of the principal scene is a fire-altar, with flames darting upwards from it; above which appear seven disks, representing the seven stellar orbs: the sun, moon and Mercury, Jupiter and Venus, Saturn and Mars. On one side of the altar, and a little above it, is seen a crescent moon. That the sacred fire and the moon, together, here symbolize the male and female principles, is partly indicated by the symbol beneath the moon, while the shape of the altar itself completes the expression of the idea. Of the human figures facing the altar, one standing and the other seated, the one on the right hand seems to be performing both actions, with reference to the sacred fire, that the person on the corresponding side of No. 1. performs with reference to the sun. Here the radiation of the sacred fire is plainly directed upon the symbol beneath the moon. The action of the figure on the left also includes the lighting of a cone by the fire on the altar, but in its left hand seems to be held a basket. This accords with the reason just proposed for the presence of the basket on the slabs of Nineveh, for on the left of the fire-altar no representation of the female principle is present. The actions of these two figures exhibit, in forms not quite identical with each other, the same idea which is conveyed by the two-fold action of the figures on No. 1.

Between the backs of these two figures the two principles are again represented by symbols which may easily be recognized; and over which hovers the winged sun's disk, darting its rays upon them. Between the sun's disk and the symbols of the two principles, and on either side of one of the latter, appear five disks, signifying, probably, the five stellar orbs exclusive of the sun and moon. These

VOL. V.

^{*} Nineveh and its Remains, vol. ii. p. 305.

Cabinet of the Oriental Society. Where they were found we have

no precise information.

No. 1. is engraved upon a cylinder of red jasper, with a hole through the length of it of which the bore is imperfect. It must have been cut with some instrument like a graver's style of the present day.

No. 2. is engraved upon a cylinder of bluish chalcedony, which has a well bored hole running through it lengthwise. This appears

to have been executed by drilling.

Both are very interesting, especially for the light which they seem to throw upon a common representation on the gypsum-slabs of Nineveh, hitherto not satisfactorily explained. The design No. 1. is said by Dr. Lobdell to be "very rare," and it is not known that either of the designs has been found before upon Assyrian or Babylonian cylinders. The relation of the two to each other, also, adds to their value. Taken together, they in a great measure explain themselves. But the researches relative to the worship of the cypress among the nations of antiquity, by M. Lajard, published in the Mémoires de l'Institut, t. xx. Paris: 1854, confirm and complete the explanation which mere inspection and comparison of the two very naturally suggests. The following is the explanation which we

venture to propose.

In No. 1. the centre of the scene is the pyramidal cypress, which represents by its androgynous nature the supposed union of the male and female principles in the supreme divinity of the Assyrians, or, as here, the female principle alone, which was personified by Mylitta. Over the cypress is the sun's disk, with wings, crowned by two serpents united at the tail, which represents the male principle of the Assyrians, which was personified by Belus. The explanation thus far is corroborated by the two objects delineated on the right and left, respectively, of the tree.* The human figures facing the tree, with heads raised to the sun's disk, and attired with wings, are priests. Their action is two-fold. They are evidently lighting cones of the cypress in the rays of the sun, and at the same time receiving an effluence or radiation from the great source of heat and light, which they direct upon the tree, or upon the symbols on either side of it. This two-fold action signifies the union of the male and female principles of deity, supposed to be the origin of creation.

^{*} Can the symbolic use of the device on the left of the tree have any connection with the established import of Y and YY in the Khorsabad inscriptions, the first of these signs being used as a determinative before names of men, and the second as an ideograph for "son of"! See what is said below, on the forms of symbols of the male and female principles on No. 2.

the fourth century, this traditionary etymology of the name Nakhichevan derives a remarkable corroboration from these historic records.

I know it has been asserted that a number of Jews emigrated to Armenia before the Christian era,* and established themselves chiefly in the valley of the Araxes, and that they may have given to the town in question the name of Nakhichevan, in order to give currency to a national tradition of theirs connecting Mt. Ararat with the ark. In regard to this I would say:

1. That it is a highly improbable thing that a comparatively small body of Jewish emigrants should have given an Armenian name to an Armenian town, where they happened to be living, in order to give currency to a mere tradition connected with their own religion, and that diametrically opposed to the religion of the country. Probably a parallel case cannot be found in the world.

2. It is still more improbable that the Armenians, while still heathens, should so generally have adopted this name, and connected with it a belief that it commemorated the event referred to, and that the remains of the ark were still preserved in the immediate neighborhood (as Josephus says they did), merely on the dictum of a band

of stranger Jews that had come to settle among them.

3. And even if this very improbable supposition were true, then it very naturally follows that the Jews in question really believed that Mt. Ararat was the mountain upon which the ark rested, which certainly must be regarded as a much earlier tradition than any that can be brought in favor of Mt. Joodi, in Koordistan, the only other locality which has any substantial claims.

III. REMARKS ON TWO ASSYRIAN CYLINDERS RECEIVED FROM MosûL.

No. 1.









These cuts represent in full size the designs engraved upon two Assyrian cylinders which were sent to this country by the late Dr. Henry Lobdell, missionary at Mosul, and are now deposited in the

^{*} See Faust. Byzant. Bk. 4, Ch. 55, as quoted by St. Martin.

On the eastern side of Mt. Ararat is the district of Arnoiodn L'alaymah, which name is composed of three Armenian words, namely, ma. ar, at, "by Noi, Noah, mah odn, foot, i. e. "at Noah's foot" or "feet," the singular being often put, in the Armenian, for the plural. The tradition is, that Noah, in descending from the ark, first planted his feet on the ground in this district.

Near by, in the same district, is a village called Argoori [phase h, from wph arg, the preterite third person singular of wphable arganel, to plant, and neah oori, willow, i. e. "he (Noah) planted the willow."

Farther to the East, towards Tabriz, is the town of Marant U mpuller, a name which the Armenians derive from two words, dingp mair, mother, and uliq ant, there, i.e. "the mother is there," the current tradition being that the wife of Noah was interred in that place.

But the most singular of all these traditionary etymologies is that of the well known town of Nakhchevan, or more properly Nakhichevan. In the Armenian, this name is composed of two words, hungs nakh, first, and holes ichevan, descent, or resting-place, i. e. "the first descent" or "the first resting place," which they say is the first place of abode built by Noah and his sons after the flood.

Whatever may be the fact in regard to the other names mentioned, this one is known by other than Armenian authority to be quite ancient. Nor can it be accounted for on the ground that the Armenians devised this name in order to give strength to their tradition about Mt. Ararat and the ark; for it is proved by ancient historians of other nations, that both the name and the tradition existed hundreds of years before the Armenians embraced Christianity, when they were heathen idolaters, and knew nothing of Bible-history. Josephas, as has already been mentioned, refers to this very place, not giving its Armenian name, but the translation of it in Greek, and also recording the tradition of the Armenians, then a heathen people, in regard to its origin. His words are: "The Armenians call this place the place of descent; for, the ark being saved in that place, its remains are shown there by the inhabitants to this day."*

The geographer Ptolemy, writing about one hundred and fifty years after Christ, speaks of the town of Nakhichevan, under the Greek form of Naxuana, which he locates just in that part of Armenia where the present town of that name is found. Now, as the Armenians were not converted to Christianity until after the beginning of

^{*} Arogarbijas pieres võs réses võros 'Aquinos salkõres' iset yap avacudelon ve lag-rakes Iride of Irrgógios va laidava Iridekoleri. Jewish Antiq. B. 1, C. 3, § 5. † Ptolem. Geog. Bk. 6, Ch. 2, as quoted by St. Martin.

12. ὑπλο σωτηρίας πυρίου Καίσαρος Τίτου Αιλίου 'Αδριάνου 'Αντωνείνου Σεβάστου Εύσεβοϋς ὁ ναὸς ἐπ τῶν ἱερατικῶν ἐπτίσθη ἔτους ὁπτωπαιδεκάτου 'Αντωνείνου Καίσαρος, προνοησαμένων 'Αριστείδου, Θαίμου, 'Οαιθέλου (!), 'Εμμέπλου, 'Εμμεγανηχαμένου (!) ἐπδίκων, Θαίμου, 'Αβ-

χόρου, "Ενου, Μασέχου, 'Εμμεγαννάρου Ιεροταμιών.

This inscription belongs to A. D. 155 or 156. The fifth name is so portentously long as to excite suspicion that two names may be contained in it, as Eμμεγαντάρου Χαμένου. The letters following this name seem to belong to ἐκδίκων, a word used by Cicero to denote the syndics or counsellors of towns in Asia Minor. (Epist. in

Fam. 13, 71.)

We find in these inscriptions a number of Syrian proper names which are to be met with upon other monuments, and some nineteen which are new. To the former class belong Abebus, Sabaus, Thaimus, Malchus, Salamanes, Gautus, Zobedus, Natanaelus, Onainus. To the latter, so far as I have examined, belong Aumus, Manus, Addus, Acrabanus, Ausus, Pasitheinus (?), Nenus, Anamus, Airedus, Naëmus, Sichmus, Bordus, Oaithelus (?), Emmeplus, Emmegannarus, Abchorus, Enus, Masechus. Some of these are readily traceable to Semitic roots, and even have equivalents in the Scriptures. Thus with Naemus we may compare Naam (1 Chron. 4:15), from py to be sweet; with Bordus, Bered (1 Chron. 7:20); with Sichmus, Shechem (1 Chron. 7:19). Would it not repay some one skilled in the Semitic dialects to make a collection of the Syrian names found upon the monuments and trace them to their roots?

T. D. WOOLSEY.

II. ARMENIAN TRADITIONS ABOUT Mr. ARABAT.

We have before us a communication from Rev. H. G. O. Dwight, American Missionary at Constantinople, on Mount Masis, as the resting-place of the ark after the deluge. We extract from it some Armenian traditionary notices concerning places in the neighbour-

hood of that locality.

The mountain on which, according to ancient Armenian tradition, and the general opinion of the learned in Europe, the ark of Noah rested after the deluge, is called in Armenian Wanton, Masis, and in Turkish غرطاغ Aghur Dagh, i. e. Heavy Mountain. This mountain is situated almost in the centre of ancient Armenia, in the valley of the river Araxes, bearing North 57° East from Nakhichevan, and South 25° West from Erivan.

COMM. OF PUBL.

μνήμα μ'όρης περικαλλές ἀοίδιμον αἰἐν ὁδίταις ἐστι δέ μου καθόπερθε πελειάων δόμος αἰπός -Ρούφινος δέ μ'ἐτευξε, θεοῦ δ'ἰδιητι τέταγμαι γηραλίους δέξασθαι, ἀτύρ νίον οϋποτε πάμπαν εἰμὶ δ' ἀλυπότατος κλιντὸρ, πάντεσσιν ἐτοῖμος νίασι θ' νίωνοῖς τε πολύ προτὶ γῆρας ἰοῦσιν. Αἰνίαδος Νεοπολίτης οἰκοδόμησεν. εὐτυχῶς.

In line 1, μs is unelided and οραις is owing to the stone-cutter's making the straight mark of E twice. In 1, 2, it seems necessary to read ECTI for EOI, and in KOTHEPBE, A must have been overlooked by the copyist, and O and B read wrong for Θ, which is the easier mistake in the second instance, as its square form in the rest of the inscription resembles B. For this form, the oldest specimens of which belong to the century before our era, comp. Franz, Elem. Epigraph. Graec. p. 281. For M in lines 3 and 6 resembling H, see the same work, p. 245. EHTΣ, in 1, 2, is a common misspelling of the stone-cutter for AHHTΣ. So perhaps in the name Abriados, which is unique. ΠΡΩΤΙ in 1, 6 is another mistake of the stone-cutter. In the same line ΣΙΝ must be supplied. Neonolitys is singular.

Was the cote for wild pigeons built to keep them from tenanting and defiling the tomb ? For the conceit expressive of a wish that all the posterity of the proprietor may die old, comp. another Syrian

inser, in B. n. 4598, where we read

βουλαίσε δ' άειζώσιο θεοίο γηφαλέους πάντας μάλα δέξομαι, εὖτ' ἄν ξκαστος τέρμα ποτὶ σφέτερον βιοτῆς πεπφωμένον Ελθη.

10. Αγαθή τέχη Θά[ί] μος Ναέμ[ον], Σάβαος Σίχμον, Βάσσος Οὐλπίον, Βόςδος Σα[βάον]] ἐπίσκοποι ἐκ τῶν τοῦ θεοῦ ἔκτισα[ν].

Erove ou.

I read Σάβαος for Σάβαος. The former name is found in B. n. 4626, and may easily be derived from a Semitic root, while B can with equal ease be confounded with B. (See the last inser.) A Bassus son of Ulpius occurs in an inscription found by Burekhardt at Kefr el-Loehha. Comp. B. n. 4585. It is strange that that distinguished traveller should have overlooked the present inscription over the castle-gate of Sulkhad, which he visited, and where he found the same name Bassus (B. n. 4641). The year, if of the Pompeian era, answers to A.D. 178; if of the era of Bostra, to A.D. 243. See Franz, in the Addenda to B. vol. 3, p. 1182, who there decides in the case of a neighboring town in favor of the latter era.

11. I make nothing out of this inscription. A few words, as

σύμβιον, έπτισα το μνήμα and τέπνον, may be traced.

In B. n. 4596 there is mention of a Theophilus, who τον Γαννμήδην έν τῶν Ιδίων ἀνήγειρεν.

Αίλιος Μάξιμος ἔπαρχος τῆ πατρίδι ἔκτισεν διὰ Ἡρόδου Ἡρόδου ἰδίου, καὶ διὰ Φιλίαπου Μάλχου, καὶ ἄδδου Ακραβάνου ἐπιμελητών.

What does to too mean ?

5. With the necessary corrections in the text, this inscription runs thus:

"Ολβιε άνδοϋν Φίλιππε δουκηνάριε τάξεως δουκός, δς μνήμα σύν αύλη (!) έκ θεμελίων έγείρας, άμφήρεψας σύν ήδεία παρακοίτι καί

τίπνοις είς πλέος απί, και Σαλαμάνης.

The word writen ηυλε in the original may be a proper name. As I read, the sense is that Philip, a ducenarius, reared the tomb with a court or open place about it from the foundations, and roofed it around together with his wife and children. The last words zal Σαλαμάνης seem to be added afterwards. Do they indicate that a person of that name became owner or was buried in the tomb? Salamanes is the name of a Syrian deity in B. n. 4449, 4451.

After reading what Gothofred (Cod. Theodos.), Ducange (Gloss. Med. et Inf. Græc.), and Rein in Pauly's Real-Encycl. have said about ducenarii, I cannot feel quite sure what the ducenarius cohortis ducis here spoken of was, and must leave the determination of the point to persons better acquainted with the institutions of the later Roman empire. The very rare word dugglosmas (if that be the true reading).

might easily be misspelt by the stone-cutter.

6. Αὐσος Γαύτου Φεωρὸς Πασιθείνου, Νένος 'Αβίβου, 'Αναμος Γαύτου, Ζόβεδος Ναταμέλου ἐπιστάται (ἱ) ἀνήγειραν τὸ τυχεῖον ἐκ τῶν τῆ[ς πόλεως]. Θεωρὸς may be a proper name, perhaps miscopied: if it is an official title we should read Πάσις Θείνου. Ναταμέλου ought to be perhaps Ναταναίλου. Γαῦτος occurs more than once in Syrian inscriptions, and the same is true of Ζόβεδος, spelt Ζοβάϊδος. Comp. B. n. 4518, 4519, 4604, 4613, 4635 for the former, and n. 4560, 4573 for the latter. The name Sanamus, as read by Franz in B. n. 4567, 4658, must, I think, be identified with Anamus of this inscription.

Alφηδος 'Ομαίμου ἄωρος ἐτῶν ιε, (or ε, simply; N being for I or

repeated by mistake).

A name Ovarros is found in B. n. 4559, 4574, and is perhaps the

true reading here.

8. I can make next to nothing of this. At the top appears και Πρίσκος ἐφίστατο, which is to be taken, perhaps, as following the last words και "Αειτος και Νέστωκε. Below ἀγαθη τέχη the name of some one ἀπὸ κόμης may have been mentioned.

9. This interesting and well preserved inscription in hexameters,

with the necessary corrections, is as follows:

- 1. THEPEWTHPIACKTPIOTKALEAPOETITITAIAIOT
 AAPIANOTANTWNEIN°T
- 2. ΕΕΒΑΕΤΟΤΕΤΕΕΒΟΤΕΟΝΑΟΕΕΚΤωΝΙΕΡΑΤΙΚωΝ ΕΚΤΙΕΘΗΕΤΟΥΕΟΚΤωΚΑΙ
- 3. ΔΕΚΑΤΟΥΑΝΤώΝΕΙΝΟΥΚΑΙΕΑΡΟΕΠΡΟΝΟΗΕΑΜΕΝώΝ ΑΡΙΕΤΕΙΔΟΥΟΑΙΜ°ΤΟΑΙΘΕΛΟΥ
- 4. EMMEIIA°TEMMEFANHXAMENOTEFAKUN@AIM°T ABX°P°TEN°TMACEX°TEMMEFANNAP°TIEP°TAMIUN

This is one of the most beautiful inscriptions I have ever seen in this country. It is now as perfect as the day it was finished.

Believe me, dear Sir, yours very truly and respectfully, J. L. Porter.

Rev. Dr. Robinson, New York.

REV. DR. ROBINSON:

Dear Sir,—None of the inscriptions copied by Mr. Porter in the Hauràn, are to be found in Boeckh's collection. Burchhardt visited the places called by Mr. Porter Hit, Sulkhad, Kureiyeh, Hebran, but did not notice these inscriptions. Most of them are intelligible; but there are two or three of which I can make nothing. I send you back the letter of Mr. Porter, to be published, if you think fit, in the Journal of the Oriental Society, together with copies of the inscriptions, corrected to the best of my power. I am indebted to Prof. Hadley for valuable suggestions.

1. Αβεβος Αύμου και Αύμος νίοις Σαβάου θειού το [μνημεί]ον

i moingar.

The name Abebus is found in No. 5,—there spelt Abibus, and in Boeckh's C. I., n. 4560, where it is Ababus. Aumus occurs in No. 3. I have written Σαβάου for 'Αβάου, because the former is elsewhere to be met with, and one of the sigmas may easily have been overlooked. See No. 10.

12. Μάτος Θαΐμου και νίοι αὐτοῦ ἔδωκαν ἐκ τῆς οἰκοδομικῆς ἐ * Below I seem to read Χειλίας, ⅰ, ε. Χιλίας, and then follows what may be και τὴν Σίφαν εὐσίβουν. ἐκτο κυρίων suggests ἐκ τῶν τῶν κυρίων. Comp. ἐκ τῶν τοῦ κυρίων, Β. n. 4523. For Thaimus, see No. 10.

 Πρόκλος Αθμου τῷ Θεῷ τὸν Γανυμήδην ἐξ ιδίων ὑπὶς Αθμου υἰοῦ ἀνίθηκεν. 9.

ΜΝΗΜΑΜΕΟΡΑΙΕΠΕΡΙΚΑΛΑΕΓΑΟΙΔΙΜΟΝΑΙ ΕΝΟΔΙΤΑΙΕΘΙΔΕΜΟΤΚΟΤΗΕΡΒΕΠΕΛΕΙΑΘΝ ΔΟΗΟΕΕΠΤΕΡΟΤΦΙΝΟCΔΕΗΕΤΕΤ ₹ΕΒΕ ΟΤΔΙΟΤΗΤΙΤΕΤΑΓΜΑΙΓΗΡΑΛΕΟΤΕΔΕ ΧΑΙ ΒΑΙΑΤΑΡΝΕΟΝΟΤΗΟΤΕΠΑΝΠΑΝΕΙΜΙΔ ΑΛΤΠΟΤΑΤΟΓΚΑΙΝΤΗΡΠΑΝΤΕΓΙΝΕΤΟΙΗΟΕ ΤΙΑΓΙΘΤΙΘΝΟΙΕΤΕΠΟΛΤΠΡΘΤΙΓΗΡΑΓΙΟΥ ΕΝΕΑΔΟΓΝΕΟΠΟΛΙΤΗΓΟΙΚΟΔΟΜΗΓΕΝΕΤΤΥΧ

On the right side of the entrance-gate of the Castle of Sulkhad, is the following inscription in rude characters, and now nearly illegible.

10.

ΑΓΑΘΗΤΥΧΗ ΘΑΜΟCNΑ € Μ CAΘΑΟCCIXMO ΒΑCCOCCOTAΠΙΟΥ ΒΟΡΔΟCCΑ «ΠΚΚΟΠΟΙCΚΤ ωΝΤΟΤΘΕΟΤΕΚΤΙCΑ «ΤΟΤΟ PM

The large and very ancient town of Kureiyeh is situated in the stony plain at the foot of the mountains, an hour and a half N. 84 E. of Busrah. Few cities in the Haurân are of greater extent, and none of more remote antiquity. It is probably the Kerioth mentioned by Jeremiah, with Bozrah and Beth-gamul (Jer. 48: 23 and 24). On an old tower I made out with much difficulty the following inscription.

11

GT€KNON€TXOΦAXPIP NOK+CAAANOM

The following inscription we found on a large stone at an ancient temple, beside the village of *Hebrán*. This village, or rather town, is finely situated on the summit of a lofty hill, S. 18 W. of the Kuleib, distant about an hour and a half. The stone now forms part of the roof of a large chamber of comparatively recent construction; but wholly composed of the ruins of the temple. We were informed by the old man who led us to the spot, that it was only lately brought to light by the removal of the clay and lime with which the roof had been covered. It is important as containing a well known date, and celebrated names.

5.

O ΔΒΙ Ε ΑΝ ΔΡ ω Ν
ΦΙΛΙΠΠΕ ΔΟΤΚ ΙΝΑ
ΡΙΕΤΑ ΣΕ ω C ΔΟΤ
ΚΟC Ο C M N M A C T N H T AI (?)
ΕΚΘ Ε Μ Ε Ν ω Ν Ε Γ Ι Ρ ΑΟ
ΑΜΦΕ ΡΑΨΑ C Ο C T N H Δ Τ
ΠΑ ΡΑΚΟΙΤΙΚΑΙΤΕ Η N
ΟΙ C Ι Ε Ι Ε ΚΑΙ C ΑΛΑΜΑΝΜΟ

The following are in Bathanyeh, a ruined and now deserted town one hour N. 37 E. from Hit. This is the Arabic form of the Greek Batanaea. The whole of the Jebel Hauran, from the plain on the North to Sulkhad on the South, with the exception of a narrow strip along the western base, is called Arah el-Bathanyeh (ارص البندية). According to information received on the spot, I believe this district is much more extensive than is represented in the Appendix to your Biblical Researches. It is unquestionably the Batanaea of Josephus. The ruins of Bathanyeh are about a mile in circumference, and contain many large and substantial buildings, with massive stone doors. I think it has never been visited.

6.	7.	8.		
AVCOCIAVTOVOCO	АІРНА	KEHPICKOCE CTATO		
POCITACI⊕ EIVOVN€	OCOM	VK EH < E < P		
NOCABIBOVANA	AIMOT	АГАӨНТҮХН	Nov	
MOCIATIOVZOB€	ΑωΡΟ	ΑΥΣΙΛΕΒΕΛΠω	KωM€	
ΔΟΟΝΑΤΑΜΕΛΟΥΠΙ	CET	ΑΛΑΔΑΠΑΝΗΚΑΛ	ONA	
CTVIANETEIPAN	ON	НТЮПІСТЮМАЛ	XO	
TOTVXIONEK	N€	XOCKEOCHBEOVKE	T	
TOTH		A CITOCK EN COT WPIO	AND .	

At the ruined town of Suleim, 1 h. 35 m. S. by W. from Shuhba, are the remains of a beautiful temple. The portice has fallen, but on a large stone among its ruins we succeeded after much difficulty in copying the following inscription. It appears from it that this is the site of the ancient Neapolis mentioned in the Notit. Eccles. in connexion with Canatha, Dionysias and others. (See C. a. S. Paulo, Geogr. Sac. p. 295.) The letters are well cut, but are now much defaced.

I. LETTER FROM REV. J. L. PORTER OF DAMASCUS, CONTAINING GREEK INSCRIPTIONS, WITH PRES. WOOLSEY'S REMARKS ON THE SAME.

Damascus, 27th April, 1854.

Dear Sir:—The following inscriptions were copied during a journey made in the Hauran by the Rev. Mr. Barnett and myself, in February, 1853. We saw and copied many others; but as some of them are unimportant, and others already printed, I do not consider it necessary to trouble you with them. So far as I know, those which I now send have never been taken, or at least have never been published.

The following are from the village of *Hiyat*, on the north-western slope of the Jebel Hauran. The ruins on which No. 2 is found

appear to be of an older date than the inscription.

1. ABEBOCAT MANOCOAIMOY HPOKAOCATMOT KAITIOIATTOTE MOTKALATMOC ΤωΘεωΤΟΝΓΑ TIOICABAOT ∆ωKAN€KTHC ΝΥΜΗΔΗΝ€ΣΙΔΙ WNTHEPATMOT @IOTTO ΟΙΚΟΔΟΜΚ Λ ONHOHICAN XVAACX€IA TIOTANCOHKEN ACKATHNOT PANETCEBOTN **ΕΚΤΟΚΥΡΙωΝ**

From Hit, an ancient town about one mile in circumference, half an hour S. E. of the former:

4.

ΑΙΑΙ ΠΟΜΑΖΙΜ ΠΟΕΠΑΡΧΟΟ ΤΗΠΑΤΡΙΔΙΕΚΤΙΟΕΝΔΙΑΗΡωΔΟΥ ΗΡωΔΟΥΙΔΙΟΥΚΑΙΔΙΑ ΦΙΛΙΠΠΟΥΜΑΛΧΟΥΚΑΙ ΑΔΔΟΥΑΚΡΑΒΑΝΟΥ ΕΠΙΜΕΛΗΙωΝ Turners and There of The service of The service or and the service of the service of the service of the service of the service or and the service of the service of the service of the service or and the service of the

TRANSPORT TO A STATE OF THE PARTY.

For St. — The silvering hardfulling was explained and the silvering of the

The fall lines of the time will are all lines on the territories of the contract of the second state of the second state of the second second

ABGRICAT THANGESTISSOT THRONAGEN THE ANTEROSTRUCTORS TESTICATORS TESTICATORS A SATTLE STATE AND ANTEROSOMS A SATTLE SANGE OF THE ANTEROSOMS AND ANTEROSOMS A

From Per as surfact to the about one rolls in commissioned built as here & E & Out beauty

MISCELLANIES.

Page 84, line 6, for مُحِدُمُ read مُحِدُمُ.

" 85, " 22, " مُحِدُمُ " مُحِدُمُ " المُحِدُمُ المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ المُحَدِّمُ المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ المُحَدِّمُ " المُحَدِّمُ المُحْدِيمُ المُحْدُمُ المُحْدُمُ المُحْدُم

2900 to howl.

to howl; also, as used in Koordistan, to glitter.

" 88, first line, for 25 read 25.

" " line 17, " The future, " The 1st pers. future.

MISCELL LANGES

```
Page 39, line 22, for coming before
                                    read coming upon.
                    023
     48.
             19,
                     1225 p. 63,
     49.
             20.
                                          p. 66.
     50,
                  " to string, as peppers, read to sting (as pepper
             5,
                       does the mouth).
     54.
             25,
                     may replied, read may be replied.
     55,
                                        LOUT .
             16,
                     400
            22, erase the comma after as well as ...
                 for Jak
     58,
            15,
                                 read
     61.
             15,
            20.
     63.
     64,
            19,
        near the bottom, after 324, insert 314 to be worth.
             1, for 91
     67, line
                                 read
                  " 2.925
     76, near the middle, for 2.55 read 2.5
     78, line
              3, for
                                read
            26,
             18,
     " last line but one, for
                                    read
     82, line 16,
                for
             3,
```

[•] In a number of cases appears without its point, it having been broken off, probably, in printing. This, however, is of little consequence, unless it lend to a confusion of and a. The former seems always to have its point.

CORRECTIONS.

5, lines 21-22, for modern language, read written character. Page for SCRIPTURE TRACTS " SCRIPTURE FACTS. 15, 16 pp. 10, 11 p. 13, Note 3. 12, 44 17. last line, 13, line 1. 9, 13, 15, 21, 1, 44 14. 41 24, lines 20-21, for what to me, ** what may be, etc. place a period after what. " line 23, for that may, read that may be. 28, 25, 6, 22 10, 27, 11, 29, 24, 32, 12, " 20397 15393 read 133 39, 17, read

^{*} The vowel - should never be placed on final 2, and wherever printed thus in the Grammar, it must be understood to be a slip, and the _ must be placed on the preceding consonant.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 2015, p. 86.

to be bold, to dare.

2555 to soil, be soiled.

2555 to snap (as a board when broken). See 2555, p. 86.

255 to be affected or moved.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 200, p. 86.

1505 = 1505, See p. 86. 1505 to howl, as 2909, p. 86.

[Note.—To Mr. Stoddard's acknowledgments to Mr. Breath, with which we are happy to unite our own, it is proper to add a word of recognition of the labor and skill bestowed by Mr. S. S. Kilburn, typecutter attached to the Type and Stereotype Foundry of Messrs. J. K. Rogers & Co., Boston, in recutting several of the letters and points, and making some important additions to the font.

COMM. OF PUBL.

زمدت	to dazzle.	במבומי	to make damp, become
	} to put out (leaves); to break out (as sores).	فهدم	damp. to graft, to be or become grafted.
	to spill (tr. and intr.)	פוגש	to dam up and swell (as water).
رسع	to dig into, to pick the teeth.	فرفع	to breathe hard (through the nose).
سدفت	to mix up in confusion, be mixed.		to wedge in, be wedged.
244	to tick (as a clock), to ring (as metals). Also used	فذفحذ	to snort.
	(in a causative sense.		to be or become consoli- dated.
بكذيد		وختم	to pave (with stone, etc.).
دُليٰس	to beat with a switch, to smart (as if from such a blow).	المسيد	to cause fair weather, to become fair.
	to pant from heat, to sob.	غسي	to have darting pains.
حبد	to be curved or bent.	عدد	to place upright, to stand upright.
ديد	to clank (as chains).	- Dub	to cackle.
جهد.	to make a hedge.	مكو.	to arch, bow down (with age) (tr. and intr.).
- 11 1	to tickle, be tickled.		age) (tr. and intr.). to reduce to powder, be reduced to powder.
جذف	to interweave, be inter- woven.	فوهم	to have colic.
	to lick up.	دسدس	to heave with emotion.
جمحت	{ to loosen (as a pin in its } socket) (tr. and intr.).	- 10 mm s	to shiver with cold.
2777	to trample down.	بمصد	to make musty, become musty.
مسجم	to make firm, confirm.		to beautify, become beautiful.
W 1	Paris Indian		to beat with a switch.
	{ to reconcile, unite in } friendship.		
G. Walley	to be a wanderer.	M	to sag, hang down.
-		Part Contract Contrac	to shrink up, wrinkle (tr. and intr.)
unlas!	to make to pant, to pant.	44 4	to be boiled to pieces,
		must.	to be boiled to pieces, fall to pieces.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 213, p. 64.

to fill to the brim.

125 to perceive (by the eye).

125 to snap, make to roll (as a marble).

125 to thrust. See 225 to roost.

125 to repent. See 236, p. 51.

LIKE , p. 66.

to go out, be extinguished.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 255, p. 69.

to indent, make a depression.

2 to be rooted out; when of 2nd class, to root out.

2 to bound back (as a ball).

2 to groan.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 700, p. 80.

to chew.

Solution to be pleased or gratified.

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE JAS, 1st CLASS.

to come to nought, fade away (as stars before the to reduce to ruins, to become a ruin. to reduce to pulp. See to reduce to pulp, become us to be courageous, to assail. 1 & 2. to abrade. to cave in, as a roof of earth (also causative). to be quiet, to be faint. to split (tr. and intr.). to prick, to pierce. to starve (intr.). to make to squint, to squint. to become silent. to slip out of place, to dis-charge a gun, to tear. to cement (cracked vessels). to suck in (as a leech). do to floor (an antagonist). to blow. See p. 81. to split (tr. and intr.). down to invert. to fade, bleach (intr.). See p. 82. sin to stick, adhere. Like

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE \$2, 2ND CLASS.

to hiccup.

See p. 80.

See p. 82.

to make damp, be damp.

See p. 81.

See p. 81.

See p. 82.

to make damp, be damp.

See p. 82.

APPENDIX.

It is stated on page 45 of this Grammar, that some effort had been made to note down as many verbal roots in common use as possible, but that most, if not every one, of the lists of verbs given were probably still incomplete. During the past year more than a hundred new verbs have been collected, which will be found classified below. Many of these verbs we have hitherto been unacquainted with, and every succeeding year will of course add to their number. We may thus hope to approximate in time to a complete catalogue of the verbal roots in the Modern Syriac.

It would be a very interesting and profitable study to trace the roots already written down to their primitive source, so far as it can be ascertained, and I had intended to make such an examination. But want of leisure com-pels me to relinquish the idea. This I regret the less, as every oriental scholar has the means of making the examination for himself. No doubt many of these roots have been employed in daily intercourse from remote antiquity, and yet, as intimated on page 8, may perhaps now be written

down for the first time.

An opportunity has been afforded me of reading eightyeight printed pages of the Grammar and furnishing for them a table of errata. The printing is beautiful, and much admired by us, as well as by the Nestorians, and the errors of the press are in general unimportant. The wonder is that, under the circumstances, they are not of a more serious character.

It should have been stated in the "Introductory Re-MARKS," that the matrices for the Syriac types with which the Grammar is printed were prepared by Mr. Breath, one of my missionary associates, who has from the first superintended our press, and cut with great taste and skill all our fonts of Syriac type, except in a single instance.*

D. T. STODDARD.

Oroomiah, Persia, May, 1855.

^{*} See note at the end of this Appendix. YOL. V. 23 A

وتعمد له ونحم دوسهد: حد فدهد مدفس ير صر نكرف كل فر من دول د كس وصوصد كمر س خر دور دول دسلمه مصوح: سلدًا فد كندها د تخدد: الله وه وخدد سعدة دوه وحدوده: ب ي خود مد مده الله المعمد المد الد مهد وصمعد عصداد فالمومن بصفعه: وكا تنعد و منودة. تنيلة كلا تصفيد. مُعدد وتدليد حد تمنى دميكات؛ دووتد ديغد مُنحدد: فيمُديم دور: طب حديد عد دم بدوره ؛ موديد عدد مرَصدًا الله: سُد فَكُسُنُهُ حَجَدِكَ : مَحَدُمُ فَنُعُد حد تماف حميد. حمم وافا صمد بمدار فلاهدف صمندمي: لا مُفد صُعُد وص صمعد تكد: دكد وص حد حُتَفَع كد مختخ دد مُحمِدة صمنط لخدندد مدر خدنيد فيد محيدًا صميم حيفظ وبندي: طد ولا فيد عديد نصوص وصمعد: خل كدلمصد تلافي وحدى خفنف حمصمك حفظ وغفي الد حد شوماف حديثا حضمت عنقد: الله دعم مع -- 0105

م كنور كخلصة. هَخَت دِنوك أسوته مورد المؤه ه موسد سعفد. نصد يك عفد: وَحَدَد دِس مِك أَدِيْد كِد يَكِد صِكِنَا: يَعِدُ دِنُوجِهُ. حَدَد حَدِنَا و مودد يكد كِد شِهِ يُحَدَد كِمَنْد دِنُوجهُ. المَد يك و مودد يكد كِد شِهِ يَحَدُد دِنْد حَنَود يَهِ هُمُوم مِنْ حمد حد هيد: هُخَت دِنْد حَنْود يَهُ هُمِوم مِنْ حمد

س دمهد دولستههد فتعد سد اسدف المهمد

حَدُهُ عِدَوْد. نُنْدُ نُونِد كِد نَصِيم كَوْدَهُ دِدَوْد: هُحُدَ وَفِحِدُدُ وَبِ هُكُدُ كِدَ يَكِدُ مِنْ مِحْدُد. فِيدَ نَصِدًا مَعِيدُد

مَا يَخْدُ بَكِرُ مِنْهُ وَهُمْ مِكْدُومِ وَهُوَ الْمِدَاءِ وَهُو الْمِدَاءِ وَهُو الْمُواكِدُ وَهُمْ الْمُؤْمِدُ وَهُمْ الْمُواكِدُ وَهُمْ اللَّهُ وَالْمُواكِدُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُ وَالْمُواكِدُ وَالْمُواكِدُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُ وَالْمُوالِي الْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُواكِدُوكُ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكُ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكُ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكُ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُوكِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَلِي الْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ ولِي الْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ ولِي الْمُولِ وَالْمُولِ وَالْم

مريخيد مرسوبا اهدام وموري وسوم المفا حمد وبوها والمحيد عليه المدار المدار وسوم المفا حمد وبوها

مر دون محد دسدب تخديمه: ونوت خصصملا: المورد لله وغدسمه: مغنس حجمدهد.

> בת בתם לצנו בחבבו منعص حم خلاد النَّا كُتِ السَّادُونِ وُحِدُا: الله الحدد ولا عليد

JOHN CHAPTER VII.

As some who may read the preceding grammar will have no access to our books, it is not out of place to transcribe a few verses from the seventh Chapter of John. They are a simple and familiar translation of the corresponding verses in the Ancient Syriac.

خُلادُ دِنْدُ حَسْدُدُا مُمَّا عَمْد كُم لِلْكُا: هُدُدُ ولا تُعطِ مَمْ لِي لِيهِ اللَّهِ عَمْد مُدِّد مُعَدِّد دروة ولا تكف م المناهم

و معدد الله الما المرا دِحدول دِعرة الم المنتقدة المعمد : عند دور منافد : ووا المعمود وسعد المصدوم فلسد ودديدود تما و هُخُدَ وَكُمْ لَنُعُدُ وَكُدِهِ صِنوب تَهْمُدُ وَخُصَفُدُ كره ومُما طعدُدُا. إلى تعديدُا تمم: صوب

وطد وسوطند

2

حد دکون جمسید دهر دهند تمکید: دهر دهند تمکید: کرد در در در محنید:

کیک حود جند سود: خو حوسفد هفد جسند: حصفتمند خود جسند: حصفتمند خود مسدد مصنون هودد وجند.

نے دہمہ دوک نند سُعیں: کہمیکہ دیمہد: دہند نے دہمہ یے کس: چلا فذیم مع کمحکلا۔

ئد چرده ونگرفه: وصعه: دموهشد فد شكته: شر وضعويد تقد حصمه: فقد حشوفد شيد. him him had Low may it be blessed. On receiving a favor, one replies land nod, where land seems to be nearly equivalent to Land may you be happy or blessed. After dinner, the guest says to his host and and it may God increase you. If one enters a field, he says to the laborer hand and it low may God give you strength. At the commencement of a feast or a wedding, the invited person says 12 20 to way your feast (or wedding) be blessed. If a host wishes to be specially polite, he says to his guest من كالمن يم the head of my eyes, you have come. If one inquires about another's circumstances, the reply often is the water want contact of from your wealth (or bounty) my condition is good. Sometimes he says "from the bounty of God and yours." An inferior. when asked by a superior about his health, often gives no reply except was your servant. A person wishing to abase himself before another, says costians of may I be your sacrifice. One, on seeing something wonderful, often exclaims 2011 Minaxxn glory to God! When he wishes to commend another, he says the lines may your soul be sound, equivalent to bravo.

POETRY.

We have made some attempts, and, as we think, not unsuccessfully, to introduce sacred poetry into the Modern Syriac. The language is sufficiently flexible and sufficiently imaginative, and we have already quite a collection of hymns, both original and translated. The following is a translation of Cowper's beautiful hymn, "There is a fountain filled with blood," which seems to have lost none of its beauty in this strange dress.

her foot is heavy, i. e. she is pregnant; ward 25 it fell to my understanding, i. e. I comprehended; cook your words, i. e. speak with deliberation; IL ILES 1000 the horse is cooked, i. e. he is hardened to heat and cold, etc.; lix 100 21 these how many years, i.e. these many years; الله عند الله عند الله عند الله عند الله الله عند الله ع on your neck, i. e. the responsibility is on you. So the phrase "on your head." She a scer of face, i. e. a timeserver; 2501 he has entered upon years, i. e. he is growing or has grown old; low 21 2 they are striking swimming, i. e. they are swimming; 2390, 29, sanctify the table, i. e. ask a blessing; you have gone out from your mind, i. c. as we say, you are out of your head; - wood sho 15 cosod your understanding do not put on his understanding, i. e. do not compare yours with his.

SALUTATIONS.

A few of the more common will be given below. It will be seen that some of them are rather Oriental than peculiar to the Nestorians.

One who first speaks to another says to thee, to which the reply is in peace thou hast come, or, simply, him. On taking leave, one says (of uncertain derivation), equivalent to good-bye. Instead of this, we also hear him remain in peace. At evening, a common salutation is how in peace. At evening (be) blessed. After a death or some calamity has befallen a house, a visitor says to the inmate has how hear had be comfortable, or comforted. When a man puts on a new coat, his friend says to

not understand it, is unable to accomplish it; عمر حده المعادة على المعادة ال I cannot with him, i. e. cope with; 2 2 2 2 the fruit has arrived, i. e. is ripe: عرص الما المام الما he did thus from the root of his ear, i. e. from necessity; שבׁשׁב בע בעמבסלה his understanding does not cut, i. e. he does not understand; كَتُوْدُ كُونَ كُنُونَ كُونَا مُعَالِمُ pour peace on that man, i. e. salute him kindly ; Los 1441 he went out, i. e. he turned out, a drunkard ; عنا مناع المعامنة المع will strike back on Christ, i. e. I will take refuge in, I will go to for support; 25 cass your pleasure it is, i.e. let it be as you please; 2500, 250 250 from great to small, i. e. all; 15 1 1 to strike flattery, i. e. to flatter; wooh's at calast you rose in his face, i. e. rose against, were opposed to him; with it reached my soul, i. e. I was driven to extremity; 2 cohor has the cold has smitten you, i. e. you have taken cold; Sweeten us, i. e. forgive us; كُنْ عُدِي مِن مُرَانَ اللهُ 1 do not break from that man, i. e. I do not cower before him; 22 our heart opened, i. e. we became happy; 225 your heart remained, i. e. you were not hearty (in the business), or you were displeased; 25 252 nt it is before the hand, i.e. at hand; 2 coads his breath is ridden, i. e. is quick, as of a dying man; Lack word his heart burned, often in the sense of compassionating another, as, my heart burned for him. So the Nestorians speak of the heart as boiling, cooling, freezing, etc. The meaning of these figures is obvious. Li Lia - - massis his knees are stopped, i. e. he is wearied out; 25 Thomas wast

idioms and phrases with which the language abounds. Many have indeed already been given in the examples used to illustrate the Syntax. Those which follow are noted down as they occur, without any attempt at system.

Lisors Jol ha Loudax his business will go upon the road, i. e. will prosper; من من من من المعلق tooking on my road, i.e. awaiting my arrival; いんちょうしんちゅう we gave heart for them, i. e. comforted them : 100 1 32 ha our he will eat sticks, i.e. be beaten; | Late care, i.e. took pains, or had trouble: You one lal a Line I am pouring (putting) hand to that business, i. e. I am beginning. This idiom is even used as follows: 2500000 121230 he poured hand to speak, will throw off hand from us, i. e. will withdraw countenance or support; the head of the nest, applied to the oldest child; they fell to the road, i. e. they set out; every sheep on his own legs. i. e. every man on his own responsibility; - 50-22 it arrived to his hand, i. e. it reached him; - 502-13 259s it fell to his hand, at times used for what comes accidentally. Sometimes we say La La La La La will not fall to my hand, i. e. I cannot (do so and so). 2 13 it drew much, i. e. it took much time: موهو he is black-faced, i. e. he is guilty or disgraced; 2 This is white-faced, i. e. he is innocent: L'as Los his head is hard. i. e. he is obstinate; كمن على عن من كا ا cannot enter before that business, i. e. I cannot undertake it: I am doing hope from you, i.e. I exercise hope in regard to you; and w 414 1 Loraxi Lax his head does not go out from that business, i. e. he does The phrases which are in common use, deserve notice. We may literally translate them: between me to myself, between thee to thyself, i. e. without any advice or help from others. Compare the ancient other respects to the ancient with the ancient of the respects to the ancient with the ancient of the ancie

CONJUNCTIONS.

Sometimes o is omitted; very often, indeed, in common conversation. a is also vulgarly substituted for o in such expressions as with the substituted for o in such expressions as with the substituted for o in such expressions as with the substituted for o in such expressions as with the substituted for o in such expressions as with the substituted for o in such expressions.

PHRASES.

It will be useful to learners, and not without interest to those who would compare the Modern Syriac with its cognate dialects, to give a small collection of the peculiar thee. So it is used for the conditional: 52 Lot 1 if there be to her, i. e. if she have.

It may be mentioned in this connection that such forms as the ancient all I am, woods it is not he, are not at all allowable in the modern language. Nor are all and joined with participles; as wallow.

ADVERBS.

Adverbs in the Mod. Syr., as in the Ancient (Hoff. § 147, 2), are often repeated, like other parts of speech, to denote intensity. Examples have already been given.

Care should be taken not to confound المنفذ , used as an adjective, with the same word used as an adverb. Thus, المنفذ المنفذ المنفذ ألمنفذ ألمنفذ means bring the other girl, while the expression على المنفذ المنفذ المنفذ المنفذة again.

Two negatives are very often used in Modern Syriac to increase the force of the negative; e.g. (1) 50 I do not at all know; we saw nothing; (1) 50 I do not at all know; (2) 50 there is none at all. This differs from ancient usage (Hoff. § 147, 4), but corresponds to that of the Turkish and the Persian. As an example of the latter take he sees nothing.

When there are several negative propositions in the same sentence, each verb should properly have its own negative; e. g. they did not rise and go out. Still, if the second verb be not at all emphatic, the second 25 may be omitted.

PREPOSITIONS.

The most important peculiarities of these have been noted in the Etymology. They are used very much like the corresponding prepositions in the ancient language.

PARTICIPLE.

A participle, when repeated, sometimes denotes the repetition of the action, or its continuance; e. g. liquid isome rolling, rolling, i. e. continuing to roll. Participles are often thus used adverbially, to qualify a verb which follows; e. g. running, running, go, i. e. as fast as you can; liquid language language, laughing, laughing, he came, i. e. full of glee.

Participles are sometimes used in the place of the infinitive, as in the ancient language (Hoff. § 134, 3, b), after verbs denoting to begin; e.g. Live Live they began plucking.

is not commonly prefixed to the participle in the Modern as in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 135, 5), and indeed never in Oroomiah, although we occasionally employ it thus in our books.

etc., the Mod. Syr. uses the nouns terminating in i; e. g. Line in the modern for hypocrite.

VERB OF EXISTENCE.

have, which we refer to indefinite past time, which is to be inserted; as in the Anc. Syr., to express the idea of possession, and that constantly; e.g. if is to me, "est mihi." When we refer to indefinite past time, is to be inserted; as if it is to be inserted; as if it is to be inserted; as if it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. if it is in order to indefinite past time, it is to be inserted; as if it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. if it is in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. if it is in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. it is in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. it is in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last; e.g. it is in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last in order to indefinite past time, it is in order to express future possession, we employ the future of the verb last in order to indefinite past time.

The infinitive is used in other connections without a preposition; e. g. مُحَدِّدُ خُدُودُ he went to bring, where in Koordistan they would say مُحَدُّدُهُ .

Here may properly be classed such eases as the following: 25 25 of while not yet arriving, i. e. while the person had not yet arrived; 25 of not at all seeing, the context determining who did not see. So also with suffixes:

wickedness until their perishing (Nordheimer, § 1030, 3); the perishing (Nordheimer, § 1030, 3); the perishing (Nordheimer, § 1030, 3); the perishing of the seed (Nordh. § 1030, 4, a); the perishing one (the same)? (Nordh. § 1013, I. 1). So watering one (the same)? (Nordh. § 1013, I. 1); the perishing of the seed (Nordh. § 1030, 2, a); the purpose of making bricks (Nordh. § 1030, 6, a).

Some of the above may perhaps be regarded by others as participles, the sof verbs of the first class being dropped; or simply as nouns. But it seems preferable, if etymology alone, or the analogy of the Turkish and Persian, as previously noticed, is taken into account, to call them infinitives. However, it matters little; for what is the infinitive but a noun, expressing the abstract idea of the verb, without reference to tense or number or person? The references above show that there is a striking similarity between these examples and those adduced by Nordheimer to show the use of the infinitive in Hebrew. They might be farther multiplied.

22

but coming he did not come. We have often prefixed to this infinitive, in accordance with early usage, and indeed present usage among the mountains; but it is not heard in Oroomiah.

The infinitive with \(\) is occasionally employed in the Mod. Syr., though the subjunctive with \(\) and \(\) is generally preferred. The following are examples of its use:

\(\) \(

some other preposition is used with the infinitive. For example, in the sentences above we may substitute 25 with

equal propriety.

As in the ancient lang. A may be used before the infinitive for the purpose of comparison (Hoff. § 134, 2); but in the common usage without any A. Thus, for Allo 12 is in Ruth 1:12, we may translate in Ruth 1:12, we may translate in Gen. 11:8, or use, if we prefer, the subjunctive is in Gen. 11:8, we may write they ceased from praying; list had a list we finished from trouble-drawing, i. e. from being in trouble, or from taking pains;

denote the purpose or object, not the result. It is not commonly used in Koordistan, where a supplies its place.

There is the same distinction between the words علم والماء علم الماء ال

The remaining particles need no illustration. and are identical in meaning, the former being used more in Koordistan, and the latter in Oroomiah. They correspond to the ancient source, as used with the future.

Where several tenses of the same kind are connected by the conjunction o, if the first is preceded by has, the others may omit it. So if has is prefixed to the first, it is understood with all. The same is often, but not always, true in regard to those tenses which terminate in has, e. g. has a low here habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and preaching, where had need not be repeated after habit of going and going and will call them, and (will) have a talk."

INFINITIVE.

The absolute infinitive, joined with the finite verb, is used in the Modern as well as in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 183), and the Hebrew (Nordh. § 1017), to give intensity to the idea; e.g. John 9: 9, where the ancient is intensity to the idea; e.g. John 9: 9, where the ancient is very much like, he strongly resembles. Sometimes the infinitive is used in a manner different from the preceding. For example, 124 24 25 did he not hear? To this, the answer may be as follows:

in the speaker or writer's mind; e.g. 2000 2 25 1, or, instead, 2000 A Links 1, if I am reading to morrow. 2, with the imperfect and pluperfect subjunctive, implies the non-existence of the action or state of the verb; e.g. if you should sicken (implying that you are not sick now), law law had . 2 if you had come up (as you have not).

As to the use of , it is important to observe that, like ut in Latin, it is employed in a multitude of cases to denote the purpose, object, or result of the preceding clause, where in English and Hebrew (Nordh. § 1030) we should have the infinitive: 2000 2000 Lorons was tell for him that he water the horse; 200 1800 he went that he might see; they drew trouble that they might find him (tried to find). Observe that it is immaterial, in this last, and many similar cases, whether we use the present or the imperfect subjunctive, each being alike contingent. The present would, however, be generally preferred as briefer and equally expressive. s is very often omitted after ر في كد ركوم كد ر في في في بعد وديد وديد , etc. For example, : hal do you wish (that) you may learn? 2 كلا كماحد كلا فلا it is necessary (that) you write quickly, with Le will beg on (of) them (that) they flee. Compare the omission of a in the ancient language (Hoff. § 130, 4, 7; § 149, 3, 5; § 134, 3, a), and also of ut in the Latin. The correspondence between the signification of verbs in that language which dispense with ut, and those in the Modern Syriac which are not followed by a, is quite striking.

Sometimes a clause is interposed between and the verb

to which it refers; e. g.:

خدم ولس لَتُعُد: ووه صوفد عمر خُرَصْ : فيعد وذيد كم which literally reads I wish that those men that I have spoken about them be poured into prison.

This tense is also used with a negative, to imply what ought not to be; e. g. كَتَبُولُ مَمَا شُدُ وَلَا اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ ال

27, and compare the Ancient Syriac.

Perfect and Pluperfect Tenses.—It is unnecessary to say any thing further of these tenses than that they are not much used in common conversation, the Nestorians preferring to state their idea in another and more simple form, which they can in most cases readily do. When they are used, they correspond in general to the same tenses in the Latin.

has sometimes been prefixed to the tenses of the subjunctive in our books; but this is not in accordance with general usage in Oroomiah, and has of late been nearly or quite dropped.

SUBJUNCTIVE AFTER PARTICLES.

Much that might be said under this head has been virtually anticipated in the numerous examples given in the preceding pages. The principal particles which may take the subjunctive are: علم و مدا و

So that is expressed by عَلَيْهُ ; when, by عَلَيْهُ وَ عَلَيْهُ عَلَى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَيْهُ عَلَى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَيْهُ عَلَى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَا اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَا اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَا اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ إِلَا اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ عَلَيْهُ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهُ عَلِيهُ عَلَيْهُ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهُ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهُ عَلَيْهِ عَلِي عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَاهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَاهِ عَلَيْهِ عَلَا عَلَاهِ عَلَاهِ عَلَّا عَلَاهِ عَلَيْهِ

As to the use of and and, the question whether they are to be followed by the subjunctive or indicative present, depends on the degree of contingency in each individual case,

is used for the future (Hoff. § 135, 3), which will account for such cases as that given above, viz.

and perhaps some other verbs, in their ordinary use, retain the force of the ancient participle; e. g. exactly now I wish, where the idea is limited to the present moment.

The present subjunctive is occasionally used for a preterite indicative, as was the present participle (Hoff. § 135, 3, b) from which it sprung; e. g. and Jesus saying (said); they said. In these cases, the modern usage is almost a transcript of the ancient, being written for indication, and indication.

It is not strange that these different idioms lead to ambiguity, which no acquaintance with the language will fully remove; e. g.
"our sweet voices let us all raise," or "we do all raise," or "we will all raise." The perplexity thus caused, however, is as nothing, compared with the puzzling expressions we often find in Hebrew.

The usages are so simple in regard to what has been called the second present subjunctive, that no remarks need be made about them.

In a multitude of instances, the indicative or subjunctive may either of them be used to express an idea; but the subjunctive will express it as more contingent, as is true of the German and other languages; e. g. کم مدب وابعت المناف المنا

Imperfect Tense.—This is often used as an imperfect indicative, in accordance with the use of the ancient present participle, joined with low, from which it took its origin; e. g. low passes low and Jesus was walking about and preaching.

mology a notice of this last form. This distinction it is important to observe; otherwise we may be led into ludicrous blunders. Thus, a man speaking to me about his son in my employ, says the will not be hungry; to whom I reply, he will not be hungry (I will do well for him) or he does not go hungry.

Note.—With the use of 22 and 22 in this tense compare 23 and 35 of the Hebrew, of and $\mu\eta$ of the Greek, and non and ne of the Latin. It is evident, however, that the resemblance is only a general one, and in the indicative does not hold at all.

It is to be remarked that we are not limited to the subjunctive present for expressing prohibitions, as those using the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 130, 4, c.) and Hebrew (Nordh. § 1006) were limited to the future. The imperative may be freely employed for that purpose, as the subjunctive may be freely employed for that purpose, as the subjunctive may be freely employed for that purpose, as the subjunctive may be do not go down, etc.

The present subjunctive may be used also in entreaty; e. g. בו בי בי I beg you not to lie; בו בי I beg you not to sell, etc. Sometimes it is difficult to tell whether it is a command or an entreaty, as, e. g., if I call to a man pursued by a bull, בו בי בו do not stop.

In familiar conversation the no of the future is often omitted, and then the form becomes that of the present subjunctive; e.g. Low you wish (that) I go, I (will) go. So Gen. 42:36, : on Low you wish (that) I go, I (will) go take Benjamin? So, too, lo or low of is often omitted; e.g. Low Low Low Living (coming about). Here a general desire is expressed to learn. With this we may compare the ancient present participle, which is also used for a generic present (Hoff. § 135, 3), as in Fec. 2:14, where we must translate the ancient low low low low. So Low, Is. 3:2; and many other cases. Moreover, the anc. present participle

mon, and in prayer is often interchanged with the imperative in the same sentence; e. g. hair 24: 25: 25 2 2 0 Lord, come and abide with us! Compare in Anc. Syr. 1 Kings 8: 30. Comp. also the interchange of the future and imperative in Hebrew.

let him find, i. e. allow him to find, or he is to find. In this case, and very often to the third person, singular and plural, and or wax may be prefixed; e. g. what can be them read, where as above we may have the idea of permitting them to read, or of directing them, the circumstances and the connection determining what is intended. South let me tell you; what can we do? what can we do? what can we do? if it be not true)—compare the Latin "ne sim salvus," may I perish!

The present subjunctive may be used to express a supposition, particularly if a parable, a supposition, is prefixed; e. g. which is prefixed; e. g. which is business, or let him finish, or grant that he finish, or if he finish. Compare the Latin "vendat ædes vir bonus," suppose, etc. So, too, without the word wife, e. g. suppose, etc. So, too, without the word wife, e. g. hour lesson, you will not go out. We may in this case say, if we choose, that is omitted, as in Hebrew (Nordh. § 991, 3, a). The imperfect subjunctive allows the same idiom.

The present subjunctive is used in prohibition, where the Ancient Syriac, the Hebrew, and the English would naturally use the future; e. g. Lie Lie thou shalt not steal; hou shalt not steal; hou shalt not lie. Would mean thou wilt not steal, or you are not in the habit of stealing, and would be an emphatic way of saying the same thing. See in Ety-

Pluperfect Tense.—This is sometimes used: 1. for the imperfect; e. g. צמל אלה he was weeping, אל הבל he was sitting. 2. for the passive imperfect. This is very common.

See Etymology.

Future Tense.—Whatever is peculiar in the use of this tense will be noticed under the Present Subjunctive. The second future is not very much used, a form of expression being chosen which renders it unnecessary; e.g., where in English we might say "before you come, I shall have arrived," a Nestorian would be likely to say

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense .- It should be distinctly borne in mind that what has been called in the Etymology the present subjunctive, is nothing more nor less than the ancient present participle, with fragmentary pronouns suffixed. The old future having disappeared, this present participle, with no prefixed, becomes a future in Mod. Syr.; with 2 prefixed, it becomes a future, or a generic present, expressed negatively; with as (ancient pas) prefixed, it becomes a preterite; with 20 or 2 prefixed, it becomes a generic present; and without a prefix, it inclines to retain its original present signification. Remembering these facts, and the further fact that both in Ancient Syriac and in Hebrew, the future was much used as a subjunctive or conditional (Hoff. § 130, 4; Nordh. § 993), we shall not be surprised to find these different meanings shading into each other in the Modern Syriac. The following examples will illustrate the very different uses of this tense. Question, 1 Not am I going? or may I go? Answer, his : 201 yes, you are to go, or you may go. The question may thus be either a simple interrogatory, or a permission asked; and the answer is to be understood accordingly. If the answer is "you are to go," it is really a mild imperative. Compare our English "you may go and do so and so;" when we mean "you must go." This mode of speaking is very com-VOL. Y.

The preterite seems never to be used in the modern language for an imperative, as in the ancient (Hoff. § 129, 6). It will not be thought strange that it is employed in such a variety of ways in the spoken Syriac, when we consider what an important tense it was in the structure of the old verb. Many of the idioms mentioned above give force and vivacity to the language. We are thus allowed to speak of events and actions which are present or future though definite, or future and contingent, as if they had actually transpired and were recorded in the past. On this account the preterite is often used in Hebrew in the language of prophecy. See also examples of its use in conditional clauses (Nordh. § 991, 1).

The other forms of the preterite given in the Etymology, with an animal state, library, etc., have substantially the same meaning as the regular preterite, and may be used in the same way. The first named of these is ordinarily employed

only when euphony requires it. See Etymology.

Perfect Tense.—This is used: 1. for the present; e. g. he has sat, i. e. is sitting; he has wept, i. e. (often) is weeping. This usage seems to be confined to a small number of verbs. 2. for the preterite; e. g. we have come (we came) long ago. This is the usual mode of speaking. Compare what is said of the preterite No. 2. 3. for the perfect passive. See Etymology, Passive Voice. Ambiguity may sometimes arise, as to the question whether the verb is used in an active or passive sive sense; but the context generally determines. We may translate, e. g., he has slept, or he has been asleep; he has slept, or they have sown, or they are sown.

i, e, I am choked, or I am drowned. A boy in recitation, if confused, will say with 2 alan it lost on me, i. e. I have lost it. Ask a man how his business is to-day, and he may reply 23 15 no so it remained (remains) just so. Persons coming to make a petition will tell us sale was we poured (i. e. we now place) our hope on you. Compare Anc. Syr. (Hoff. § 129, 4, b, c). Compare also Ps. 1: 1, in the Ancient and the Modern. The expression in the Ancient. من وكل مما كمين , Matt. 12: 30, may be considered equivalent either to a present indicative or to a present subjunctive. So Deut. 1: 39, 250 and that did not (do not) know. 2. Used as a perfect; e. g. Lai Mal he came now, i.e. he has just arrived. This is the common mode of speaking. So too, heard (meaning, that has never heard). 3. Used as a pluperfect; e.g. المنا دفاعلا ص rohen he (had) finished from speaking (Hoff. § 129, 3). 4. Used as a future; e.g. Lalas : 2000 gol As 2 if you died to-morrow, you perished (compare with the use of the first verb Hoff. § 129, 8, c, and of the second verb, same section, 7); : 2 and is no Lal so Lines if you believe, Christ just now. i. e. at this moment, received (will receive) you. This is no doubt an emphatic future. Compare Nordh. § 966, 1, c. 5. Used as a subjunctive present; e. g. 2506 25 2 if it did not become, i. e. if it does not meet the case, equivalent to Low 25 2 (see the ancient usage, Mark 12: 25, as follows: in which case the translation might, فد مند مند have been literal); hat a this initial a light if you went out (set out) now, perhaps you will reach: المعمد عدد معد الماد الماد الماد الماد الماد الماد معمد الماد الم § 127, 4): ! List and like him (his like). List is also now and then used to denote each one; as, list is also now they scattered, man (each man) to his village. So in the ancient language (Hoff. § 127, 3). But generally, when thus used, it is repeated, as already mentioned.

MOODS AND TENSES OF VERBS.

Though the ordinary signification of the different moods and tenses was given in the Etymology, some additional remarks are necessary to illustrate their use.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preterite Tense.—1. Used as a present; e.g., a man in distress says I died, i. e. I am dead; L' choked,

As in the ancient language (Hoff. § 125, 1, Annot.), it may denote the objective case of the relative. For instance, every thing that he may see.

In Hebrew (Nordh. § 907), as in English, and in Ancient Syriac to a very limited extent (Hoff. § 125, 4), the relative may be omitted; e. g. a house (which) he built two years ago. But a seems to be never omitted in Modern Syriac, except

when used as a conjunction.

It may be well to give a few examples to illustrate the use of the interrogative and indefinite pronouns, and the position they occupy in the sentence. We may say either ! \(\frac{1}{2} \) \(

Very often 2222 without the article is used where we should use, in English, any one, as in the Auc. Syr. (Hoff.

As the relative particle and undergoes no inflection, many ideas, which we express directly in English, must in Modern Syriac be expressed by a circumlocution. A few examples will be given below. Examples of the same kind may be found in Hoff. § 125, Nordh. Chap. IX. and Rosen. Arab. Gramm. Syntax, xcvIII.

1. Whom. مَنْ مُعَمَّ مُعْمَّ مُعْمَّ مُعْمَ مُعْمَعِ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَ مُعْمَعِ مُعْمَ مُعْمِعِينًا مُعْمَلِكُمُ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَلِكُمُ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَلِكُمُ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَلِكُمُ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَامِ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَامِ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمِينًا مُعْمَامِ مُعْمَعِمِعُمُ مُعْمِعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمِعُمُ مُعْمَعِمُ مُعْمِعُمُ مُعْمُعُمُ مُعْمِعُمُ مُعْمِعُمُ مُعْمُعُمُ مُعْمُعُمُ مُعْمُ مُعْمُعُمُ مُعْمُعُمُ مُعْمُ مُع

spoke about him.

2. Which.—كف مع والمناه على على المناه المناه

8. Whose. Line 120 120 120 the Nestorians of the mountains, that (men) plunder their cattle.

- 4. Place where.— مَرَ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدِّدُ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدِّدُ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدُّدُ مُحَدِّدُ مُحْدُّدُ مُحْدُّدُ مُحْدُّدُ مُحْدُّدُ مُحْدُّدُ مُحْدُونُ مُعْدُمُ مُولًا مُعْدُمُ مُعْمُ مُعْدُمُ مُعْمُونُ مُ مُعْمُ مُ مُعْمُ مُ مُعْمُ مُ مُعْمُ مُ مُعْمُ مُ مُ
- 5. Whither. مواد در المعالم المعالم the vineyard that you went into it.
- 6. Hither.—1525 Lan ox that we brought hither.
- 7. Whence. - or it. it is a well that they were drawn from it.
- 8. When.—16th to Wax law wow 25 a day that in it I was lord of business, i. e. busy.

In some of the preceding cases, a may express the idea without the pronoun or adverb following. Thus, for "a day," etc., we may say 200 (2012). there being an ellipsis of 2002.

he, his mercies are many; Luci is but we, they blame us. See Matt. 26: 11, and compare the ancient version. See also Hoff. § 121, 1.

It is to be noted that the very common idiom of the ancient language and the Hebrew, by which the pronoun takes the place of the substantive verb, finds no favor in the Modern Syr., in Oroomiah at least, though it is said to be heard sometimes in Koordistan (Hoff. § 121, 2). Nor is on used pleonastically in the modern as in the ancient language (Hoff. § 123, 1); e.g. how in the source of the pronounce of the pronounce of the substantial properties of the pronounce of the pronou

The governing noun in the modern as well as in the ancient language (Hoff. § 122, 2), may take the suffix which seems more properly to belong to the noun which it governs; e. g. **Language* your way of evil, or **Line* your death of the body, or **Line* your death of the body, or It is a universal practice to use pleonastically the suffix pronoun, followed immediately by the noun to which it refers. Thus, **Language* Your death of the woman; **Line* You we drove them away, the men. Compare the ancient **Grand Your death of the woman; **Line* You we drove them away, the men. Compare the ancient **Grand You way, the men. Compare the pronoun is used or not. In Hebrew, this has been considered an emphatic suffix (Nordh. § 866, 2, a), but we do not so regard it as used by the Nestorians.

On the other hand, the suffix is entirely omitted when the meaning is sufficiently plain without it; e.g. 2542

he came and told (it) for me.

This leads to the employment or omission of prepositions, in a way very different from the usages of our own language; e. g. Lib sold you filled the vessel (with) water; where the Syriac also admits of s or s; Lib sold to look the entered from (by) the door; woods we told for him; he touched on us; where the syriac also admits of s or s; Lib sold for him; he touched on us; where the syriac also admits of s or s; Lib sold for him; he touched on us; where the syriac also admits of s or si lib sold for him; he touched on us; he touched on us; he touched from my hand, i. e. he kissed my hand. The modern language is, however, no more unlike the English in these respects than the ancient.

PRONOUNS.

The nominatives 21, 21, etc., are not generally expressed before the verb, unless for the sake of specification or emphasis, as the terminations of the verb prevent all ambiguity in regard to number and person. When emphasis is required, these pronouns are oftener placed after the verb than before it; e. g. 121 200 what am I to do, I? 121 200 did you tell, you? Sometimes the pronoun both precedes and follows: we will go, we too.

The pronoun is often employed as an absolute nominative, in the same manner as nouns; e.g., with the impersonal verb of existence, which is not to me, i.e. I have not; house there will not be to you opportunity; life is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not; house is not to me, i.e. I have not is not to me.

OBJECT OF THE VERB.

may also denote, as in Anc. Syr. (Hoff. § 114, 1), the same relation as the dative in Western languages; e. g. I did service to the Khan; if did service to the Khan; give to him that apple. In this last example, which for him would be perhaps more common. The idea may also be expressed without any preposition, as in Anc. Syr. (Hoff. §122, 1):

Some verbs, as e. g. those of naming, clothing, anointing, asking, commanding, feeding, teaching, telling, filling, etc., are often followed by two objects, of which one generally, though not always, signifies a person. The noun denoting a person may have a prefixed, but the other noun very rarely takes it, if at all; e. g. Link and link and link this my son I will call him David; he field we will make it a vineyard. The ancient language has very nearly the same usage (Hoff. § 141, 4, 5).

It may be well to remark that in many cases, where in English and other Western languages an object is viewed as direct, in Syriac it is regarded as indirect, and vice versa.

20

On the other hand, the nominative is omitted altogether, when regarded as indefinite; as, for example, when list or list might be supplied. This usage, not uncommon in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 138, 4), is far more common in the Modern, and is a substitute, as mentioned in the Etymology, for the passive verb; e. g. Annual of the men oppress us, i. e. we are oppressed.

PREDICATE NOMINATIVE.

The proper place for the predicate nominative, with its qualifying words, is between the subject nominative and its verb; e. g. Lail hood Lail hood drunkenness is great folly. The rule, however, is variable. We may say, with a kind of emphasis, hood Lail hood; the change of the usual construction, as in other cases, giving more force to the words.

VERB 200 TO BE.

Note.—The verb of existence is not omitted with the corresponding words and and on a nor always with his corresponding words are a remark, often says some your word, for the says of the says some word, for the says of the says some word.

it was a fear to us, i. e. we were afraid. If the origin of the preterite tense has been correctly explained in the Etymology, we have in this example a curious reduplication, as will be seen by spelling with final of,

. ودد کره کے

The feminine is in such cases always preferred; and yet, when translating from Anc. Syr., which uses the masculine as well as the feminine verb impersonally (Hoff. § 138, 3), we have sometimes followed that, rather than the spoken language; e. g. Matt. 13: 40. See the same use of the feminine verb as an impersonal in Hebrew (Nordh. § 737, 2). Indeed, this disrespectful use of the feminine gender for an indefinite thing, results from the ideas of Orientals.

Nore.—2100 12, in which case the verb is used impersonally and in the masculine, is hardly an exception to the general rule, as it has almost lost its power as a verb, like if = gif = give, in English.

In this connection may be mentioned such expressions as 150 there became to me a heart, 150 there became to me a heart, where the verb seems first to be used impersonally, and then a masculine nominative to come in as an after-thought. This change of construction is not without its force, and may be at times preferable to the regular form.

The nominative absolute is very common in Modern Syriac, sometimes used emphatically, and sometimes without any such design; e. g. 2222 off: 2022 Christ, he is mighty, which is a sometimes without any such design; e. g. 2222 off: 2022 your father, his hand will guide you, 2022 no off 2022 your father, his lacob, he also will go. In these cases, it is emphatic; but it can hardly be considered so in the following example: 2061 2022 the rivers, their course would change, which is simply saying, 'the course of the rivers would change.' See the same idiom in Anc. Syr. (Hoff. § 119), in Hebrew (Nordh. § 866, 1, b.), and in other languages.

construction may, however, be employed for emphasis; e.g.

In regard to the demonstrative adjective pronouns, when used to qualify nouns, they are always placed before their nouns; e. g. 2512 this dog, 2512 these donkeys, 2512 2512 to this wicked man. When the construction is different, we have followed the idiom of the Ancient Syriac or the Hebrew (Hoff. § 118, and Nordh. § 884).

Cardinals also uniformly precede their nouns; in which respect the Modern Syriae is unlike the Ancient (Hoff. § 117, 1). In the latter language they sometimes precede, sometimes follow. The Modern resembles more the Hebrew (Nordh. § 935) and English. In this also we have at times changed the idiom, as Gen. 11: 1. Such expressions as in the ancient language would not now be at all allowable.

SUBJECT NOMINATIVE AND VERB.

In general, the verb agrees with its subject nominative in number and person. There are, however, constructions ad sensum, as in the Ancient Syriac and most other languages, the mere grammatical form being neglected (Hoff. § 137).

When the subject nominative is of different persons, the rule found in Latin, Greek, and other languages, has place, that the first person is preferred to the second, and the second to the third. Thus, will also his you and I will go, will one his you and he came.

ADJECTIVES.

A few adjectives more naturally precede their nouns; e. g. 15, ... , etc., the latter being called an adjective, though in reality a noun (Nord. § 725, 1). Thus, namy horses, 15, 1 ... a good tree. In these cases 15, 2000 and 2000 allowable.

An adjective may be placed before its noun to give increased emphasis; e. g. 1512 1501 155 a very great stone. Another mode of giving emphasis, is to place the adjective at the head of the clause, and, after a brief pause, to repeat it; e. g. 1212 122 122 122 123 124 1260 1260 quick to learn, he is quick to learn; but wicked, he is wicked.

A qualifying adjective in the modern language cannot be separated, as in the ancient (Hoff. § 118, Annot. 2), from its noun by words such as , etc.

An adjective used as a predicate is also almost always placed after the noun or pronoun to which it refers; e. g. the bread is sour. The ancient language generally places the adjective before its substantive in such a case (Hoff. § 118, 2). So the Hebrew (Nordh. § 772). An inversion of the ordinary

the preposition of in English. This a is omitted in expressions such as 2212 and what kind (of) man, not only a what kind (of) man, not only a what kind (of) man, not only of the Persian and Turkish. Though educated Nestorians generally speak with grammatical correctness, it may be worth while to note as an exception the almost universal use of a si if it were the singular and not the plural; e.g. 2016 and he is a son (i. e. inhabitant) of Degala.

Nouns, as well as other words, are often repeated: (a.) to denote distribution or variety; e. g. 156 156 kinds, kinds, i. e. different kinds; 145 245 colors, colors, i. e. different colors; so with numerals: 166 246 one, one time, i. e. now and then; so adverbs: 166 266 slowly, slowly, i. e. little by little; (b.) to give intensity; e. g. 166 266 fragments, fragments, i. e., as we should say, a thousand fragments; 166 266 exceedingly, 166 very little indeed; (c.) to supply the place of each, each one; e. g. 166 266 man, man, i. e. each man. This last usage is rather borrowed from the ancient language than commonly heard, but we allow it a place in our books. In regard to the general idiom, compare the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 112, 2), and the Hebrew (Nordh. § 823).

There is also a curious, though perhaps vulgar, repetition of nouns, which is common to the Persian, Turkish, Armenian, and perhaps other languages of the East. In the repetition is substituted for the first letter of the word, if it begin with a consonant, or is prefixed, if it begin with a vowel. The idea is thus generalized; e. g. from dirt, we have have dirt and every thing of that sort; from him minute, him the every little thing, e. g. him him the pure on the trifles of the world.

be omitted: ! Lisols Gale list did you see (a i. e. any) man on the way? Sometimes the employment or omission of it is optional; e. g. list loop li loop he brought a horse to sell, literally, for selling, or loop list loop list.

Sometimes عدد a thing is annexed to another noun with much the force of an indefinite article; for example, did you see a dog? We should suppose this to mean did you see a dog or any thing of the kind? but the natives translate it as above.

In accordance with English usage, general nouns denoting material, such as wood, silver, etc., abstract nouns, and nouns with a suffix pronoun, as who we my house, do not take

the indefinite article.

RELATION OF NOUNS TO NOUNS.

The usages of the Modern Syriac in regard to apposition, the government of one noun by another, etc., are so simple that it is unnecessary to dwell on them. Two or three peculiarities only will be noticed.

The noun side sometimes follows another noun in construction, to denote direction; e. g. 250 to the city-side, i. e. in the direction of the city; so 250 to the from the vicinity of the city. The word is also used figuratively; e. g. 250 to trespect to bread.

There is an elliptical mode of speaking in common use, which will be understood by one or two examples. Thus, 22 2 2 2 2 a boy, a pen he has, i. e. each one has one.

It has been already mentioned that the construct state is still employed to some extent, though the tendency is to dispense with it altogether, and use a in its stead, as we use tempt me; : مرکد المرکد المرک

Even in cases where the article in English denotes preeminence, as the sun, the sky, the world, etc., the Syriac

omits it.

Nore.—It need hardly perhaps be remarked that an adjective used as a predicate never takes the article. This is of course founded on the general principles of language, the predicate adjective being abstract and in some degree indefinite. Thus, in Hebrew, Greek and English it does not take the article; in Anc. Syriac it does not take the emphatic state (Hoff. § 118, 2); in German, Greek, etc. it is not necessarily inflected to agree with its noun. This is also true to some extent in Modern Syriac. Thus, we may say, for "These men are free," either 21 2391 1231 or 21 2991 2231 232; in the latter case the adjective being in the singular.

The suffix-pronoun sometimes in a manner supplies the place of the definite article in English; e. g. all of it (the) house, the whole house, while denotes any house, every house. So in Anc. Syr. (Hoff. §123, 4). See both constructions in Rom. 3:19, 2202 and 2202.

SYNTAX.

It is by no means proposed here to reduce to a complete system the Syntax of the Modern Syriac; but merely to direct attention to some of its principal features. It may be stated, in general, that the relations in which words stand to each other are extremely simple, and present no serious obstacle to the acquisition of the language. The Nestorians rarely use long or involved sentences; and, indeed, the deficiency of their language in particles, compared with our own, almost precludes their doing so. While the structure of the language is thus unfitted for philosophical or mathematical precision, it is in many respects an excellent language for the business of every-day life, and we have no reason to complain that, as spoken by educated natives, it greatly lacks either dignity or force. It may also be added, that, considering the scantiness of its vocabulary, we are obliged to use circumlocutions less than would be expected.

THE ARTICLE.

It should be understood, as has been already intimated, that there is no emphatic state of nouns in the Modern Syriac, supplying in some degree the place of a definite article. Indeed, multitudes of nouns have taken the emphatic state as their ordinary form, and there is a strong tendency to suffix 2 to all nouns which are derived from other languages; e.g. Turkish [?] U, Modern Syriac a buffalo; Persian , Modern Syriac wordled milk; Arabic , Modern Syriac poor.

In general, the pronouns of, of and wil are used for the definite article, but with far less latitude than in Hebrew. They are also omitted in multitudes of cases where the is employed in English; e. g. : oof with lines were (the) men of (the) village there? when (the) world times in (the) day; when (the) world

CONJUNCTIONS.

342	P.	if.	حرون	A	in that, because.	بفسف		or.
901	4.	also,	خذم		nevertheless.	+		either.
€2	٨.	88.	1000	r.	then, therefore.	حميخد	P.	because.
25-2		but.	9 4	1	hat, in order that; cometimes because, as John 4: 22).	محددوا	4.	yet, but
252	٨.	but (åssa).	4.4		that not, lest.	1		than.
		if.	15	T.	also.	and the second		because.
		if not, un-	70	P.	ulso.	and the second		although.
		although.		A	and.	2 70	1	for that, in order that.
	AT	. r. but, but	29	K	, also.	old Muser		

INTERJECTIONS.

It should be understood that these interjections are not all classical, and that some of them may be called vulgar. But they are most of them in every-day use, and it is well to be acquainted with them.

22 why, pretty well!	₹2 hush!	pash on!
of not I! Oh!	well done!	tush!
grol alas!	bless, O God! کنونی (Ar.); (vulgar-	2 0! (O Lord!
₩oe is me!	(ly,well done f). 29 push on! 5 away! up!	Si L AR. (generally used as a se-
wol alas!	25 (away: up:	well done!
huzzah, hurrah!	sh me!	silence!
0!	wonderful!	on poh!
Low ! halloo!	25 behold!	2id pshaw!
Oh strange!	-16 ho!	1ag wee!
woe is me!	The state of the s	

idiom has been retained in the spoken language, though not introduced into our books, by which the preposition takes a suffix and also; e.g. عدم منظلا also; e.g. عدم منظلا will be barit eshoo, etc. These remarks apply to quite a number of the prepositions.

and בוֹל בּה are no doubt reduplications of the preposition ש. Thus, we have in the ancient language, e. g.,

Besides and line, we have in the modern such expressions as found line along with her, 22 and along upon the wall, 1200 at 22 along in the valley. With these compare the ancient 10 and 10 along with Jesus; and similar expressions. Compare also Hoff. § 123, 5, a, b.

is possibly formed from I and I, as we still find in Koordistan an ancient form in regard to what he said, equivalent to the form used in Oroomiah, 2222 AQI. If this supposition be correct, AQI should be written 2QI.

and Source, like 121, may be partly Syriac and partly Persian, the prepositions and so being prefixed to 22500 of the Ancient Syriac.

(a) 121 (b) A. instead of.

(b) 22 A. instead of.

(c) 22 A. instead of.

(d) 25 A. near.

(e) 22 A. away from.

(from, away be dear except.

(from.

(h) 22 A. with.

(h) 22 A. under.

(h) 24 A. in the middle of. hall be a. away from under.

(h) 24 A. in the middle of. hall be a. away from under.

Remarks:

, and hever, as in the ancient language (e.g. 2527, 2525, etc.), take a vowel. Several prepositions are frequently joined together, especially if one of them is . These prepositions, in accordance with the analogy of the ancient language, receive suffixes, and are also followed by the separable pronouns, as in the expression of a second I asked from (of) him.

A number of the prepositions, when joined with nouns, require a, or after them, and may be considered in such cases as having a doubtful claim to a place among prepositions. When they take suffixes, however, these are dispensed with; e.g. have rose against Simon. In the last example, a is required. Those prepositions which occasionally thus employ a, a, or a, have one of these placed after them in a parenthesis in the above list. had is connected with its suffix by as as sliding letters; e.g. had on our account. So was and was, by a; e.g.

etc., are often pronounced ullit, minit, etc. The following is probably the explanation of it. The Ancient Syriac

PREPOSITIONS.

It will be sufficient in this sketch of Modern Syriac grammar to give a list of the most common prepositions, and expressions equivalent to the prepositions of other languages. They are as follows:

راب	according to.	کمدرو)	a. in the midst of.
ا مراجع	according to.	المِمْرُ (و)	or. beside.
2 252 A. {(equ	THE RESERVE OF THE PERSON NAMED IN COLUMN TWO IS NOT THE PERSON NAMED IN COLUMN TWO IS NAMED IN COLUMN TW	al don't pa	a. of
" " I no	t much used)	وگاه	A. without.
۳ زوفچنر (ق)	e-portections usual	The state of the s	beside, by the side of.
	, by, etc.	ددممح (د)	A. F. against, oppos- ed to.
، (حدد در)	A CONTRACTOR OF THE PARTY OF TH		from (pronounced ham).
س الحرم احرم		The residence of the second	A. until.
M. M.	without.	محدود (د)	
pos	about, con-	ZHIN	M. for.
حمد شيده (د)	for the sake of.		towards.
، چد	between, in the midst of, includ-	to the ball	towards, up to, near.
خدمه (و)	in regard to,		towards, up to, near.
ت حکقید (د)	THE OWNER OF THE PARTY OF THE P	مع كخص	away from (French d'avec).
ر جنعود (د)		درس معا	
(مر چيرو	after.	معرود مر	A. to the other side.
		A STREET	A. from (vulg. with).
Hela book	THE VEHICLE WAS DON'T THE REAL	CONTRACTOR OF THE PARTY OF THE	Ar. instead of.
	. inside of.	مخو	P. except.

The Nestorians have no adverbs for almost, too much, too far, etc. Almost is expressed by a circumlocution. Thus, if we wish to say "he almost died," we use the phrase loo not not little remained that he should die. So if we wish to say too much," we say he loo more than is necessary or proper. Next, whether an adjective or adverb, is expressed indirectly, some additional words being supplied to give definiteness to the meaning. In hearing a class recite, if we wish to call on the next, we say limit of that other. Next week is limit the coming week. Last week is limit the word limit words. In the same way we can express last month, last year, etc.; though for the latter there is the word limits.

Some of these adverbs in common conversation are abbreviated, as is the case with words in all languages. Thus, 22 12 where is he's becomes 22 12. 25 12 henceforth (literally, from none to after it) becomes 12 12 25. So too, 22 12 13 14 21 25. These might with propriety be written with final of.

A word of explanation is necessary in regard to the adverbial expressions and with and with and with any are properly prepositions, and have the suffix-pronouns connected with them. Thus, to express the idea "I am going backwards," we should say when the idea "I am going towards after me, i. e. backwards. So we say with a life of the same in regard to with I is only when the nominative and the suffix-pronoun refer to the same person, that the expression can be called adverbial. Compare the use of with and and in the ancient language. (See John 18: 6, Lam. 1: 8, Jer. 7: 24, etc.). Instead of using the suffixes, we have sometimes written land and land; and these are heard more or less among the people.

he got wet until his here, i. e. up to a place indicated by the hand. So does 200; e. g. 6000 enough for you.

As to the derivation of these adverbs, it is by no means certain that they are all referred to the right source, and it would occupy much space if each one were to be discussed individually; a few only will be alluded to.

In the modern lang, we find 221, 222; in the ancient, 222. In Koordistan, we often hear 220 222 just here; with which compare 220 and (is ipse), etc., in the ancient (Hoff. § 45, Annot. 5). Again, in the modern, we find 222; in the ancient, 222 is in some parts of Koordistan pronounced 202, which probably throws light on its derivation. 222, 222 may be 222, etc., 22 being used with musculine as well as feminine nouns, as stated previously. 222 is no doubt 202, 203, a mongrel word, although 202 is now pretty well naturalized in Syriac. In the modern, we find 222; in the ancient, 2222. In the modern we find 2223; in the ancient, 2223. We also now hear occasionally 202.

than adverbs. Sometimes like I am. Thus, have here thou art; like here they are. Sometimes 222 is joined with it; e.g. 252 22 on here they are. Sometimes 252 is joined with it; e.g. 252 22 on here he is. 220, referring always to distant objects, can be used only in the third person; e.g. 220 there she is; 220 there they are. Sometimes 250 is probably a corruption of 250, and 250 in its turn of 22, 250 this. 250 is probably from 350 to happen. Ab, etymologically speaking, should be written with 4; but as the t is aspirated in some districts, it seems most proper to use A.

It will of course be understood that these adverbs may many of them be combined to form a new adverbial expression. Thus, in until, and 25.2 where, when combined (25.2 5%), denote until where, i. e. how far?

x. quite, completely. why? not. Las Ar. hard. quite, completely. A. how much, not M. quite. A. no, not. no ar. never, not at all. let it be so. 2000 peradventure. r. truly. 255 A. much. P. unless. nos P. with ease. A. verily. P. perfectly. M. how? how. p. A. after a sort. 255 T. would that. rosn truly. quietly. in truth. very quietly. 2.30 a. badly, ill. P. about, nearly. K. well.

Remarks.

The preceding list of adverbs and adverbial expressions might no doubt be extended, especially by noting down adjectives used in an adverbial sense, such as lightly, lightly, lightly, etc. On the other hand, there are no doubt words in the preceding list which are not adverbs, and which are classed here, partly for convenience, and partly because other grammarians have placed them here. Indeed, without a most careful attention to derivation, one can hardly arrive at certainty on this point. We should not criticise a Latin grammarian for calling utinam an adverb, but we should hardly consider the corresponding would that as an adverb. The ancient (CLT) is no doubt a verb, and yet, as at present used, partakes more of the nature of an adverb. It is spoken, as given above,

St. T. only. (when one is called) P. then, now then, ZJ, ZOJ P. more. P. doubtless. T. scarcely. P. perhaps. K.M. freely. 100 r. enough. r. together. (چُنه (vulgar عُدِيه)) 900 r. evenly, correctly. n.coop P. truly. 207 A. yes (-2) COSOT P. in vain. Doom of P. quietly, gently. 2507 so, thus. 25012 so much. so, thus. so much. certainly (vul-GOT P. at all, not at all.

VOL. V.

TOT P. also. 23307 K. M. SO Many. P. easily. 2000 K.M. in vain, freely. of P. exactly. 25 nor so, thus. 1500 P. more. LA. w. certainly. Yand A. at last. Thank at last. together. together. T. freely, in vain. a little. a very little. 2 P. in short. let it not be so. let it not be so. A. badly. 2010 M. why? (2) 2504 A. would that. yes (to a question put negatively). r. certainly, truly. P. to wit, namely.

again. 90 P. never, ever. again. Soy A. until. now, while as المعصور M. again. A. suddenly. P. always. while, while hows P. a.T. suddenly. at that time, Leas A. slowly. A. & P. | many times, there he is. to-morrow, yesa little (time). presently. (morning). A. before. A. & P. sometimes. before: sometimes. before now. A. when, while, at first. 2003 M. a little (while). 2002 2013 50 before now. at dawn.

3. Adverbs of Manner and Quality.

المنافذ من المنافذ على المناف

2. Adverbs of Time.

	or president	2	and the supplied of the
בַּבְיב	now.	ėnė.	after.
عنوند عور	until now.	صخلاة	after.
مدور د	henceforth.	مع خدد	A. after.
ביריד לבמני	henceforth.	בֹאבֹ שׁבְּג	afterwards.
مد فعد ادبا	before now.	مخددة الأجد	afterwards.
ادِـه	A. to-day.	25-083	last year, next year.
24.1	then.	خديد	in the evening.
24-25	from that time	ككون	quickly.
24-1	(*/ra) then, there-	مع کلود	long ago.
اوكبك	A. to-night.	ده نم	behold me here.
البخد	when? when	وديد	r. late.
الله المحم	how long?	دو صدم	r. immediately.
المس حدث	1	وعن	M. now.
or كُنْهُ مَدِّدًا or	A. at what time?	-30	K. M. slowly.
(as vulearly spoken)	de la Libra Lib	La de la companya della companya del	7910 W W. B. A.

The names of the days of the week are as follows:

2 And Sunday. 1 And Thursday. 1 And Friday. 1 And Saturday.

(2 marsisi) 2 marsisi Wednesday.

In Koordistan, Tuesday is Line names of the other days are the same.

ADVERBS.

The ancient termination had of adverbs is still occasionally retained in our books, and is heard more or less in Koordistan, but is not at all used in common conversation in Oroomiah. Many of the adverbs and adverbial expressions given below are identical with those in the Ancient Syriac, while many others are of more recent origin, or borrowed from other languages. An attempt is made to classify them; but such an attempt must always be somewhat unsatisfactory, as the same adverb in one connection may be an adverb of place, in another, of time, etc.

M. signifies that the adverb is used only in the mountains; P., that it is of Persian, T., that it is of Turkish, and K., that it is of Koordish, origin; A., that it is from the Ancient Syriae; Ar., that it is from the Arabic. As might be expected,

many of these have been modified and corrupted.

1. Adverbs of Place and Order.

where? where.

| A. whither? whither. | A. behind. |
| A. behind.

a journey; e.g. مُقَافَةُ عِقْبَ مِعْدَدُ , this time (literally journey) I slept well. The Persian word مُرَت) is sometimes used in the same way.

Note.—It has been supposed that the above mentioned use of the word foot in these languages is derived from the beat of the foot in music. This is probably a mistake. It is applied to travelling, and not to other things. Thus, we may say "I came two feet," i. e. two times; but not "I read two feet." So in the Turkish, they say "I came two roads," with the same signification.

The cardinals also take suffixes; as, for example, on his both of us; on his both of them; his all three of you; on all three of us; on his all three of them. Similar forms are used up to line, inclusive, and are nearly the same in Oroomiah and Koordistan. It may be remarked here that all of us is expressed by or his all of you, by on his all, etc.

Distributives, as in Anc. Syr., are formed by a repetition of the cardinal numbers; e.g. Link two by two, etc., though they are now often connected with s, as, Link So in Hebrew (Nordh. § 947).

2. Ordinals.—The original termination, which, added to the cardinal, made it an ordinal, has been lost in Oroomiah, with a single exception. This is like masc., Like fem., denoting first. Sometimes we use others, as in the gram, term like line ancient rather than from the current usage. The other ordinals are formed by prefixing a to the cardinal. Thus, like third village; like the tenth line. This was also used in the ancient language: Matt. 16:21.

كَلُمْ عُمْدُ seven hundred. كَلُمْ عُمْدُ seven hundred. كَلُمْ عُمْدُ فَاللهُ اللهُ الل

Nors.—In the mountains of Koordistan the eardinals still more closely resemble those anciently used. From one to ten inclusive they have both the masculine and feminine genders; and in some of them, the same apparent anomaly exists as in the Ancient Syriac and the Hebrew (Hoff, § 99, 1, and Nordh, § 611), of masculine numerals joined with feminine nouns, and feminine numerals with masculine nouns. A few are given as a specimen:

Fem.	Masc.	Females	Masc.
المِدُدُ	2.	hxi	2×2
LASA	٨۵٠	- ATEL	244
22	مكند	2150	كشيد
أذخد	أذفكر	222	مخد
-	١١٠٠	خمد	خصدًا

The expressions wind L., 22, L., in Anc. Syr., denote, respectively, double, triple, quadruple, etc. So we have also twice as much; 120 LL, etc., denote the fractions one half, one third, one fourth, etc. The words 1200, etc., seem to have become obsolete.

The Modern Syriac uses the Persian word أَكُلُ اللّٰهِ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهِ اللّٰهُ اللّٰ اللّٰهُ اللّٰ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ اللّٰهُ الللّٰهُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ اللّٰمُ ا

In both these classes of verbal adjectives, the signification sometimes differs from that of the root; e. g. 25, which often means slow, from 25 to rest, be quiet.

6. Adjectives denoting quality are formed from verbs, just as one class of nouns denoting the agent, by inserting between the second and third radicals and giving to the first and last; e. g. 1904 apt to learn, from to tearn; 1906 swift, from to run; 1906 passionate, from to be or become angry; 1906 sour, from to be or become sour; 1906 skittish, from to be or become skittish.

The same word is frequently used both as a noun and an adjective; but this gives rise to no new forms, and it is easy to know in a particular case whether the word is used as an adjective, by the connection.

NUMERALS.

 Cardinals.—These are so nearly like the cardinals of the ancient language, that they may be readily recognised. A list of them is given below, as they are used in Oroomiah, and printed in our books.

eleven. 22 2 one. Li Link twenty-one. AMASA twelve. LOA LAMA twenty-two. was two. 255 three. SOLDA thirteen. was thirty. 2332 four. fourteen. الأخكي forty. 12 mi five. fifteen. fifty. LX2 six. anal sixteen. Lhx2 sixty. seventy. 233 seven. seventeen. A eighteen. 200A eight. assa eighty. 233 nine. nineteen. ninety. Zaos ten. Link twenty. 22 one hundred.

from is might; 2500 dusty, from 900 dust. This class of adjectives is very numerous.

2. They are formed by changing the termination 2 into i or is; e.g. from link peace, link peaceful; from link heaven, links heavenly; from links heavenly;

8. They are formed by changing the termination of adjectives into 25. Thus, from 15000 red, we have listen ruddy; from 2500 black, 15000 blackish.

4. Diminutives, which are often terms of endearment, are formed from adjectives in the same way as from nouns; e. g. liosas, from lass small; liosas, used as a noun, little beauty, from lass beautiful; liosas, from lass minute, etc.

5. A great number of perfect participles, belonging to intransitive verbs of the first class, are used as adjectives in both genders and numbers: 10.40 decayed, from 10.50 to decay; 10.50 sick, from 10.50 to sicken, be sick; 10.50 thick, stubborn, from 10.50 to be thick, stubborn; 10.50 pure, from 10.50 to be or become pure; 10.50 sweet, from 10.50 to be or become sweet. So is it in Anc. Syr. to a more limited extent (Hoff. § 87, 10).

Sometimes the adjective is distinguished from the participle by taking — over its first radical; e. g. land lean, from to be or become lean; while the participle is land; pleasant, from to be pleasing to; the participle is land; soft, from to be or become soft; participle land; land lean, from to be or become idle or vain; participle land. Compare, in Anc. Syr., land land.

and in Anc. Syr., and rarely in Hebrew. The superlative degree is expressed in several different

methods:

1. By the article prefixed, when the connection shows what is intended. Thus, in speaking of a family, we may say 2 of foots of he is the small one, i. e. the smallest. Compare the Hebrew (Nordh. § 790). In the Ancient Syriac, even the article or pronoun may be dispensed with. See 1 Sam. 16: 11, Gen. 42: 13. So also rarely in the Modern, as Matt. 22: 36.

2. By the use of he is the best of them, literally, from all of them he is good. So for we may substitute he is good. This, it will be seen, is properly the comparative form. See an-

cient usage in Matt. 13: 32.

3. The superlative is sometimes formed, as in the cognate languages, when a word is repeated and put into what we may call the genitive plural; e. g. كين المناه ا

4. A kind of superlative is formed by adding to or list to the positive; e.g. list and or list list very minute. Sometimes both are used together, to increase the intensity; e.g. list and exceedingly minute.

DERIVATION OF ADJECTIVES.

1. Adjectives are formed by changing the final 2 of nouns into 15, or, when they do not end in 2, by adding 15; e.g. 1505 bright, from 1505 light; 150 watery, from 150 water; 1505 mighty,

A few adjectives ending in 2 form their feminine by changing 2 into 2. Thus, we have 230, feminine 230; 2300 blind, feminine 2300; 2400 blind, feminine 2300; 2400 bold, feminine 2300; 2400 energetic, fem. 2500. See what is said of 2502, etc., where the gender of nouns is treated of.

The masculine and feminine plural are the same.

NUMBER.

The plural of adjectives is generally formed, like that of regular nouns, by changing the vowel - of the last syllable into -, and writing the two dots called s'amee above the word.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of variation, either as regards gender or number; such as good, size late, 903 straight, in necessary or proper, etc. These are usually borrowed from other languages, and do not end in 2.

CASE.

Adjectives in Modern Syriac undergo no change of case.

COMPARISON.

Adjectives are not compared by a change of termination, as in English, Persian, and many other languages. To express in Modern Syriac the idea: "This is larger than that," we use the phrase A fact this from that is great. "That is smaller than this," is expressed by the words a fact from this is small; being used like than in English, as in other Shemitish languages.

A comparison is also frequently made by prefixing or to the adjective, when the idea is that of excess; as

Note 4.—We have been obliged to introduce a number of words from the English. We, however, first draw on the Modern Syriac, so far as in the current meaning of its words, or by accommodation, it will serve our purpose. In case we meet with difficulty there, we go to the Ancient, which has been very useful in furnishing us with scientific and other terms; next, to the Persian or Turkish, the former having the preference, as being by far the more cultivated of the two; and, last of all, to our own language. If this is not always the rule, it always ought to be.

COMPOSITION OF NOUNS.

The Modern Syriac, like the Ancient and the Hebrew, does not favor the extensive use of compound words. The influence which the study of the Greek by the Nestorians had on their language has long since passed away; and though some of the compounds formed in imitation of the Greek are still retained, there is no tendency to increase the number. As examples of the compound nouns now in use may be mentioned, had invory; had an echo, literally the daughter of the voice; had a thimble, literally the daughter of the finger; had black-faced, i. e. guilty; had adjectives have also been introduced somewhat from other languages; e.g. had color; and a boundary; and a cellar; all of which are from the Persian.

ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives undergo a change of termination, corresponding with the change of gender and number.

GENDER.

Adjectives which are purely Syriac, and indeed nearly all which end in 2, form the feminine singular by changing this termination into 2a; e.g. 2a.9x beautiful, the feminine of which is 2a.9x; 2a.9 small, feminine 2a.3a.9.

words, as they are sufficiently numerous in the spoken language to create a habit of annexing them without discrimination. The following is an example: a miller, instead of

The Persian words is not, and without, when prefixed to nouns and adjectives derived from that language, retain their original signification; e.g. is not well, unwell; boundless.

Note 2.—While many words taken from the Persian, Turkish, and perhaps other languages, have been barbarously mangled, some changes are made in them in accordance with the genius of the Syriac. Such are: 1st. The lengthening of the penult, which has always the accent; e.g. with grace, Syriac Arak. 2nd. The adding of 2 as a termination; e.g. with a picture, from the Persian with. 3rd. The euphonic changes of a vowel in consequence of this termination; e.g. with a melon-field, instead of which the substitution of a for the f-sound wherever it occurs.

Nove 3 .- Notwithstanding the multitude of foreign words introduced into Modern Syriac (of which many more are nouns than verbs, as is the case in the ancient language, and as we should naturally expect), it is worthy of remark that the language has preserved in a good degree its identity, and its own grammatical structure. There are indeed cases where, for instance, the Turkish perfect participle is dragged bodily into a Syriac sentence. Thus, 2) of zali he became injured. So, too, the Persian there is not, which the Nestorians use to express annihilation; e.g. Don Acus he became annihilated, or he vanished. These liberties, however, are not very common; and it may safely be affirmed that the Modern Syriac has in this respect fared better than the Ancient did at one period, from the influx of Greek idioms. We never find such a mingling of languages, to take an example from Sir William Jones, as "The true lex is recta ratio, conformable nature, which, by commanding, vocet ad officium, by forbidding, a fraude deterreat."

NOUNS FROM FOREIGN LANGUAGES.

So many words have been introduced into Modern Syriac from the Turkish and Persian, the latter being often introduced through the Koordish, that at least an allusion should be made to them. Among these are nouns with the Turkish termination (a), denoting the agent or worker; e.g. a blacksmith, from a shoe are mediator, from a shoe an interval; a shoe; a combatant, from a contest. So, too, with the Persian termination (b); e.g. a contest an artificer, from alamost a master workman; a criminal, from then, from the repentance; a criminal, from the classes are employed as if genuine Syriac nouns, and may form abstracts in the contest. Thus, we have the business of a blacksmith; the repentance, etc.

We find also occasionally the Persian termination (,), denoting the keeper or possessor; e.g. a treasurer, from treasure; a wise man, from wisdom; a merciful man, from mercy.

As in Persian and Turkish, the termination (استان) signifies place. Thus, Arabia; Arabia; India;

So too we find the Persian termination (داری), signifying a vessel; as غُدُه a pen-case, غُدُه a tea-pot, غُدُه a coffee-pot, etc.

There are other terminations more rarely heard, as in a goldsmith; a garden-er; a classification a native, from a a place.

Perhaps it is not strange that in some instances the preceding terminations should be connected with purely Syriac In all cases the masculine form is the same with the infinitive after it has lost its prefix. Thus we have, from to learn, if it is prefix to hear, hear, etc. A careful examination of the various uses of this derivative, which will be explained in the Syntax, leads us to suppose that it is properly the infinitive itself.

Nore.—This form is evidently traceable to the ancient infinitive. Schultens and some other grammarians speak of the ancient infinitive as taking this form (Hoff., p. 172, foot-note 2), which, if true, may throw light on the question. Moreover, this form is used in translating such expressions as (modern where is of course the infinitive. The infinitive is used in a way similar to the so-called verbal nouns in Turkish and Persian, which languages may be supposed to have exerted some, though perhaps slight, influence in moulding the Modern Syriac verb; e.g. if or doing the languages for drinking (Turkish); which languages the languages are supposed to have exerted some, though perhaps slight, influence in moulding the Modern Syriac verb; e.g. if or doing the languages (Persian). This will be farther discussed in the Syntax.

From verbs of the second class, an abstract noun is formed, which, when regular, takes _ (or _ when the root has _) on the first radical, and _ on the second radical (unless _ follows, when the vowel is _), with the termination is. The derivative is of course feminine; e. g. from _ to destroy is formed _ the act of destroying; while, as above, from _ to perish, signifies the consequences of the act, i. e. destruction. From _ to save, to complete, is formed in the act of completing or saving; while _ the _ from _ to finish, denotes simply the end. From _ to assemble (tr.), _ in _ to assemble (tr.), _ to assemble (tr.), _ in _ to assemble (tr.), _ in _ to assemble (tr.), _ in _ to assemble (tr.), _ to assemble (t

No one verb, so far as recollected, admits of both the forms last given, although we find in Anc. Syriac lase, and This indeed is unnecessary, as, if both forms ex-

isted, each would be the synonym of the other.

These two kinds of derivatives in the modern language never have an abstract signification, and Hoffman, § 87, 12, probably is mistaken in saying that they have in the ancient, quoting liams, etc., in proof of it. We, however, translate in Acts 7: 10, as there is here little, if any, practical difference between distressers and distressers. The form with a does not, in the modern, take with its first radical; nor is there any such distinction as in the ancient between 250 a father, and 250 a child.

Following the general analogy of the ancient language (Hoff. 87, 3), the modern forms many abstracts, from regular verbs of the first class, by giving the second radical and adding 2 for the masculine and 2 for the feminine termination. Thus, from to split, we have 1922, splitting; from 1924 to cut, 1924, we have 1922, from 1924 to plunder, 1924, 1924, plundering. Some verbs use either of these forms indifferently; as 1924, perishing, destruction, from 1924 to perish; but one or the other is generally preferred. Thus, from 1924 to fight, we have 1924 fighting, but very rarely 1924; from 1924 to marry, 1924 marrying, but not so often 1924.

مُدَنَّا عَلَىٰ makes الْمُرَّمِّةُ , كِلَّهُ makes الْمُرَّمِةُ , كِلَّهُ makes الْمُرَّمِّةُ , كَلَّهُ مُرَّمَةً وَالْمُرَّمِةً وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرَّمِةِ وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرَّمِّةِ وَالْمُرْمِّةِ وَالْمُرْمِّةِ وَالْمُرْمِّةِ وَالْمُرْمِّةِ وَالْمُرْمِّةُ وَالْمُرْمِينَ وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَلِي وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَلِي وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَالْمُرْمِينِ وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُعُلِي وَالْمُوالِمُ وَالْمُوالِمُ وَالْمُوالِمُوالِمُ وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي ولِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمِينِ وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمِينِ وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُعِلِي وَالْمُع

It should be mentioned that these nouns, nearly or quite all, form a feminine in 2A; e. g. 22.25. The distinction may be kept up in the plural. For instance, males who read, distinction be females who read. But this is not the common usage.

Care must be taken not to confound in a worker, with him work; him one who commands, with him a commandment; him one who saves, with him of salvation; him a learner, with him a learning; him a burner, or one who burns, with him fuel, etc.

The noun expressing the agent is occasionally formed by giving — to each radical and adding a terminal 2. Thus, from it to sing, is formed laid, a singer; from to reap, laid a reaper; from a reaper; from a digger. These nouns do not allow — with their first radical, as sometimes in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 87, 11). They differ from those terminating in 23 by denoting the habitual action or condition of the agent. Thus laid may mean, simply, one who sings on a particular occasion; while laid denotes one who makes singing to some extent his business. Many verbs allow either form of derivative.

Sometimes the noun denoting the agent is formed by inserting o between the second and third radicals, and giving the first and last radicals —, with a terminal 2. Thus we have, from to kill, 1202 a murderer; 1202 a slapjack, from 120 to be broad; 1202 a saviour, from 120 to save; 1202 a crower, a cock, from 120 to call.

When a noun is derived from a verb used in both the first and second classes with different significations, the connection only can determine the meaning of the derivative. Thus, when conjugated according to the first class, means to squeeze, to escape; and according to the second class, to save. The derivative imay mean either a squeezer, one who escapes, or a deliverer.

In the ancient language, derivatives of this form and termination have often an abstract signification, as destruction; but this is rarely, if ever, the case in the modern. It is, from land to rain, is, however, sometimes used as equivalent to land rain; e.g. Lix 161 and land land there is much rain this year. There may be other examples of this kind,

When the verb is not a regular one, the derivative is in some cases slightly different from the forms given above. In verbs with medial 2 or ., as 323, we have . for the second radical, and the derived noun is 113. 515 has in Koordistan. In verbs with medial &, the derivative may be either regular, as 2000, from , or irregular, as 211.55. In verbs with final 2, . takes the place of 2, and the derivative is the same in form, whether the verb be of the first or of the second class. Thus from 250 we have 21.35, and from 296, second class, 21.96. Verbs with final & are generally regular in forming the derivative, when of the first class; but when of the second class, as to assemble, the derivative retains the -. We thus have list. The derivative of the irregular verb or last may be regular, but as spoken is 2 and similar verbs are very regular; e. g. linen. and verbs which are inflected like it take .; e. g.

16

Nora.—Sometimes these abstracts are derived from other parts of speech; e. g. from las how much, Lass; from lass; opposite, Lalass.

This general mode of deriving abstract nouns is probably admissible in a much greater number of words in the Modern than in the Ancient Syriac, and is of great value for the introduction of new terms.

In a very few cases, nouns of this termination are not abstract. Thus, a loom. Compare the same word in the ancient language, denoting a shop.

Adjectives are changed in a similar manner into abstract nouns. Thus, from into abstract, we have book greatness; from laid courageous, book courage; from high, height, etc.

Verbal Nouns.

A noun expressing the agent is in many cases formed from regular verbs of three radicals, whether of the first or second class, transitive or intransitive, by giving the first radical -, or -;- when the root has -;- and adding 25 for the termination. Take, for example, the transitive verb of the first class, meaning, to hold. From this we have have a holder, or one who holds. Take the transitive verb six of the second class, denoting to tempt. By the same mode of formation we have list a templer. When the verb is not transitive, the derived word partakes rather of the nature of an adjective than of a noun; e.g. from to be or become lean, we have Line apt to become lean. From comes to sleep, comes come who sleeps. This may be used in construction with or without a noun; e. g. العَدُونَ عُنْ اللهُ عَنْ اللهُ عَنْ اللهُ اللهُ عَنْ اللهُ عَنْ اللهُ اللهُ اللهُ عَنْ اللهُ ا agree with it, land a lians a sleeper in the grave.

one of these terminations; his is the most common of them. Examples are his an inhabitant of Gawar, from his an inhabitant of Tekhoma, from his an inhabitant of Tiary, from a Russian, from hos; his an inhabitant of Tiary, from his is his an inhabitant of Tiary, from his is his his ancient of the same mode of formation in the ancient language (Hoff. § 89, 2).

- 2. Diminutive Nouns.—These are formed by changing the termination of the noun into lio, as in the ancient language. Thus, from lio a boy, we have lio a little boy; from lio a priest, lions (a term of some disrespect) a priestling; from lion an old man, lions a grandfather (literally, a little old man); from lion a father, lions a little father. So lions a little sister, lions a little wife. lions and little sister, lions a little wife. lions and little brother, and a little son, have now lost their signification, and are the most common terms for brother and son. The diminutive terminations lion, lions, lions, seem now to have become obsolete.
- 3. Abstract Nouns.—These are formed in a great number of cases from concrete nouns by changing the termination into 10; e. g. from 1900 a witness, 1000 testimony; 1000 an artificer, 1000 mechanical skill; from 1000 a physician, 1000 skill in medicine, or the practice of medicine. Sometimes the termination is changed into 1000, or, where the word ends in a consonant, this is added. Thus, from 1000 an enemy, 1000 camity; from 1000 a relative, 1000 relationship. 1000 forms its derivative in correspondence with 1000, viz.

noun changes final I into when in the construct state. We thus have in the bow of our Lord, the rainbow, for it is the ear of a goat, for the ear of a goat, for our adjectives are expressed by law, in the construct state, prefixed to a noun. Thus, law lord or passessor of usefulness; lord of price, or valuable. Compare the usage of Anc. Syriac with law, and the road is (lord of) fear; law lord of this is (lord of) price, i. e. dear.

As the emphatic state in Anc. Syriac gradually lost its significance (Hoff. §109, 2), so in the Modern it has disappeared altogether; or, rather, most nouns derived from the Ancient have assumed the emphatic form as their only form, thus virtually annihilating it. Thus, we have now only have, the latter being in Koordistan have and have the latter being in Koordistan have a specific and have the latter being in Koordistan have a specific and have the latter being in Koordistan have a specific and have

DERIVATION OF NOUNS.

The great majority of purely Syriac nouns in the modern language are derived from the ancient form of the verb, and have continued in use from early times, without any material change. Such cases as the modern so for the ancient change, need no explanation. As this subject of derivation has been fully discussed by Hoffman, §§ 87, 88, it will be sufficient, here, to speak of it as affecting directly the signification of nouns.

Derivation from Nouns and Adjectives.

1. Patrial Nouns.—These are formed from names of districts, countries, etc., by changing the termination into into into in the constraint or in the constraint of the constrai

Some nouns have two or three plurals; as, 122 a verb, 122 , 122 a day, 122 a day, 122 a day, 122 a grape, 122 a grapes (by the quantity), 122 individual grapes; 122 a grain of wheat, 122 wheat (by the quantity), 122 a shoe, 122 a shoe, 122 a boot, 122 a bead, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain, 122 a doot, 122 a grain, 122 a grain,

Some nouns are used only in the plural; e. g. 25 water, 25 life, 25 mercy, etc. Some, such as names of metals, do not admit of any plural.

The plurals of most nouns must be learned by practice, as, with the exception of those in 20, no certain rule can be given for ascertaining what form the plural assumes. The design has been in the preceding examples to give the plurals in most common use; but, as every native we consult thinks, of course, the custom in his own village is the prevalent one, it is difficult to arrive at certainty. In this, and a great number of other cases, the forty pupils of our Seminary, who are from places widely separated from each other, have been questioned.

CASE. CONSTRUCT AND EMPHATIC STATE.

The termination of most nouns is not affected by a change of case. Their different relations are generally expressed by prepositions, as in English and many other languages.

The construct state, a remnant of the ancient language, is also found in the Modern Syriac. Some forms, as, for instance, which is the sons, i. e. people, of Oroomiah, are in constant use. So, too, with the nouns ending in 25, in certain districts; e. g. 25 a baker of bread, for the sons, i. e. g. 25 a baker of bread, for the sons is a limited extent, the first

e. g. lool a manger, hosol; loos a horse, hosos.

loo a recess has either loos or loos. If the word terminate in a consonant, this takes in and then the termination is added; e. g. look a pool, hosos an army, hosos. But it is to be noted that hose a mercy does not take this in but makes its plural hosos.

A very prevalent, but vulgar, pronunciation of plurals in 200, 200, or 200, is to change the sound of 20 final into that of long a. Thus, the plural of 2000 is pronounced soosawaë; of 200, mawaë, etc.

Still another small class is characterized by the doubling in the plural of the consonant which precedes the final 2; e. g. 1304x a skirt, 1304x; 1505 a nostril, 13504; 2505 a knee, 15053.

Some few nouns are reducible to no rule; e. g. 1833 a daughter, 1833; 1834 a year, 1832; 1835 a son, 1833; 1834 a husband, 1836 or 1834; 1839 a church, 1839. Some have Turkish plurals, with the Syriac termination added; e. g. 1834 an island, 1836. So sometimes 181 a master, 1836.

way, many nouns which do not in the singular terminate in form their plural by adding 2; e. g. a people, plural . These nouns are mostly of foreign origin.

Nouns ending in 2A form their plurals by changing that termination into 24, and more rarely into 240 or 244. Thus, sall fruit, bisall fruits; bish a cave, LAS caves; LAS a lip, LASS lips; LASS a woman, 22 women. In some cases, where the plural is formed by adding 2Ao, the original A is retained, and especially if it forms a part of the root. We thus have, from La a face, sons, and not lass; from sa a house, sons; from la a sister, laca. Yet, in vulgar usage, A is sometimes dropped from the plural of las a village. 2000 a yard, forms its plural irregularly, thus, 2000. So has a bride, lass; hair a week, lass; lass a burden, las. is an ear retains the A, and has for its plural Line. The class forming the plural in 2 is very numerous, and comprises the greater part of the feminine nouns in la, and perhaps all in La. Lason testimony has generally lacons, but admits a regular plural.

In Koordistan, the plural termination of nouns of which the singular ends in lais 1, 1, or 2, in accordance with the usage of the ancient language. We thus have

The plural termination is is by no means confined to nouns of which the singular ends in la. If a word terminate in la, the lamb be dropped and is added; e.g. land a heart, land; land; land a river, horizon. If the word terminate in la, the lais dropped as before, and is changed into la;

and fruits are partly masculine and partly feminine. Nouns of capacity are generally feminine, but exceptions are not infrequent. Abstract nouns are also in the majority of cases feminine, beginning with he spirit, and take for the most part their appropriate termination is or he. When an article has two sizes, if the word denoting the larger is masculine, that denoting the smaller or inferior is naturally feminine; e.g. the earthen vessels denoted respectively by and he had a little box, etc. had and hox, and hox, and hox, etc. had a little box, etc. had a small knife. The rule has, however, probably exceptions.

The rule in Hebrew that "members of the body by nature double are feminine," has in Modern Syriac some exceptions, although the words used to express elbow, knee, heel, ear, hand, foot, thigh, shoulder-blade, eye, cheek, etc., are evidence of its existence.

Some nouns are used by the people of one district as masculine, and by those of another as feminine: as low the air, or the weather. In the plural, there is generally no distinc-

tion of genders.

The above rules and suggestions may be of some use to the learner, and are the result, however unsatisfactory they may be, of full and careful investigation. But it should be understood that no foreigner can speak the language correctly, without a thorough study of the subject for himself.

NUMBER.

There are two numbers, as in English, the singular and the plural. The plural, in the case of most nouns, is formed by changing -, which is ordinarily the vowel of the last syllable, into -, as line a part, line parts, and placing over the word the two square dots now called line, but in the ancient language oftener - in a similar

termination. The final syllable of the masculine noun is often changed into 2A, or more rarely , to form the feminine; e.g. 2 a donkey, 2A a she-donkey; 2000 a horse, 2000 a mare; 22A a fox, 22A a she-fox, etc. 2000 a serpent has for its feminine 2000, somewhat irregularly.

In a few nouns, the vowels are modified in the feminine; e.g. 2 a dog, 2 a bitch; a bitch; a tooth, as of a watch wheel, etc.

Some nouns ending in 2 are feminine; e. g. 2022 a mill, 2022 a hen-house, 2022 a kind of cradle, 2002 a manger, 2022 a recess, 2002 a ford. Also the names of females, as 2023, 2022, etc. This rule has frequent exceptions, and is given with some little hesitation.

A separate word is also used in some cases for the feminine; e. g. Line a male sparrow, land a female sparrow; a male wolf, line a shewolf; a male cat, line a drake, a female buffalo, line a female buffalo.

Gender distinguished by signification.—The names of males, of nations, as Israel, Judah, etc., of rivers, mountains, and months, of artizans, traders, and professional persons, are masculine. So too, as in Hebrew, a multitude of material-nouns, beginning with a body, such as those denoting gold, silver, copper, and all the metals, excepting lead; wood, stone (sometimes feminine), wool, flesh, grass, dirt, glass, cotton, fire, lime, paper, spice, gall-nuts, copperas; also chair, table, book, lock, key, bread, etc.

On the other hand, all names of females, whether belonging to the human race, or not; relations of woman, such as mother, wife, etc.; the names of villages, cities, provinces, countries, and islands, are feminine. The names of trees

ARTICLE.

The Modern Syriac has properly no definite article; but the demonstrative pronouns of masc., of fem., and comm. pl. are often used as we use the definite article in English. It need hardly be remarked that this is also the usage of the ancient language. Compare the Hebrew article; which is no doubt a fragment of the pronoun Nin (Nordh. § 648). Ordinary usage prefixes these pronouns to the noun, and hardly admits of their following it.

The numeral 2 masc., 22 fem., is also employed as an indefinite article, in accordance with early usage. Compare the Chaldee 77 and the occasional use in Hebrew of 77 ... On the plain of Oroomiah, 2 is prefixed to nouns of both genders.

NOUNS.

The Nestorians formerly made no distinction between nouns and adjectives; but, as there are many and obvious reasons for treating them separately, the general practice of grammarians will be followed.

GENDER.

The noun is of two genders, masculine and feminine, often not distinguishable by their termination. Thus, a miller is masculine, and time is feminine, though both have the same termination is. Only one rule of much importance can be given for the gender of nouns as distinguished by their form, viz. that those which receive the ending is are feminine. This rule is nearly or quite a universal one. It is a house, if a pelding, which are masculine, are not to be considered as exceptions; for in these words A is a part of the root, and not of the

While the signification of any particular verb in the ancient may not correspond to that of the same verb in the modern, the general usage in regard to Afel and the modern causative verb is the same. For instance, the Nestorians sometimes simply change the intransitive into a transitive. Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive into a transitive. Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive into a transitive of the transitive verb into a causative, with an accusative of the person and another of the thing; thus, from to put on (clothes), we have to cause to put on:

Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive of they change the transitive verb into a causative, with an accusative of the person and another of the thing; thus, from to put on (clothes), we have to cause to put on:

Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive of they change the transitive verb into a causative of the person and another of the thing; thus, from the put on to cause to put on:

Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive of the person and are used into a causative, with an accusative of the person and another of the thing; thus, from the put on to cause to put on:

Thus, in the modern, from the intransitive of the person and are used into a causative, with an accusative of the person and another of the thing; thus, from the person and another of the thing; thus, from the person and another of the thing; thus, from the person and another of the intransitive of the person and another of the intransitive of the person and another of the person and another

We see also in the Modern Syriac traces of several of the rarer conjugations. For example, the reduplication of a single letter of the root; as 12, from 22; 4, from بَدُن ; مَدُن , from عَمْد ; or the falling away of one radical, and the reduplication of the other two; as (Palpel) from als; drax, from dix; or the addition of 2 to the root (in the ancient); as (Pali) 253, from تُعْمَ ; كَمْعَ , from عُمْدَ ; نُحْدَ , from عُمْنَ ; or the addition of to the root; as (Palen) (ancient (ancient); Las, from Las; coos, from isos; or the prefixing of x; as (Shafel) . from 4: or the prefixing of عند (Safel) مُعَدُد , from مُعَدُد , probably from axi; or the prefixing of A; as (Tafel) axi A, probably from and (axis na); or, in a few cases, verbs of five radicals from verbs of three radicals, as in Hebrew, by reduplication; as ALDAD, from ASD.

On examining the second class of verbs of three radicals, we see a resemblance to the conjugation Paël. Take, for example, the verb (modern (modern (b)) to bless. In the ancient, the imperative is 500, and the plural asis; in the modern, 625. The infinitive in the ancient is in the modern, lacate or lacat, the first form being no doubt the more ancient one. Here the resemblance in sound is very striking, and a transposition of the o will make the written forms not dissimilar.

As to the present participle, e. g. 20050, this may be derived from the infinitive of Pael, and can be from nothing else. It is therefore to be considered primitively an infini-tive, though now used as a participle. The perfect participle is evidently from the participle of Pael. Thus, the ancient is lain, Lain; the modern, lainin, Lainn. a has been inserted here, but the sound is not materially changed. The same remark applies to the preterite, which has a derivation similar to that of the preterite of the first class. Compare the ancient. with the modern As to the future, a single remark may be made. Since -;- is the distinguishing vowel of Pael, it is not strange that this should be often preferred to in the modern. And so we find it, e. g. Link and many other verbs of the second class. The - is also naturally preferred in the present participle.

Verbs of the second class often bear the same relation to verbs of the first class that Paël does to Peal, neuter verbs of the first class becoming transitive in the second class, as

has been already shown (Hoff. § 59).

The causative verbs, formed by prefixing to the root, are evidently connected, if not identical, with the participle of Afel, or, if any one prefers, with the conjugation of Mafel. Thus, from the ancient was, we have was: and from the modern dis, we have also disco. So too, from ancient sauce, modern sauce; from ancient due, modern di

As to the particle no, prefixed to the future of all verbs, it is barely possible that it is identical with which, bidi, which is employed in the same way in the Armenian verb. But it is far more probable that it is a fragment of is to wish. In some parts of Koordistan the people use if for no; e.g. is I wish to sing, literally, that I may sing. But in Tal we find a mode of speaking which seems to be decisive as to the origin of and, and also goes to show that it should have been written and. Thus:

ا تخب ووصف المنا st fem. ومُصف المنا المنا ووصف المنا المنا المنا ووصف المنا المنا المنا ووصف المنا المنا المنا المنا ووصف المنا وصف المنا وص

In the same way the verb to wish is used as an auxiliary in Persian, in forming the future, as A. In English also, will and wish are in many cases identical; e. g. What will you? which may mean what do you wish? So will in other languages: vouloir, volo, βουλομαι, which mean either to will or to wish. Compare also the modern Greek future δέλω γράψει, δέλω είναι, etc., I will write, I will be. So too, from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient when the modern we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the ancient we have the modern and from the ancient when the modern and from the m

As to the present participle, the question may fairly be raised, whether the prefix \exists is not really a preposition, the present participle being in fact a verbal noun. If this idea be correct, a thin in the present participle being in fact a verbal noun. If this idea be correct, a thin in the present participle being in fact a verbal noun. If this idea be correct, a thin in the present participle, the latter being clearly a noun, seems to throw light on this point.

And, first of all, it is obvious that regular verbs of three radicals of the first class bear a strong analogy in form and signification to the conjugation Peal. The imperative is in both precisely the same, except that in the modern is almost universally added to the plural. We do, however, hear in one district, Nochea, where ye, where ye, where ye, the perfect participle of the modern is also the same with the passive participle of the ancient, except that it always takes the termination 1, in accordance with the general usage of the modern. Sometimes the ancient participle is used in an active sense; e.g. where ye, where ye, where ye, the modern is also the same with the general usage of the modern. Sometimes the ancient participle is used in an active sense; e.g. where ye, as in the case of the significations in the same verb, as in the case of the significations in the same verb, as in the case of the significations in the same verb, as in the case of the significations in the same verb, as in the case of the significance is the same verb.

It also seems easy to see how the modern infinitive is derived from the ancient, viz. being substituted for so, or, rather, so being dropped, the usual 2 being added, and the -;-, as a necessary consequence, being changed into -... We thus have

As to the preterite, when we find so in the ancient, meaning "he rose to himself," i. e. he rose, who can doubt that this is nothing more nor less than so on. So so so in the ancient is equivalent to loss, and so on. Our mode, however, of spelling the preterite, more correctly represents the present pronunciation. In regard to the general idiom, see Hoff. § 123, 6, and Nordh. § 868.

As to the future, it is very plainly derived from the present participle of the ancient language. Any one who will examine Hoff. § 57, 2, and compare the forms there given with the modern, will be satisfied at once. The present subjunctive has of course the same origin. No trace remains

of the ancient future.

Thou (m.) healed them.

Thou (f.) healed them.

Thou (f.) healed them.

Thou (f.) healed them.

The healed them.

They healed them.

They healed them.

GENERAL REMARKS ON THE SUFFIXES OF VERBS.

It should be understood that all the suffixes given above may be used in precisely the same manner with verbs of both classes, whether regular or irregular. Some of these forms, however, are not in universal use among the people. For instance, in Tekhoma, instead of the expressions. Nor do any verbs there admit of the suffixes of and to. The form the precise is never used in the interior districts of Koordistan. In its place we may hear the form of the preterite last given, which includes the pronoun within itself; or, in case the idea could not be expressed by that, as "I healed you (pl.)," expressions such as a case in the interior districts of Koordistan.

There are other local peculiarities in the use of the suffixes, such as they saw him, on which it is unnecessary to dwell. The usage in our books has of late years been quite uniform. It may, however, be remarked that the suffixes the suff

RELATION OF THE MODERN TO THE ANCIENT VERB.

Before dismissing the Verb, it will be interesting to refer briefly to the structure of the verb in the ancient language, and trace, if possible, some of the changes it has undergone. rise to no practical difficulty, as the idea may always be expressed by with the appropriate suffixes. From the property its termination being dropped, we have Adding to this the pronoun of the first person, with the terminations given above, we then have:

Garmon Thou (m.) healedst Thou (f.) healedst . Saimos You healed Is mos He healed me. They healed me. 215005 She healed me. By a similar process, we have: A hadas I healed thee (m.). 1) AMOON He healed thee. They healed thee. 15 AMONT She healed thee. We healed thee. Amond I healed thee (f.). 1) Amon He healed thee. They healed thee. 25 ASSOS She healed thee. We healed her. I healed her. Thou (m.) heal-You healed Thou (f.) healedst her. He healed her. They healed her. She healed her. Thou (m.) heal-You healed Thou (f.) healedst us. He healed us. They healed Manager She healed us.

When the agent is a female, the form is A CASES, etc.

He healed us.

He healed thee (m.)

He healed thee (f.)

The form is the same as the preceding, when the nominative is the third person singular feminine, he being substituted for war. When the verb is in the plural, whether it be of the first, second, or third person, its suffixes are similar to those of the second and third persons singular; e. g. of the healed him, healed thee (f.).

Where > is employed as a connecting letter, the suffix is generally written separately from the verb, though this is

not essential.

There is a very common form of the preterite, in which the pronoun, instead of being suffixed, as in the preceding examples, to the verb, is embraced within it, and precedes the terminal letters. The perfect participle of any verb being known, the pronoun is to be suffixed to this, after the final 1 has been dropped, and the terminations . , , , , etc., added to form the different persons. After a we have simply . , , etc.

The pronouns are as follows, and are evidently fragments of the separable personal pronouns.

5 — me. A — thee (m.). A — thee (f.). — her.

The pronouns for the third person singular masculine and the second person plural are wanting; but this gives

VOL. V.

Preterite Tense.

The regular preterite, since its appropriate terminations so much resemble the suffix-pronouns, does not admit of their use except in a single case. In the third person singular masculine we may have the healed him, of being substituted for the terminal 1.

المحتمدة ال

When the verb has a feminine nominative of the first person singular, we have, instead of the preceding form, ومعرفه على على ودد.

Thou (m.)
healedst me.

Thou healedst us.

Thou healedst him.

Thou healedst him.

Thou healedst him.

Thou healedst heal

Here, as before, if the nominative be feminine, is to be substituted for Aa.

He is healing me.

He is healing thee (m.).

He is healing thee (f.).

He is healing thee (f.).

He is healing him.

Toward He is healing him.

He is healing her.

If the agent is a female, 2 is to be substituted for 2.

We are healing thee (m.). We are heal to assess healing you. we are near ing thee (f). We are heal-تصوحه المع ing him. We are healing her. Ye are healing me. Ye are healing him. OA wood Ye are heal-Ye are heal-ing her. They are heal-They are healing me. They are heal-They are heal-They are healing thee (f.). They are ing him. They are heal-They are heal-ing them. They are heal-ing her.

One who has familiarized himself with the preceding suffixes of the present tense, will have no difficulty in using the suffixes with the imperfect, perfect, pluperfect, and second future tenses. In every case the suffix is to be joined with the participle, and not with the auxiliary. Take

probably is that the perfect participle is passive, as well as active, in its meaning, while is merely a verb of existence, I am... having been struck. The pluperfect active is also frequently used in the same way for the pluperfect passive; thus, 266 and 2 may signify I had struck, or I had been struck.

VERBS WITH SUFFIXES.

Although the suffix-pronouns of the Modern Syriac are few and simple, it requires much practice to use them readily and accurately in conversation. It will be desirable there-

fore to examine the subject carefully.

The verbal suffixes do not differ, except in one or two instances, from those used for nouns and prepositions. A list of them has been already given. It will now be shown how these pronouns are suffixed to the verb in its different inflections.

Root ma's to heal.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

(I (m.) am healing thee (m.) (I am healing thee (f.) (I am healing him.) (I am healing him.) (I am healing her.) (I am healing her.)

When the person speaking is a female, we have the same forms as above, except that is throughout substituted for

Thou art healing me. Thou art healing us.

Thou art healing me.

Thou art healing us.

Thou art healing him.

Thou art healing him.

another verb is not joined with it. Thus, A large I have remained in doubt, or I am in doubt, may be employed wherever would be allowable, and vice versa.

Method 2nd.

There is a curious form of the passive, in daily use among the people, in which the verb is to come is employed as an auxiliary, and the infinitive active of another verb is joined with it in a passive sense. We will take for illustration as before the root to strike.

المُلَّمُ مِنْ الْمُلْكِ I am struck.

المُلْمُ الْمُلْكُ مِنْ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلِكُ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلِكُ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلِكُ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلِكُ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلِكُ الْمُلْكُ لِلْكُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْكُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ لِلْكُلُكُ الْمُلْكُ الْمُلْكُ لِلْكُلْكُ لِلْكُلْكُ لِلْكُلْكُلُكُ الْمُلْكُلُلْكُلُكُ الْ

The subjunctive so much resembles the indicative, that it need not be written out,

Sometimes this form, especially in Koordistan, is a passive of capability, as, for example, 2 1 if it can be struck, i. e. if it come into the position in which it may be struck. This is perhaps the primitive idea of this form. There is, however, another mode in Oroomiah of expressing the sentiment, viz.: 1 201 2, where 1 is used as we should use strikable in English, if such a word were allowed. So 2 2 1 if it be takable.

Method 3rd.

Instead of the form 2 22, the perfect active is often used in a passive sense. For the preceding, we thus have 2 1 have been struck. The explanation of this

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Here either and or of may be used, as in the future tense. Thus we have, for the present, in a perfectly regular manner.

It is to be particularly observed that, where a verb is used in both the first and second classes, with the same signification, the shade of meaning in the passive will depend on which perfect participle is used in its formation. To illustrate: "In a verb of either the first or second class, means to scatter seed, to sow. But Is a like means it was sowed or scattered, as if by itself; while is means it was sowed (by some individual). The signification is sometimes, however, such that this distinction cannot be kept up; e.g. like a like and like was grieved or sorry, there being in neither case reference to the agent causing the sorrow. It is and like and like was received, on the other hand, must both of them indirectly refer to the agent.

Where the same word is used in both the first and second classes, with different meanings, of course there is a similar distinction in the passive; as, linear last he was lost, he was destroyed.

Nors.—It has been sometimes supposed that in the expression in the expression is a perfect participle. But as is of the second class, and such a participle does not belong to verbs of the second class, this expression should be translated, not, he was made blessed, but, he was a blessed individual, is being an adjective.

Nore 2.—Sometimes the verb x23 is used as almost or quite equivalent to the verb of existence, although the perfect participle of

Pluperfect Tense.

السم المقر من المعط الم

Future Tense.

In this tense either the future of the verb x29 or the future of the verb 200 may be employed. The signification in either case is nearly or quite the same.

الم المنافع ا

In the same way inflect

عسد عسد عسد مرفة المع

Note.—There may possibly be, at times, a difference in the signification of these futures, arising from the signification, on the one hand, of x15 to remain, and, on the other, of 200 to become. Thus:

בּבְּבֶׁל אם he will be or continue in a state of holiness.

We have been accustomed to drop the sof the present participle of this auxiliary.

Imperfect Tense.

າ້າການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ເຂົ້າໄດ້ [m.] ໄກການ ດໍດີ ເຈົ້າ ໃຊ້ເຜີ We were struck.

ກ້າການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ເຂົ້າໄຊ້ເຜີ [sem. ໄກການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ We were struck.

ກ້າການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ [sem. ໄກການ ໄຊ້ເຜີ 2nd nasc. ໄກການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ 2nd nasc. ໂກການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ 3rd nasc. ໂກການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ 3rd nasc. ໂກການ ໄດ້ຕົ້ງ ໄຊ້ເຜີ 3rd fem.

Preterite Tense.

المعدد ا

Sometimes and is used as the auxiliary, and we have

Perfect Tense.

PASSIVE VOICE.

The Passive Voice, especially as formed by the first method given below, is very little used in the colloquial dialect of the people of Oroomiah. This results probably from the warmth of their feelings, which instinctively prefers a direct mode of expression. Where we should say "You will be delivered," they say "(Such a person) will deliver you;" for "You will be beaten," we generally hear the expression "They will beat you;" and so in a great number of cases. In the mountains, the passive voice is freely used in conversation; and, as it is employed also in our preaching and our books, it is desirable to become well acquainted with it. This is, however, an easy task.

There are three methods of indicating the passive voice,

which will be in turn considered.

Method 1st.

The passive voice of any verb may be formed by prefixing to its perfect participle the inflections of the root also in its different moods and tenses. This root properly means to remain; but, when thus employed as an auxiliary, it is equivalent to the verb of existence. Let us take for examample the passive voice of to strike, the perfect participle of which is the passive and the infinitive passive

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

المن من المنظ I am struck (m.)
المنظ ألم المنظ المنظ

المسئلا كلا تعسير 3rd masc.

Lun gar leid We are

2nd plural.

المعالم عند المعالم عند المعالم المعا

4. 2. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4. 4.	
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	
Future, let para 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	
Tienelle Tienel	
A Secretary and A secretary an	The second
Protette. Lines Labora	
Proc. Participle Libert Scools de	
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	-

Sol.	ec. xay	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	7.1.4	有情况.
	2 2 2	7.7	THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF THE	2.2.2
There m			3.3.3	1 1 1
iciple.	eë, yay,	13 A	111	1 4 7
Perfect Part	53	31	111	153
Preterito.	657	7 4	111	447
idika idika	esti.	1 1 1	111	13.7
Root. Pr	.gaj.	3.4	111	1.7

SYNOPSIS OF THE PRECEDING VERBS.

The following table presents at one view nearly all the irregularities that have been noted in regard to verbs of both classes

mperative.	B COR	Bin	Sosi	2	197	50.00	4		200	4402	
se, and fem.	يمر فذم	בת פנת	12:2	24.00	5		MACHINE.	100	1000	日七	200
Future, 1st pers. ma	בת פנים	र्म हरने	2007	25.75	No. of the last	בון ניסיק.	בון של	ביו מייפי	EN 61.2	EX 444	これか
Perfect Participle.	1				6	المسدا المسدام			-	13 13 13 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15 15	
Cinsses. Preterite.	BERT	Bocal	7	705	7	, soci	R. S. C. R. C.	The state of the s	Sal.	オイ	THE REAL PROPERTY AND ADDRESS OF THE PERTY ADDRESS OF THE PERTY ADDRESS OF THE PERTY AND ADDRESS OF THE PERTY ADDR
res. Participle;	20201	2 cont	Die.	21,021	14.55	स्क्षित्र)	المندة ا	The same	جفنغر	71	274
Root, P	1. ush	2 454	Ä	767		Çaş.			STY.	礼	

المحالية (كورسية) Present Participle. المحالية Preterite.

Imperative.

The irregular verb 265 to flame, has 2655 for its causative, and is thus inflected:

200613 Pres. Participle. 36,300 Preterite.

كَبْرُمُ مِنْ الْمُعْلَمِ Perfect الْمُعْلَمُ الْمُعَالِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمِ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعْلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمِعْلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمِعِلَمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلَمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلَمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمِعِلَمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمِ الْمِعِلِمِ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمُ الْمِعِلِمِ الْمِل

Imperative of the same

The irregular verb to wish, has 2 for its causative.

Present Participle. Presente.

كَتْمُ اللَّهُ اللَّاللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّ

Imperative.

Nore.—The verb of existence At there is, At there is not, is used in the Modern Syriac differently from the idiom of the Ancient. It will be referred to again in the Syntax.

Like inflect , a causative from to know; to make smooth; with to pasture, from to graze; and to cause to plaster, from 2 to plaster.

The irregular verb 252 to curdle, of the first class, has for its causative 2520, and is thus inflected :

200310 Present Participle. Silas Preterite. Liston, Liston Perfect Participle. Imperative.

So inflect 1925 from 29 to bake. The verb 150 to swear, besides the causative 2000, already noticed, sometimes makes its causative in the same way. Thus we have 200, inflected like 2525.

The anomalous verb 22 to cause to come, to bring, which is doubtless derived from the ancient 2000, may also be classed here. As used on the plain of Oroomiah, it is thus inflected:

Present Participle. 22 200 Preterite.

Imperative.

As used in Koordistan, its root is , which is evidently from the Afel form of the ancient verb (Hoff. § 78, 3). It is thus inflected:

to parch (tr.).	25 to depart.
295 to throw.	25 to begin.
15x to liken.	2sÅ to tell.
20x to spread.	25Å to cause to adhere.

Notes on the Preceding List.

is a causative from 212 to become weary. Land, a causative from 222 to live, and 223 are irregular by having in the perfect participle and the future feminine, thus: 2200, 2200; and in the future, 2200 A2, 2200 A2. If we do not distinguish between 2220 in the future and subjunctive and 2200 to strike, we shall be likely (in prayer, for instance), when intending to say "O Lord, revive (or quicken) me!" to say "O Lord, strike me!" 2200 in the perfect participle is often written as well as pronounced 2200.

VERBS OF THREE RADICALS: THIRD RADICAL ..

These verbs, when inflected as verbs of the second class, do not differ essentially from the paradigm of verbs with final 2. For example, to assemble (transitive).

It will be noticed that a is retained throughout, and that the perfect participle and future feminine singular (in one form) take — as the second vowel.

VERBS OF THREE RADICALS: THIRD RADICAL 2.

These are mostly inflected as verbs of the first class, but not all of them. As an example of the second class, we may take 196 to deliver.

كِمْ مُعْمَى , Present Participle. كُمْ مُعْمَى Preterite. كُمْ مُعْمَى بِهُمْ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهِ اللَّهُ اللَّلَّا اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّا اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّا لَا اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ

Imperative.

In Koordistan the present participle is 2.00; and it is to be understood that in all verbs resembling this, .. is there substituted for o.

Like 296, inflect

to select, collect. 2005 to cover. 25 to uncover. 245 to cover. 200 to make pure. to weary. to liken. to make alive. 255 to winnow. 25 to prophesy. 25 to meditate, to spell. to render difficult. 2007 to narrate. 255 to patch. to divide (tr.). to keep (tr.). to broil (tr.). to deliver (from). 2xx to conceal. to pray. 200 to sear. 29 to strain.

second class having three radicals. The (to place), however, when it denotes to cause to sit, to locate, retains the transposed; thus, the becomes the same and will be noticed farther on. It becomes the same are conforming nearly to the Ancient Syriac. See under the same same, transpose the same become respectively the same same and s

distinguishable from abe to cause to cut, only by a slight difference in pronunciation.

OTHER IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CLASS.

VERBS WITH MEDIAL A.

One of these, and perhaps more, is inflected as a verb of the second class, viz. to revile.

المحمد ا

The causative of is to cause to revile.

Pres. Participle. - Pres. Preterite.

كَمْ يَعْمِ مِنْ اللَّهِ اللَّهُ اللَّا اللَّهُ اللَّا اللَّا اللَّهُ اللَّا اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ

Thus, from to weep, we have to cause to weep; and so of a great number of others.

Verbs with final & do not differ in the causative form from verbs with final 2, except that & is retained in those tenses where 2 is dropped, and slightly modifies the sound. Thus from we have work, of which the present participle is 2010 mm; the prefer participle, 2010 mm; the future, the perfect participle, 2010 mm; the future, (masculine), where the future is the future, (masculine), where the future is the future in the future in the future.

Verbs with medial 2 of the first class sometimes drop the 2 entirely, as per from plo, in which case the causative is inflected like a verb of three radicals, second class. But it is far more common, at least in Oroomiah, for to be substituted for 2, throughout the conjugation: e. g. per, of which the present participle is 220. Here the verb is regularly conformed to the paradigm of participle, and nothing more therefore need be said on the subject.

Verbs with medial & retain the &, and are conjugated like

Verbs with initial , when used as causatives, are quite irregular. ملكة, معلى, and عهر , become respectively ملكة, عمر , and are conjugated like verbs of the

CAUSATIVE VERBS.

We are now prepared to understand the formation of Causative Verbs. Some of the simple verbs of three radicals already given may be used in a causative sense, as to strengthen, or to cause to become strong. Verbs of four radicals have still oftener a causative signification; but the ordinary method of forming causatives is by prefixing to the three radical letters, and then considering the verb as one of four radicals, and inflecting it accordingly. Thus, when of the first class, means to go out; when of the second class, to put out or bring out; and (which is inflected like the second class, to cause to come out.

The verbs which thus form causatives are very numerous, and comprise the majority of those of three radicals in the preceding lists. The mode of formation is quite regular, with the exceptions hereafter to be specified; and the meaning bears in almost all cases a close relation to the meaning of the first root. A few causatives have been placed in the list of verbs conjugated like production. These are either not used in Oroomiah at all in their simple form, as to listen; or the signification of the simple form is much changed, as to accompany, or, better, to give a start to (a traveller), from to stretch out; or the causative form, as generally used, is neuter: e.g. to appear.

Nore, was inserted in the list of verbs inflected like paid, with the idea that it was not properly a causative of any verb in the Modern Syriac. But it may be the causative of the second class) to squeeze in. Compare 2 in the Ancient Syriac, and properly in the Hebrew, to tear asunder, "to bite in malice."

When the last radical of the ground-form is 2, the causative verb follows the conjugation of instead of

VERBS INFLECTED LIKE 2015.

to paw, dig into. LASS to show favor (with) to cleanout, become clean. 200 to despise. 2000 to twitter, to peep. 2909 to howl. to paw into. to deceive. to go round, surround. to cut up. 2000 to switch, be switched. 25is to rinse. 2000 to bedaub, be bedaubed. to search. to howl; in Koordistan, 250 to roll up or be rolled up. to long after (with). 2011 to snap (tr. and intr.). to plaster. 2x3x to fag out, tire out. 1210 to forget. LOSA to nourish, be nourished.

Note. which is inserted in the above list, does not differ in pronunciation from the others, which end in 2 instead of A; but the A is retained in writing out the different tenses.

When a is the second radical, from a kind of necessity, one a is dropped in the preterite and perfect participle. Thus, if we take lies to besech, the present participle is local; the preterite, was (instead of whom); the perfect participle, lies (for lies); the future masculine, was no; the future feminine, was no. From what has been said in the Orthography, it will be evident why is here used in the present participle, instead of ---

Like 2305, inflect

to chirp. كممة (to cause to عمد to bleat. عمد to seknowledge. عمد to mew. كرمة to yelp.

and assis, though having five radicals, differ so little from the preceding model, that they need no special illustration.

may in some respects be considered as a verb of three radicals, having its perfect participle 2000, and its future

VERBS OF FOUR BADICALS WITH FINAL 2.

Take for example to understand.

20003 Present Participle.

In Koordistan, instead of the above, we have Lawis.
As to the substitution of o or . for 1, see Hoff. § 33, 3.

Preterite.

The 2 is here dropped, but lengthens - into -.

Perfect Participle.

In this participle a is substituted for 2, and takes, in addition to its own appropriate vowel, the vowel ...

Here the 2 is dropped in the masculine singular and in the plural, but is substituted for it in the feminine singular, just as in the perfect participle.

Note.—This verb evidently has a relation to the ancient bid, but perhaps a still nearer relation to the Persian . In Bootan we hear it thus: present participle, line; preterite, perfect participle, in the sound of f.

to cause to approach, to approach. to make smart, to smart. to wrinkle, be wrinkled. to empty out. to make to clatter, to to wrinkle, be wrinkled. to buffet, be buffeted. to make proud, be proud. and to make or be ready. to make spout, to spout. bull to caw. A to guide. I to gather up. A to pant for breath. DAXE to venture (intr.) A to disciple. to rattle (as rain). DAMA to whine. ASS to crawl. ASA to make tardy, be tardy. die to brood. As to make smoky, be smoky. to make thin, be thin. MAN to sprinkle, be sprinkled. ADAD to tremble violently. A to chastise. to alter (tr. and intr.). SASA to stamp the foot. XASA to search. to alter (tr. and intr.). LILDA to make neatly. to blacken, become black. JADA to knock. to crush in pieces. to besmear with tallow, be besmeared. to soil, be soiled. to shake about (tr. and intr.). to trim a candle. to make stumble, to stumble. TXXX to make faint, be faint. ALQY to sob. A to make pale, be pale. dydy to glide (as a snake). SASA to stitch together.

Notes on the Preceding List.

As a talkana over the of, it may be considered as a verb of three radicals, following the paradigm of diss, second class,

to be or become hushed.

to cry.

to wrangle.

to cause chills, to have chills.

to make bold, be bold.

to defile.

to miscarry.

to arrange in order.

to sprinkle.

to growl.

to proclaim the gospel.

to make a Mohammedan or become one.

to grope (after).

to whistle.

to make to sob, to sob.

to grean.

to be a stranger.

to hesitate.

to reconcile, become re-

to visit.

Some to come down (from father to son).

to make totter, to totter.

to stun, be stunned.

soio to scream.

to make cloudy, be cloudy.

to make wise, be wise.

to make wallow, to wallow.

to make ancient, be ancient.

to whisper.

to feel after.

to make stagger, to stagger.

HANG to laugh out.

to lay waste, become waste.

to beseech.

to undo, destroy.

to whirl (tr. and intr.).

to crumb, be crumbed.

Sassif to make to escape, to

ASS to twist (tr. and intr.).

ASAS to whisper.

to gaze.

عبرك to pour or flow out.

dry to make to smart, to

to sob from pain.

to cut up, to be cut up.

to make light, be light.

SHAD to cluck.

to parboil, be parboiled. to let down, to sink down. to tear, be torn. to chink (intr.). to swing (tr. and intr.) bass to roll (tr. and intr.). to toss about. to tingle (as the ear). to tear (tr. and intr.). dads to clap. to defile, be defiled. to rattle (in speech). abab to scream. to have mercy. to giggle, gurgle, tomake giggle or gurgle. to wither (tr. and intr.). to gather up. to wrap in a vail, to wrap one's self in a vail. XXX to scare away. hand to crack open (as the to make glitter, to glitter. Low to fix a price. to snuff around. to speak.

to make lame, be lame.

to gnaw. to make appear, to appear. to abstain from food. to make glitter, to glitter. to freeze (tr. and intr.). to make sprout, to sprout. to take a fine. to mock. to forbear, be reluctant. to blister. to borrow or lend on usury. Soos to be lazy. to preach. to make pant, to pant. to hasten (tr. and intr.). to constrain. to make green, to green. to make poor, be poor. to rest (tr. and intr.). to reprove. to build. to give one a start (on a to listen.

.922 of to demolish, DAL to strut. DODO to neigh. to breathe hard. to make faint, be faint. and to laugh aloud. to push. 0000 to buzz. to clasp. Sas to wail. to push. _ 010 to whisper (as the wind). to gnaw. 2020 to have a diarrhea. to make to gnash, to gnash, to so to make whine, to whine. to snore. to make subject, become subject. to reckon. to litter, be littered (as a room, a field, etc.). to make to rattle, to 6929 to become pale. to crush or be crushed. Dang to make tinkle, to tinkle. to delay (tr. and intr.). to tear off, be torn off. to hum. to ring (tr. and intr.). to flicker or make to flicker. 5919 to swagger. to murmur. Sase to batter. to move (tr. and intr.). to defile ceremonially or be defiled. to make heavy, be heavy. to make mighty, be mighty. to sputter, to make sput-1239 to make yellow, be yellow. I to shiver in pieces (tr. 2929 to bray. and intr.). to arm, to be armed. to injure, become injured. to wash away, be wash-ed away. to tear in pieces, be torn in pieces. to excite fever, have none to throw. VOL. V. 11

Like pard, inflect

to foam up. to be bashful. 1932 to become cheap. Adol to delay (tr. and intr.). to creep. to enlighten, to become to prick. to grow fat and be antic. to confuse or be confused. to twinkle. to dazzle or be dazzled. to crown. HAND to bubble up. adad to scatter (tr. and intr.). to roar. to assail. to stir up. to make bud, to bud. to tumble (tr. and intr.). to hum, coo. to abhor (with >). to rust (tr. and intr.). to torment or be tor-mented.

to growl. to grow. to whiz. to drag (tr.). to enlarge or to be enlarged. to make to wallow, to to make to sing (as quinine does a sick man's (head), to sing. to be two-sided, ride the fence. to make trot, to trot. to thin out, become sparse. to shelter, to find shelter. to make or be bloody. to make fine or small. to wound or be wounded. to make pine away or to pine away. 2000 to rock (tr. and intr.). to make a clatter (of to apply (remedies). to become late.

to be leprous.

to creep, and numerous others. Still oftener, perhaps, the idea is that of repeated sound, as in and to roar with laughter, and to wail, and to snore, and to cluck.

The second radical is included in the first syllable of the root, as well as of all its inflections.

As an example, take soon to speak.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

The present participle has --- as the vowel of the first syllable, with its corresponding • in the second.

Preterite.

I spoke.

We spoke.

This differs from only in having one consonant more in the first syllable, rendering it a mixed syllable.

Perfect.

المعامل المعا

Future.

Speak thou.

Speak ye.

The root to give, like its predecessor in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff. § 73, Ann. 4, and § 80), is singularly irregular. Being in constant use, it should, however, be made very familiar.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CLASS.

FIRST VARIETY. FOUR RADICALS.

Verbs of four radicals are far more common in the Modern Syriac than in the Ancient or the Hebrew. Many of these, however, are produced by a reduplication of biliteral or triliteral roots, and are exceedingly expressive. The idea is often that of repetition, as in to bruise in pieces, to trample, to trample, to grope, to whirl,

There are a few verbs of four radicals, besides those enumerated with regular verbs, which in general conform to the verbs of the first class.

Take for example 2 5 to thirst.

Lag Present Participle. And Preterite.

imperative.

Like 26, inflect 26 to flame.

As another example take to wish.

Present Participle.

ا جدا جدي Perfect Participle. احدا المحارية الم

Imperative.

Thus inflect to bleat, to become smooth, to churn, to graze, and to plaster.

In regard to it may be remarked that, while the present participle, as used in Koordistan, conforms to the preceding paradigm, on the plain of Oroomiah we generally hear it thus:

As another example we may take 22 to be or become weary.

know, or how do I know? mood-yan, there being little, if any, difference, whether the speaker is a man or a woman. This tense is also habitually shortened in other connections by some of the people.

The verb to live, is perhaps more regular in the modern than in the ancient language (Hoff. § 76, Ann. 1), but has some peculiarities. It is thus inflected:

Like the preceding, inflect 1 to make a fence; 2 to be set on edge (as the teeth); the latter regular, except the --.

The verb to search after, has been generally written in accordance with the usage in Koordistan, and is inflected as follows:

This, however, is very unlike the usage in Oroomiah. As here spoken, it is an anomalous verb of the second class, and is thus inflected: present participle (or local); preterite (or perf. participle); future (continue); imperative (continue); future (continue); imperative (continue); imperative

a house, for in Moreover, in some places we hear in as the perfect participle, which is quite as near as any form to the ancient.

Some verbs have initial . and final 1.

Take for example 200 to swear.

Thus conjugate to lament, and 25 to bake. The present participle of the former is like the first form given, i. e. 255, that of the latter is like either the first or the second form, i. e. 255 are the roots, instead of 255 and 255. Compare 255 and 255 in the Ancient Syriac.

Somewhat different is the root at to know.

Note.—The sof the future is pronounced as if double (see the future of wax), and in Oroomiah is almost hardened into what do I

The perfect participles of and and have sometimes been written written and to express more exactly the sound; but there is not sufficient reason for this deviation.

Some of these verbs with final & are both of the first and second

class, and some of the first class only, as noted above.

VERBS OF THE FIRST CLASS DOUBLY IRREGULAR.

One who has made himself familiar with regular verbs of the first class, and the different varieties already given, will have little difficulty in learning the conjugation of those verbs which are doubly irregular.

Some of these have both initial and final 2.

Root 252 to curdle.

Löls Present Participle. Sil ha Preterite.

The future is sometimes - masc., خن مع fem.

we also occasionally hear (1) In for the imperative singular. The ancient language has the same imperative, the initial 2 being dropped.

In Salmas, Gawar, and perhaps other districts, the root of this word is corrupted into 22: present participle 25, preterite 5, perfect participle 25 or 25, imperative 25. In Tiary, x is substituted for a throughout the conjugation: we thus have 252, etc. Indeed, the substitution of x is not confined to this word: e.g.

The peculiarity of the future consists in this, that the second radical is pronounced as if doubled, the first belonging to the first syllable and the second to the second syllable. The affects the adjacent vowels, but is not sounded separately. This peculiarity is not found throughout Koordistan.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Hear thou.

ANDY Hear ye.

Like Like, conjugate

to bore (a hole).

to bubble up.

to swallow.

to be satisted.

to assemble (intr.). 1 and 2.

مد to step, march.

to shave.

to crack (intr.).

to fear.

to recompense.

غغ to sow.

نے to dye.

to ferment.

to break off (tr. and intr.).

to sink (intr.). 1 and 2.

مُحِدٌ to adhere to.

to be sick. Of four radicals, but regular, except in the root.

مُحْمُ to make a breach.

Notes on the Preceding List.

wariety, thus: تر فومل. The masculine has not the peculiarity of sound of منافعة. All the preceding verbs except, and even this in some districts of Koordistan, may in the same way take in the future feminine.

10

YOL Y.

to suck. The future, or rather the present subjunctive, with عن preceding (عند من), is generally pronounced kam sin.

Those of the preceding verbs which have medial o, make their perfect participle irregularly, as Low from low, except low, the peculiarities of which were noted in the first paradigm.

FIFTH VARIETY. THIRD RADICAL ..

Root said to hear.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

رهند كناه العضائد المناسبة ال

The present participle is only irregular in this, that the third radical, being a quiescent, coalesces with the preceding vowel, and is then inserted, which takes the final 2. We, however, often hear and the infinitive which should not be considered a vulgarity, as it is nearer the ancient language than the ordinary form.

Preterite Tense.

I heard (m. and f.).

We heard.

Perfect Tense.

I have heard (m.).

A LANK I have heard (f.).

وه المحمد We have heard.

The perfect participle takes - as the vowel of the first syllable, which includes the second radical. The sis not sounded, and the last syllable is 2.

Future Tense.

المثر أما I shall hear (m.).

We shall hear.

200 to be or become drunk. 2 to descend. 1 and 2 25 to be or become clean. to pour out, run out. to be or become loose. to rend. 25x to be like. 1 and 2. 255 to gather (tr. and intr.). Low to be spread. 1 and 2. to be or become hard. to parch (as corn) (intr.): 25 to sag. to be or become quiet. to scorch (intr.). 25% to faint. 1 and 2. 25 to gain. to loose, become loose. 1 195 to gripe. to break, to be broken (bread). to drink. 200 to call, to read. 2 to suspend. to be or become thick or hard. 25A to repeat. 1 and 2. 29A to stick (intr.). 1 and 2. 25 to be or become weary. 20A to be or become wet. 200 to be pleased with.

Notes on the Preceding List.

is quite irregular, and, were it not for its derivation, might perhaps better be written loss. The present participle is Loss; the perfect participle, Loss; and the future, Loss, L

The future feminine of this verb is either has or or has. So 200, 200, 200, 200, 200, 200, and 250, all of which have — in the root.

This is sometimes, though vulgarly, pronounced in the present and in the preterite , as if from , as if from ,

to rejoice. to see. 25 to sin. to be or become sweet. to keep (intr.). 1 and 2. to be supported (by). 29 to incubate. to go to stool. to broil (intr.). 1 and 2. to sleep. to drive (an animal). to be or become hid. 1 and 2. 205 to be seared. 1 and 2. to stop. to go out (as fire). to be or become covered. 1 and 2. 255 to be or become short. to be or become covered. to lap up. 295 to devour greedily. to lap (reg.).

to strike.

to arrive.

to fill (tr. and intr.). same as 255, to count. 2000 to wash (clothes). to be able. to wipe. 223 to leap. 25 to butt. 2 to forget. to bathe. 25 to dart. 2 to be or become blind (reg.). 23.00 to hate. 246 to dip out (as water). I and 2. 2500 to be or become bad. to be difficult. 1 and 2. 255 to rain. 1 and 2. to search after. to separate (intr.). 1 and 2. to be delivered. 1 and 2. 255 to burst out. 225 to be lukewarm. 245 to be or become broad.

Future Tense.

וש ו בת לכב will pour (f.).

We will pour.

The first syllable of this tense, in the masculine singular and the plural, is simple, not including the second radical; and the third radical 2 is dropped, except in the third person singular masculine, 25, where it appears as the final letter. In the feminine, 2 is changed into ...

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

This is quite irregular, making the standard; but in the singular it is exactly like the ancient. In the singular, 1 becomes ; and in the plural, it is dropped:

Pour thou.

Pour ye.

VERBS FOLLOWING THE ANALOGY OF 25.

As a number of these verbs are both of the first and second class, they are noted here just as in the table of regular verbs of the first class.

2005 to vomit. 225 to rave, talk wildly. to flow (out). to weep. to wear (out) (tr. and intr.). to be or become pure. 255 to build, to count. to resemble. 1 and 2. 255 to create. 2007 to become. to foam up. 1 and 2. 210 to be pleasant to. to beg, be a beggar. to be or become naked. 25 to crack (as glass) (intr.). 25 to lean (down). 259 to commit adultery.

to bring forth (young).

55 to lengthen or be long.

to hasten.

ha to inherit.

to be distressed.

to sit.

to burn.

Example, 255 to pour.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

مِدْ كُنْ عَمْ I am pouring (m.). جُوْدُ كُنْ We are pouring.

This tense is regular, with the exception that, two alephs coming together, as in 225, according to the analogy of the ancient language, 2 is changed into ...

Preterite Tense.

I poured (m. and f.).

We poured.

The radical 2, when it becomes a medial instead of a final letter, as in this tense, ought, according to the analogy of the ancient language (see Hoff., paradigm of), to be changed into . This, however, is not the case. The 2 serves merely to lengthen the preceding into , and, being itself not heard, is not written. Thus, instead of , we have ...

Perfect Tense.

I have poured (f.).

وَمْرِ كُنْ اللهِ We have poured.

Instead of the regular perfect participle, which would be 21, the first and second radicals take , and form one syllable, the 2 being changed into ., as in the present participle.

Example, to learn.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

We are learning. ا حِلْنَقَادَ مَعْ

It will be seen that this tense is perfectly regular, except that ... becomes the second, instead of the first, radical.

Preterite Tense.

I learned (m.).

We learned.

Here . becomes again the first radical, and is silent.

Perfect Tense.

رمة علمات I have learned (m.) وهُمْ علمات We have learned.

The only irregularity is that the first • is not sounded.

Future Tense.

AS I shall learn (m.)

We shall learn.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Learn thou.

Learn ye.

It will be seen that the . is not sounded here.

to be worth, as spoken, is quite anomalous. The present participle is the preterite, the prefect participle, the future, the future, the imperative,

has its present participle على, and, were it not for its etymology, might be classed with verbs with initial 2. Its future is also sometimes عد المناه

VERBS WITH MEDIAL &.

Under this variety may properly come verbs with medial ...

They differ somewhat, but not essentially, from the preceding. Take, for example, to thrust in. The present participle is (a) or (b). The preterite is ; the future, ; the imperative, Some of these verbs have two forms of the present participle, marked (a & b), some only one. In Koordistan, the future is not (b), but (c), but (c), and (c), but (c), and (c)

Like , inflect

The sweat (a & b) and to hew (a & b) and to tremble (b).

The state (a & b) and to shut (a).

The state (a & b) and to be state (a & b).

The state (a & b) and to fold (a).

The state (a & b) and to fold (a).

The state (a & b) and (a & b) a

THIRD VARIETY.

This variety is characterized by the transposition of ., which is sometimes the first and sometimes the second radical.

925 to scratch.

\$25 to measure.

715 to be or become black.

425 to bow.

525 to be alienated.

to be paid (an account).

\$25 to curse.

to blame.

to make dough.

to suck (the breast).

has to die.

was to rest.

bi to nod.

to sting, to bite.

to be or become old.

Dio to ordain.

to weed.

to be or become narrow.

to be or become cool.

515 to lose the saver.

529 to dawn.

Pie to hunt or fish.

The to fast.

to drain off (intr.).

to listen to, to obey.

to fade (as grass).

715 to rise. (Imp. 505.)

52 to bruise or become bruised.

526 to chisel out.

Ald to hit.

525 to be high, to rise.

to sprinkle.

to spit.

522 to go down (as a swelling).

41x to rub.

to long for.

bli to kindle.

4 to fasten (the eyes).

DIA to finish (tr. and intr.)

52% to come to one's self.

is almost always on the plain of Oroomiah pronounced in the present as if written 2522. In some districts it is regular.

The participle, which would regularly be 2 2 or 2 19, is contracted into 2 1, the feminine of which is 2 2.

Future Tense.

العمر العالم I shall remain (m.).

اst fem. تم فيغر

hand has 2nd mase.

Lhad ha 2nd fem.

Srd mase.

عدد فيغر 3rd fem.

العلا العلا العلا العلام الما العلام ا

and plural.

3rd plural

The vowel - here forms a diphthong with the following -, excepting in the third singular masculine.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

remain thou.

remain ye.

Here the middle radical falls out, and we write as above, instead of xols or xols.

VERBS FOLLOWING THE ANALOGY OF 325.

525 to make water.

15 to judge.

to make fine or small.

525 to return.

to tread.

22 to increase.

529 to swell

Sometime to sew.

to curry (a horse).

to be or become hot.

to bathe (of females)

52 to look.

51 to venture.

225 to invite.

On the other hand, the usage in Koordistan makes them regular verbs with initial 2, like 2. The ancient root of 2 is also 2. We have therefore preferred to class them here. It should not be unnoticed that when 2, etc. are not used in Oroomiah as the futures of these verbs, we have instead 2, 2, 2, 2, 2, etc.

SECOND VARIETY. MIDDLE RADICAL 2 or ..

The middle radical in this variety inclines sometimes to 2, and sometimes, especially in Koordistan, to the sound of ... (See Hoff. § 33, 3, b.) Nordheimer is probably correct in saying (§ 397), in regard to such verbs, that the root properly consists of two strong immutable consonants, in which the fundamental idea of the verb is contained; and that between these a weak letter is inserted to complete the usual form. This falls out often, as will be seen hereafter, in the causative form, and always in the reduplicated form.

For the sake of uniformity the roots are now all written

with medial 2.

Take for example 219 to remain.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

We are remaining (m.). وهُذُو كُنُو We are remaining.

This is regular, if we consider . the middle radical.

Preterite Tense,

We remained (m. and f.) We remained.

Perfect Tense.

We have remained (m.) 2x4 We have remained.

Note 1.—With a negative preceding, 2 is not sounded in common conversation (e. g. 22), and three syllables are reduced to two.

Note 2.—In Bootan, we have the following form of the future, which is well worthy of a place in our grammar, as it throws light on the relation of the ancient to the modern language.

المَّافِلُ الْمَا الْمُولِدُ الْمُحْدِدُ اللهِ اللهُ اللهِ اللهُ اللهُ

Note 3.—On the plain of Oroomiah, the verb is generally used instead of in all the tenses of the indicative, except the future, and in the imperative. The present tense is in the perfect (in some villages in living), the preterite in the perfect is no doubt the ancient in the imperative in the future in the mountains the future in the would have been better to write the preterite in the perfect in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the mountains the future in the perfect in the perfect

In regard to how, how, and will, there is some question whether they should stand here, or be classed with the second variety. If we regard the usage on the plain of Oroomiah only, it would seem that they ought to be considered as verbs with medial 2. The present participle is almost always spoken in this province as if written is almost always and in this province as if written in the futures are often how, i. e. like how, i. e. like

Future Tense.

The future tense is regular, and the imperative also, except that in the latter the 1 is not sounded. It is written and eat thou, and eat ye.

Note.—It will be understood, both in regard to this and the following varieties, that those tenses which are not mentioned are perfectly regular.

LIST OF VERBS WITH INITIAL 2.

The verbs sol and sol are entirely regular; i. e. they conform to the preceding paradigm. The same is true of sounded (see Hoff. § 27, 4, a), and in the imperative, which is in the singular, and sol in the plural. Compare the imperative of the same verb in the ancient language, sol, sol, etc. In the modern, we often hear sol go thou, just as sol in the ancient, and sol in the Hebrew. This suffix is used with the imperative of but few verbs; e.g. sol in the relation of the modern to the ancient verb is discussed.

Future Tense of 392.

الم المرازك ا

A verb of four radicals may follow this paradigm, e. g. to shed tears; being regarded as a quiescent. A few of the above roots beginning with are really causatives, a weak radical, as, for instance, in the case of having fallen out. The rules for the formation and conjugation of causatives will be considered hereafter.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CLASS.

FIRST VARIETY. FIRST RADICAL 2. Root 2 to eat.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

The only irregularity here is owing to the 2. This is heard but faintly, if at all, and the - is lengthened to -.

Imperfect Tense.

كُوْلًا مَعْ الْمُعْ I was eating (m.) مَوْلًا مَعْ الْمُعْلِدُ مَا الْمُعْلِدُ مَا الْمُعْلِدُ مَا الْمُعْلِد

Preterite Tense.

I ate.

We ate.

Perfect Tense.

a Link I have eaten.

رفت علي We have eaten.

The perfect participle, by the aid of which this tense is formed, is regular; but the first radical is silent, as well as in the preterite. made to empty (tr.). to ornament. nam to maim. i to wonder. r to vex or be vexed. i to gape. i to atone. r to muse. r to bring out. to cut out r 1 to gaze at. r to stretch out r to translate. r to chew the cud, to digest. r We to be or become sober. i to refine. i to anticipate. r to make holy. r Sold to promise. Too to happen. to look. 7 to peel. r to squeeze in.

to glorify. r

to entice. r to be or become foolish. i to send. r hox to long for. i to praise. r to strip, despoil. r to be or become quiet. to dislocate. r to parboil. r to perform a burial service.r to be or become peaceful. to make overflow. r on to be acquainted with. to be partaker. r and i Soa to repent i A to cause to perish. to destroy. r TOA to finish. to sigh. r. ion to prop. r to spill. r Loa to abandon r A to make. r to button.

to sell. to find time; to supply. r Soo to join. to return (tr.). to disturb, be disturbed. to love. i to defile, or become defiled, with milk, etc., during fast. to heat (tr.). i 939 to prepare. r to find. to blacken (tr.). to incite. to cover, shut. to become cold. to bow (tr.). i to ask after one's health. to pay a debt. to renew. to teach. to rule. to smell. to wash. to nurse. to be or make strong. to apply (attention). i to escape. to cause to ascend. to singe. to cool (tr.). i 16 to play. rand i to burn (tr.). r to indulge. to raise. i to bury. r to chisel out. to cool (tr.). i to drive away. r nos to cause to hit. i to hem; to brush up. to lift up. 655 to roll up. 7 to kindle (tr.). i to carry (away). This root is also to place. to blot. i to raise (the dead).

may be used with other verbs, but is not so common, and is now omitted in our books. If forms its imperative plural thus:

VERBS OF THE SECOND CLASS CONJUGATED LIKE

Nore.—r, following a verb, shows that it conforms in every respect to spect to spect; i, that it takes -',- in the present participle, — in the perfect participle, etc. Verbs are not repeated in this table which are used as verbs of either class, without a change of signification, and which have been given already in the first table.

to cultivate. to strip off bark. r to scatter (tr.). to spy out. to tempt. to glean. i to wallow. to envy. to search. to be dizzy. i to look. r to render vain or idle. r TO heal r to support, nourish. r to deflour. r 12 to lie. r to degrade (tr.). to sear. r to ask a question. 55 to bless. to provoke. to cook. r and to make ready. to do skilfully. " to help. i to believe. to wrangle. Sed to beget. to answer. VOL. V.

Imperfect Tense.

l might save (m.). هُوْنَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَلِيقُ الْمُعَلِقُ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَالِقُونَ الْمُعَلِقُ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَلِقُ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُونِ الْمُعَالِقُ الْمُعِلَّقِ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعَلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُلِقِ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمِعِلَى الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلَّالِقِيلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْعِلْمِ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُ الْمُعِلِقُلْمِ الْمُعِلِقِيلِ الْمُعِلِقُ الْعِلْمِ الْمُعِلَّ الْمُعِلِقُلْمِ

This is inflected like the corresponding tense of the first class. Like the present tense, its vowels depend on the vowels of the future, to which they always conform.

Perfect Tense.

Living Low 2nd masc.
Living Law 2nd masc.
Living Law 2nd fem.
Living Law 3rd masc.
Living Law 3rd fem.

1504 505 1st plural.

Lisas . on on 2nd plural.

2504 Lot 3rd plural.

Phyperfect Tense.

ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ lat fem. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ lat plural. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ lat fem. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ lat fem. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ 2nd masc. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ 3rd masc. ໄກ່ວຣີ ໄດ້ຕົ້ວຕໍ່ 3rd fem.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

save thou (m.). فخت save thou (f.).

فَدَّعَفِ عَدِهِ بِهِ. فَدُعِفِ عَدِهِ. فَدُعِفِ عَدِهِ.

It is to be particularly noted that the verbs marked i in the following table make the plural imperative by simply adding to the singular. Thus, envyye, envyye,

Future Tense.

This is inflected like the corresponding tense of the first class. Those verbs, however, which have --- in the root, or -- in the perfect participle, have the same vowels here also; e. g.

to return (tr.), cause to turn, has its perfect participle and its future.

Second Future Tense.

listed of he I shall have saved (m.).

ושל בל של של בסבשו 1st plur.

בלים אם אם 2nd masc.

inica con of ha 2nd plural.

Living Log No 3rd mase.

שבים ביסש אם 3d plur.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

I may save (m.).

lst plural.

This is inflected like the corresponding tense of the first class, and takes -, as well as -, between the second and third radicals, whenever the future takes them.

Second Present Tense.

كَوْمُونَ I may be saving (m.).

المُعَمِّعُ كَمْوَالِدُ اللهِ اللهِ

luois how 2nd masc.

word on on 2nd plural.

كۈنىڭ كېرەش 2nd fem.

عدم المرابعة عدم المرابعة الم

2003 200 3rd masc.

2003 2 2007 3rd fem.

Perfect Tense.

المن المنافع المعادد المنافع المنافع

The perfect participle is formed by inserting o after the first radical, and giving the last radical the vowel = with final 2.

Note.—In some cases, — is inserted between the second and third radicals, as, for instance, Lawrence having envied. This vowel

always appears in the feminine participle.

Pluperfect Tense.

ໄດ້ຕົ້ວ ໄດ້ກ່ວວ I had saved (m.).
ໄດ້ຕົ້ວ ໄດ້ກ່ວວ Ist fem.
ໄດ້ຕົ້ວ ໄດ້ກ່ວວ 2nd masc.
ໄດ້ຕົ້ວໄດ້ ໄດ້ກ່ວວ 2nd fem.

රිග් 1 ක්රේ 3rd masc.

مَوْمَ لِمُحَ الْعَامِ الْعَالِمُ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْعَامِ الْع

ood and plural.

ood अते Plural,

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

مَنْ المَامُعُ I am saving (m.).

مُنْ المَامُعُ Ist fem.

المَنْ المَامُعُ 2nd masc.

المَنْ المَامُعُ 3nd masc.

المُنْ المَامُعُ 3nd masc.

المُنْ المَامُعُ 3nd masc.

المُنْ المَامُعُ 3nd masc.

Imperfect Tense.

الْمُورِدُ مُورِدُ مُورِدُ مُورِدُ مُورِدُ مُورِدُ اللَّهِ ال

າວໍດີກວັງ 2nd masc. ວ່າຕົວເລື່ອ 2nd plural. ໃດຕົວກວັງ 2nd fem.

ໄດ້ທີ ໄປດຳລີ່ 3rd masc. ດດ໌ທີ ໄປດຳລີ່ 3rd plural.

The same elision takes place which has been repeatedly noticed. We are to pronounce parookin wa, etc. Notice this in the pluperfect.

Preterite Tense.

المنامع 1 saved (m.). المنامع 1st plural. المنامع 2nd masc. المنامع 2nd fem. المنامع 3rd fem.

This is formed like the corresponding tense in verbs of the first class, except that • is inserted after the first radical. ample, , if it conform to the preceding paradigm, denotes to go out; but if it conform to the following paradigm, to bring out or to cause to come out. The same is true of the second class, it denotes to finish, in a transitive sense, or to save.

It is, however, to be remarked that a few verbs are used indifferently as verbs of the first or second class, without any change of signification. Thus , following either paradigm, is transitive, and means to command. More rarely a verb is intransitive in either conjugation, as to leak, which is properly of the first class, but used in some districts as if of the second class.

Verbs of the second class have regularly three radicals. A so is prefixed to the root in all its inflections by the people of Tiary, Tekhoma, Nochea, and the western slopes of the Koordish mountains, but is not heard on the plain of Oroomiah. It has been for a number of years omitted in

our books.

The rules for the formation of compound tenses being the same in all verbs, it is unnecessary to repeat them. The two conjugations do not differ in this respect, but in the form of the infinitive, the participles, the preterite, and the

imperative.

To form the present participle from the root, the first radical takes is when the root has is, and is when the root has is inserted after the the second radical; and when is the first vowel, is inserted. The third radical takes is with final 2. We will again take six as the model.

INFINITIVE 150395 to save.

Present Participle.

Perfect Participle.

Adv to be or become palsied. A to perish. 1 and 2. At to level. 1 or 2. to perish, be lost. 1 and 2. to be pleasing to. ws to spill (intr.). 1 and 2. And to take. to mould or be mouldy. ond 2 to burst (as an egg). 1 HSA to meet. had to sneeze. Lit to sag down. 552 to partake. 1 or 2. Aux to weigh (tr.). A to be reformed. 1 and 2. Jax to eat out. And to transplant. 1 or 2. 33A to crumb up. to be mended. 1 and 2. to be or become silent. to be buttoned. I and 2. to be or become numb. And to break. to be or become thick. to thrust. to wither (intr.). àà to remember. to press out (juice). to fall down (as a wall).

Note.—Some verbs of four radicals are included in the above list, as they are in every respect regular, except that the second radical takes — in preference to — (according to the analogy of the ancient language) in the present participle. Thus we have like a dreaming, like withering, like pressing out.

CLASS H. REGULAR VERB.

Verbs of the first class are very often intransitive. On the other hand, the majority of verbs of the second class are transitive. A number of verbs, which, when conjugated according to the first class, are intransitive, when conjugated according to the second class, become transitive. For exSas to wind (tr. and intr.).

to scorch, as food (intr.).

to squat.

to be or become mad.

to string (as peppers).

Sit to receive. 1 or 2.

to complain.

à d to bury.

to joint together.

to be or become holy.

to put on (the outer garment).

to kill.

to gather (grapes).

to turn aside.

to lose the bark (as a tree).

to be crushed, to crush.

to twist.

to pinch.

to be wrinkled or puckered.

عُفِدُ to fold. 1 or 2

to partake of the sacrament.

שבׁם to win; to overlay.

to sweep, rake. 1 and 2.

to tremble,

to stone.

to be numb.

to be broad.

to run.

to have mercy on. 1 or 2.

to be far.

to ride. Future some-

times (A. .

to be or become soft.

to kick, stamp.

to dance.

to delineate.

was to boil.

to let, let go.

to confuse, to be confused.

box to leap.

to be or become warm.

to spread out.

to pluck.

to strip off (as one's clothes). 1 and 2.

to be dislocated. 1 and 2.

to be parboiled. I and 2.

Sant to break.

to overflow (intr.). 1 and 2.

to plunder. to redden, blush. to support, prop. to need. to rot. to become empty. 1 and 2. to be crooked, deceitful. ado to wait. to be or become weary of. to be beautiful. 1 and 2. to reproach. to deny. to bolt (as flour). So to scratch, trace. die to suck in. was to comb. to undo, pull down. to do. to pass. Sax to spin. See under 129, p. 63. 419 to stretch (out). to be baptized. to dwell. to dig out.

to reflect. 1 or 2. to open out, become flat. to be or become crooked. (to work. Present participle may be 2 to go out. 1 and 2. to fight. to exult. to command. 1 or 2. to blossom. to fiee (as sleep). to fly. 1 to tear, wear out. 53 to rub, use friction. to burst out, to make burst. to cut. to spread, as wings (tr. and intr.). to separate (tr. and intr.). to rend. 1 or 2 to be or become sorry. to be or become straight. to melt (intr.). 1 and 2. to open.

YOL V.

to flee.

to flash.

to put on (clothes).

to be fitting.

to becken, wink, etc.

to lick.

to peck up (food); to em-

to mix (liquids).

to be found. 1 and 2.

to be or become meek.

to pluck.

to rub off skin, to be bald.

to be or become bitter.

to scour, to be polished.

to anoint.

to stretch out.

to tell a parable. 1 or 2

to bark (as a dog).

to reprove.

to hew.

to vow.

boi to shy (as a horse).

50 to abstain from meat, etc.

to sift.

to be or become ashamed.

di to drop (as water).

to keep.

to pull or root out.

ami to saw.

to blow (with the mouth).

to fall.

to shake (as clothes).

to plant.

to be slender or thin.

and to peck.

das to peck at.

to drive (a nail).

to paint. 1 or 2.

to skin.

Azs to drain off (tr. and intr.).

to kiss.

bass to make an onset.

ins to fall (as leaves).

to trust.

to worship.

to fill up (tr. and intr.).

to be or become quiet.

to be or become sour. to be or become rotten, to putrify. to prohibit, keep back. Low to wear. to be deficient to embrace. to dig. to reap. to honor, praise. to spoil (intr.). to expend. 1 or 2. to arrange in order. to scoop out. to be singed. 1 and 2. to grin. to be or become sharp. to think. to be worthy. to thresh, pound up. DA. to seal. to be boastful.

to crush, break in pieces.

to grind.

to ask for. to sink down. 1 and 2. to choke, drown, etc. (tr. and intr.). to drive away. to beat up (as eggs). to grow fat. to thrust in. to migrate, remove from place to place. to anoint, to paint (as eyes). to be or become faint. to seize by violence. to split. to be or become mature. to sweep. to prune (vines). to fold. See Add. to be or become hungry. to deny (as one's religion). to be or become angry. to thrust through. to climb. day to be evident. to write. to tie a knot

to circumcise. to buy. to laugh. The present is to struggle (in fight). to oppress. to conquer. to fill (to the brim). to lose the bark. 1 and 2. to look sullen. to full (cloth). to sing. to grasp firmly, wring. be to weave, knit. to steal. \$30 to become ready. I and 2. to snatch. 29 to scratch (as a board). to efface, scrape off. to strip off (as leaves), be stripped off. 629 to scratch (with the nails). do to rise (as the sun). to slip. to grind (in a hand-mill). to mix, confuse (tr. and intr.). to shovel off, sweep away (as a river). to confine, shut up. to slide. to start (with fear). to draw. to walk (around). to become white. to sacrifice. to seize or hold. to pound, to beat. to milk. to lock, to bar. to err. sos to thresh. to dream. to lie down, to sleep. to leak (as a roof). 1 or 2. 4 to change (intr.). to squeeze; to escape. to be seared. 1 and 2. to lock; to set (as fruit). to touch. to argue. to bear, to be patient.

PASSIVE VOICE.

This will be most advantageously considered, after we finish the paradigms of the Active Voice.

VERBS OF THE FIRST CLASS CONJUGATED LIKE

It is to be understood that when a verb is marked "1 or 2," the verb is either of the first or second class, its signification remaining unchanged. On the other hand, "1 and 2" denotes that the verb is conjugated in both methods, but with a change of signification.

It is not to be presumed that all the regular verbs of the first class are given here, or that any of the following lists are complete. An effort has, however, been made to collect

as many of the verbs in common use as possible.

Although one meaning is placed opposite to each verbal root, this is by no means a dictionary. Frequently a verb is used in four or five or more significations. Only one, or at the most two of these are noted down.

خية	to become lean.	خدو	to dry (intr.).
فية	to thrive. 1 and 2.	خذو	to kneel.
جدد	to be scattered. 1 and 2.		to lighten (flash).
-	to scatter (seed). 1 or 2.	جعد	to be or become cooked.
خيد	to be or become useless or idle. 1 and 2.		Ton administrated with
خد	to conceive.		to fashion; mingle.
خلد	to be pressed (with business).	يجد	to marry.
خدم	to bruise, crush.		to braid.
خصح	to get well, be pleased. 1 and 2.	کیو	to blaspheme. 1 or 2.
במב	to be defloured. 1 and 2.	- N	to stack up.
خيرة	to diminish (intr.). 1 and 2.	Tot	to move (intr.).

cisely like Like, the subject need not be alluded to hereafter.

Note 1.—For the pronunciation of the imperfect and pluperfect tenses, see previous remarks on the elision of ... Thus, the imperfect is pronounced leyin wa bipraka, and the pluperfect leyin wa

preka.

Note 3.—The proper negative of is given above, but

Note 4.—The subjunctive takes 2 before its different tenses, which are not inverted. Vulgar usage sometimes employs 2 in-

stead of 25 with the subjunctive.

VERBS USED INTERROGATIVELY.

The verb (as in English and French) takes no new forms in an interrogative sentence; and the interrogation is known only by the inflection of the voice or the sign * placed at the end of the sentence.

Pluperfect Tense.

15 100 00 Imight have finished. 15 100 900 plural

inis log nog 2nd masc. Inis cog on on og 2nd plural.

1 m. as log log 3rd masc. 1 m. as cog cog 3rd plural.

This tense is formed by prefixing the auxiliary, 2007, etc. to the perfect participle.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Boad Finish thou (masc.).

The imperative is formed by inserting o between the second and third radicals, and giving the plural its appropriate termination.

Note 1.—Sometimes we have the following imperative: Low be finishing, and the plural laids coom; but this is not common.

Note 2.—When the middle radical is \exists , it is not ordinarily pronounced in the imperative; e.g. $\exists a \exists x$, pronounced shook. When the middle or final radical is a, to avoid the coming together of two a's, one is omitted in writing, e.g. the imperative of a is a is a if it is a it is a , etc.

VERB WITH THE NEGATIVE PARTICLE 25 OR 25.

Only the first person singular of each tense will be given, as the other persons can be easily supplied by the learner. As every verb in the language makes its negative form preThis tense is formed by prefixing the auxiliary, of, cod, etc., to the present participle.

Imperfect Tense.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເກລີ່ I might finish (m.).

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ Ist fem.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ 2nd masc.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ 2nd fem.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ 3rd masc.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ 3rd fem.

ໄດ້ທີ່ ເລີ່ 3rd fem.

With 20 or 2 prefixed, this tense denotes a past action habitually performed, e. g. 2000 Loo with 2000 he was in the habit of finishing quickly. So too with 2000, the idea being expressed negatively.

Perfect Tense.

in as how finished (m.).

in as how and masc.

in a

This is formed by prefixing the auxiliary, of, etc. to the perfect participle.

generic present. The particle 25 is used in Salmas and Oroomiah, while 21 is the common prefix in Koordistan. We thus have 25 I am in the habit of finishing; 25 I am in the habit of going out, etc. This 25 or 2 is used with all the persons and in both numbers.

On the other hand, as, derived from the ancient prefixed to this tense makes it a preterite, equivalent to subsection out of Oroomiah, and is used there for the sake of euphony, in cases where the regular preterite does not readily take the suffixes. Thus, supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him as I supported him, would be preferred to such as I supported him as I sup

When ك (not ك) is prefixed to this tense, it is also a generic present, or a future, the idea being expressed negatively, e. g. كذها كذها المنافعة المنافعة

Nore 1.—In telling a story we sometimes hear a native vulgarly use the form 25 almost exclusively, as his "narrative tense." It seems then to have the force of our English present, "he goes," "he tells," "he does so and so," and to the mind of a Nestorian gives a sort of vividness to the story.

Note 2.—Before verbs whose first radical is 2 or ., 22 has the sound of 2 with a simple sheva, e.g. pronounced Katin.

Second Present.

ໃຫ້ເລິ່ງ .or I may be finishing (m.). ໃຫ້ເລິ່ງ ၄ or Ist plural.

של אם אם 2nd masc.

itias in 2nd fem.

16195 200 3rd masc.

يام مرسم عمل علم علمان علاما

عدادة الأمام تكدير عدادة.

WOL. V.

Second Future Tense.

วันเลีย เอต์ หมู I shall have finished (m.) เมเลีย รู้อัต หมู Ist plural. วันเลีย เอต์ หมู 2nd masc. วันเลีย เอก์ หมู 2nd plural. วันเลีย เอต์ หมู 3rd masc. วันเลีย เอต์ หมู 3rd plural. วันเลีย เอต์ หมู 3rd plural.

This tense is formed in all verbs by prefixing the first future of the substantive verb to the perfect participle.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

The Modern Syriac verb, as used in dependent clauses, resembles sometimes the subjunctive of the Latin, French, or German, and sometimes that of the English grammarian Murray; but for the sake of greater brevity, not to say simplicity, these varieties will be considered together under the common title of Subjunctive Mood.

The verb assumes the same form in the present tense of this mood as in the future tense, the auxiliary being generally dropped and low being added to form the imper-

fect tense.

Present Tense.

ال الفذير I may finish (m.).

2nd masc.

2nd fem.

3rd masc. فذت

3rd fem.

lst plural.

and plural

3rd plural.

Though this tense is properly used in dependent and hypothetical clauses, by prefixing 25 or -2 to it, it becomes a

Nore 1.—In some parts of Oroomiah and Koordistan, no is contracted to so. Instead of so, the termination so is often vulgarly given to the first person plural, making it so. Instead of the termination on, we sometimes hear one, making the second person plural one sometimes hear one, which is person is in some villages pronounced contraction for con

Note 2.—Instead of the personal pronouns being prefixed to this tense, we occasionally find them suffixed, thus:

يما كا الله الله الله عام 2nd sing. fem. الله الله عام 3rd plural.

We have rarely, if ever, written any of these forms, except for the first person singular. If , as has been assumed, is a fragment of they, it is often very improperly joined by the ignorant villagers to a verb in the singular, e. g. it is he will finish.

The pronouns may in the same manner follow other tenses besides the future. Thus, in the present, we hear like the finishing. The accent finishing, had had like thou art finishing. The accent coming before—, lengthens it. Pronounce biprakeyweena. The in gives the preceding the sound of ey.

These remarks apply to all verbs. The similarity between the ancient and modern language in respect to these forms is worthy of notice. Thus, in the ancient, we have 212 \(\lambda \frac{1}{2} \times \) or \(\lambda \frac{1}{2} \frac

Pluperfect Tense.

الْمُوْرُ الْمُرَا الْمُوْرُ الْمُرَا الْمُوْرُ الْمُرَا الْمُورُ الْمُرَا الْمُرَا الْمُرَادُ الْمُرَادُ الْمُرَادُ الْمُرَادُ اللَّهُ الْمُرَادُ اللَّهُ اللَّا اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّهُ اللَّه

This tense is formed by adding the auxiliary to the respective persons of the perfect tense; to taking the place of and in the singular, and in the imperfect tense.

Note.—In pronunciation, the same elision is made as in the imperfect tense. Thus, we have prēkin wa, prēktan wa, etc.

Future Tense.

Thou, etc. (m.).
Thou, etc. (f.).

You, etc.

He, etc. گذی

She, etc.

They, etc.

To form this tense in regular verbs of this class, zkapa is almost universally used with the first radical, and the second radical is included in the first syllable; but the third person singular masculine is an exception, as the first syllable in this case is a simple syllable, not including the second radical. The terminations subjoined to the third radical are to the third radical of 3 sing. The termination is the third radicals of 3 sing. The termination is the third radicals of 3 sing.

This tense has no preformative letter. A short zlama is inserted between the second and third radicals, and the following terminations are subjoined: , 1 sing. m. and f.; , 2 masc. sing.; , 2 fem. sing.; , 3 masc. sing.; , 3 fem. sing.; , 1 plural; , 2 plural; , 3 plural.

Note 1.—In Bootan, the third person plural (m. and f.) is and so in all verbs. This usage is not confined to that district. We also have sometimes בושלם for בושלם.

Note 2.—When the last radical is a or a, the terminal a is dropped. Thus, from to grind, we find the preterite and, not to saw, we have the preterite and to saw, we have the preterite and to kill, we have the preterite and to kill, we have the preterite and the same applies to the preterite of all verbs of both classes.

Perfect Tense.

The inished (f.).

This tense, like the present, is a compound tense, and is formed by prefixing the perfect participle to the present tense of the verb of existence, exactly as the present participle is prefixed to it to form the present tense.

The perfect participle, in all regular verbs of this class, is formed by inserting after the second radical, and adding 2 to the last radical, if masculine, or 2 h, if feminine. It will be noticed that the participle takes 2, in the plural.

Imperfect Tense.

العدادة العدادة عمر المادة I was finish- 000 00 100 We were 200 - 20195 ing (f.). בפנים בח שפים Thou wast finishing(m.) oof on its as You were Thou wast בפנטו במת שפו finishing (f.). He was fin-100 10195 oof lais They were finishing. ishing. She was fin-בפגםו שפו ishing.

From the present tense is formed the imperfect, by adding the auxiliary 200. In the third person singular, 200 takes the place of 200, instead of being added to them; and in the third person plural, 200 takes the place of 200.

Note 1.—The elision spoken of in connection with the imperfect tense of the verb 200 to be, takes place here also. Thus, the first person singular masculine is pronounced biprakin wa, or prakin wa; the first person feminine, biprakan wa, or prakan wa; the second person masculine, biprakit wa, or prakit wa; the second person feminine biprakat wa, or prakat wa; and the first person plural, biprakakh wa, or prakakh wa.

Note 2.—Instead of this form, we occasionally hear was in the second seems to be equivalent to 200 as.

Local may be thus used with the present participle of many verbs, but it is not necessary to allude to it again as a regular tense.

Preterite Tense.

Let us take as a model, which signifies to finish (intransitive).

INFINITIVE, 25395 to finish.

Present Participle, 2533 Perf. Participle, 253, 553

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

We are finishing (m.).

المحدثات من المحدثات ال

The present tense of this class is always formed by prefixing the present participle to the present tense of the verb of existence, in its several numbers and persons. The present participle is formed by prefixing short zlama with 3 to the first radical, making zkapa the vowel of the second radical and also of the third, and adding the quiescent 2 to the third radical.

The present tense of any other regular verb of this class may be formed by precisely the same process.

Note 1.—If the first radical be sor s, the sound of the preformative in the present participle is scarcely heard, though always written, and in vulgar pronunciation it is entirely omitted. Indeed, in the rapid enunciation of the people, many other verbs, and especially those beginning with s, drop this s. Thus we have land anointing, sounded m'shahha, land becoming meek, sounded m'kakha, land doing, sounded wada, etc.

Nore 2.—This tense is often vulgarly contracted into prakin, prakan, etc., and the remark applies to any verb of this class. fying I was becoming—1001 0 2003. So too in the expression 2001 2001 22 if he should not be, or if he had not been, born.

etc. It seems however, pretty clear that they are made up of o, the principal letter in 2007, the old verb of existence, or, better, of o of the pronoun of, which was used so much in the Anc. Syriac to express the idea of existence, having the talkana on it (H. § 121, 2, c.), and fragments of the personal pronouns. See in this connection a very interesting statement of the relation of the corresponding pronoun to the corresponding verb in Heb. (N. § 647), from which it seems certain that they had a common origin. It is not so easy to say whence comes the which precedes. In Bootan, they use for the second person plural present of the corresponding verb and are really on and of the corresponding pronoun with the second person plural present of the second person plural present of the corresponding verb and of the second person plural present of the

CLASSES OF VERBS.

There are two great classes of verbs in the Modern Syriac, which are always distinguished from each other by their mode of inflection, and sometimes by their general signification. Each class embraces several varieties. These varieties might indeed be designated as distinct classes; but it is thought best to enumerate only two classes, because the general resemblance to these leading forms is discoverable in all the other varieties.

CLASS I. REGULAR VERB.

The first and most numerous class of verbs has almost invariably but three radical letters, as , invariably but three radical letters, as , invariably but three radical letters, as , invariable, the verbs which respectively denote "to go out," "to finish," and "to support" or "prop." The peculiarity in the mode of conjugating runs through nearly all the tenses. Verbs of this class are usually, though by no means uniformly, intransitive.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

I may be (m.).

Lot I may be (f.).

hot Thou mayest be (m.).

Thou mayest be (f.).

2007 He may be.

Log She may be.

Số We may be.

You may be.

Loo They may be.

Note 1.—The pronouns will hereafter be omitted before the different tenses, and in all the paradigms.

Note 2.—This tense with 22 and 22 is often very much clipped in pronunciation. Thus we hear 200 12, 200 22, 200 15,

Imperfect or Pluperfect Tense.

I might be or might

have been (m.).

100 Loo I might be, etc. (f.).

log hod Thou mightest,

etc. (m.).
Thou might est,

log Lined I not might

2007 2007 He might, etc.

100 Loo She might, etc.

ood wor They might be, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Be thou (m. and f.).

Be ye or you.

General Remarks.

The preceding verb not only may be an auxiliary to other verbs, but is sometimes an auxiliary to itself, e. g. in the imperfect, signivor. v.

ໃດຕົກດ໌ ໄດຕົກນ໌ Thou hadst been (m.) ວັດຕົວກ໌ ໄດຕົວກໍ່ ໄດຕົວກໍດີ ໂດຕົວກ໌ Thou hadst been (f.). You had been.

າວຕົວຕົວຕ He had been. ວວຕົວວດ ພຣະ They had been.

Pluperfect Tense, negatively.

last. We thus have Loo loo loo loo loo be placed to be pronounced we yin wa, we tan wa, we yit wa, we tat wa, and the first person plural we yikh wa. The negative form is to be pronounced leyin wa we ya, leyan wa we ta, etc.

Norm.—In Tekhoma, the people say 2007, which corresponds in form nearly to the ancient pluperfect; but they use it rather as an imperfect.

Future Tense.

رَيْمُ مِنْ مُنْ اللهِ المِلْمُ اللهِ اللهِ اللهِ اللهِ المُلْمُ اللهِ المَا المِلْمُلِي المِلْمُلِي المِلْمُلِي المِلْمُلِي المِلْمُلِي المِلْمُلِيَ

hoo ha his be (m.) the on ha on you will be.

Log has of He will be.

Future Tense, negatively.

This is inflected as above in the different persons and in both numbers.

Note.—As this future in Syriac is rarely, if ever, used to express determination, but denotes only simple futurity, "shall" is employed to translate it in the first person, and "will" in the second and third. I will be, that is, I am determined to be, would be expressed by some intensive, as, e. g. por his 50.

Preterite Tense, negatively.

The negative is formed by inserting 2 (not 2) between the pronoun and the verb, in all the persons and in both numbers, e. g. 2007 2 of he was not.

Note.—When word is not used as an auxiliary, it has the signification I became, I was born (comp. plrouat). A similar remark applies to the perfect and pluperfect tenses. 2001, thus employed, is conjugated as a verb with final 2, having for its present, 2005 I was becoming; and for its imperfect, 2001 and 2 was becoming.

Perfect Tense.

Thou hast been (f.)

You have been (f.)

You have been (f.)

Loσ απι Thou hast been (f.).

Loσ απι Thou hast been (f.).

Loσ απι Thou hast been.

Σιοσ απι They have been.

Perfect Tense, negatively.

order. We thus have Los (2) 12. This is inflected regularly, except that there is some elision, which has been spoken of under the Imperfect Tense. Pronounce by in weya, etc.

Pluperfect Tense.

الْمَا مِنْ الْمَامِ اللَّهِ الْمَامِ اللَّهِ اللّ

Imperfect Tense, negatively.

الْمُورِ مِنْ الْمُورِ الْمُعَالِمُ الْمُعَلِمُ الْمُعَلِمِ الْمُعَلِمُ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِمِ الْمُعِلِمُ الْمُعِلِم

المَّنَ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِلُونُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِلُونُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِلُونُ الْمُعَامِّدُ الْمُعَامِلُونُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعِمِي الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعِلِّدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعِمِي الْمُعِلِّدُ الْمُعَامِدُ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلَّ الْمُعِلِّذِ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلَّ الْمُعِلَّامِ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِّ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِّ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِمِي الْمُعِلِي الْمِعِلَّ الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِي الْمُعِلِي

Of the negative form, the first person singular is pronounced (ana) leyin wa, leyan wa; the second person, leyit

wa, leyat wa; and the first person plural, leyakh wa.

Preterite Tense.

வர் பி I was (m. and f.). புக் பி We were. மூக் பி Thou wast (m.) வவின் வி You were. பிக் என He was.

Present Tense, negatively.

1 1 of He is not.

1 1 wi They are not.

Nors.—In these forms, has a vowel (hhwasa), whenever preceded by a consonant; when preceded by a vowel, it receives talkana.

or is an exception, as it is followed by ... Otherwise, the rule seems to be universal.

When has talkana over it, it still comes in for its share in the pronunciation, changing the character of the vowel which precedes it. Thus, is pronounced as if written a

Imperfect Tense.

100 a 152 I was (m.).

مُنْ رَضِ الله We were.

106 . a 111 I was (f.).

ion ha his Thou wast (m.) oon on in You were.

100 He was.

ood wit They were.

ind was She was

active and passive voices. These changes will be discussed hereafter. It is sufficient to remark, here, that they have been so great that it is useless to keep up the old distinctions of ND, DD, etc.; and that the object will be better accomplished by classifying the verbs as now used, without any reference to the scheme of the verb in the ancient language.

Without attempting a complete analysis of the modern verb, it is intended to give the paradigms of those classes and forms of verbs which commonly occur, both on the plain of Oroomiah and in the mountains of Koordistan.

As the verb in its simplest form is always found in the third person singular masculine of the future, this will be called the root or stem, and the other forms will be derived from it. For greater convenience, however, we shall begin with the present indicative, after giving the infinitive and participles.

The auxiliary and neuter verb, the verb of existence 2007 to be, is given below, inflected both positively and negatively.

INFINITIVE, 200, 2000 to be.

Present Participle, Log. Perfect Participle, Log. Having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense.

Thou art (f.)

Thou are.

Thou are.

ever, be remarked here, once for all, that in the translation of the Old Testament from the Hebrew, and of the New Testament from the Ancient Syrinc, idioms have been designedly more or less introduced which are not in accordance with vulgar usage.

7. Reciprocal Personal Pronouns.

myself. Xii or ii ourselves.

sai thyself (m.).

thyself (f.).

thyself (f.).

himself.

herself.

themselves.

The word 21 soul (Persian), which is thus connected with the suffixes, corresponds nearly to self in English. It may indeed have two different significations in the same sentence; e.g. 212 my own soul, 902 212 thy own soul, etc.

nyself," "by thyself," etc., 129 receives the ideas: "by myself," "by thyself," etc., 129 receives the suffixes, and has the preposition sprefixed. Thus, 2915 by myself, declined like 2 above. Compare the use of 1291 and 1101 in Hebrew (Nordh. § 873), and 201, etc. in Chaldee (Jahn § 15).

VERBS.

The roots of verbs in the Modern Syriac are in many cases identical with those of the corresponding verbs in the ancient language; but the terminations and inflexions, and the general scheme of conjugation, are different. Indeed, it is interesting to observe how the Modern Syriac, like the Modern Greek, and other languages, has broken up the original form of the verb, and employed new auxiliaries, both in the

In the same way the suffixes are applied to the plural, e.g. when the moun, as in this case, terminates in a vowel-sound, final 2 is dropped, to prevent the hiatus which would otherwise occur in the pronunciation. When the noun terminates in a consonant, no change is made by its reception of the suffixes.

Note.—In our books we have often written of as a noun-suffix for 3d pers. sing. masc., and of for 3d pers. sing. fem., e.g. of his house, of his house. We now substitute for these, in all nouns, of and of in accordance with Oroomiah usage. of his, etc. retain the other suffixes. of and of are both used in Gawar; the first only in Tekhoma and Tiary. In Nochea and Tekhoma, we find only of; but, on the other hand, this is not used at all in Gawar. In Tekhoma and Tiary, the suffix of is the noun-suffix for 3d pers. plural. In Bootan, of (m.) and of (f.). We, however, employ now only as the noun-suffix of 3d pers. plural. We have also, in such expressions as likely of the suffix which is employed both in Ancient Syriac and in Chaldee. (See Jahn's Grammar, § 28.) It is not in accordance with present usage, and we now substitute 1 for the of. The expression will be referred to in the Syntax.

Emphatic Possessive.

Sometimes the suffix, for the sake of emphasis, is separated from its noun by a preposition, e. g. 225 the father of me (and not of you), 400 225 the father of thee, etc.

Nors 1.—Compare in Ancient Syriac. This form, which is always emphatical in the Modern, is by no means uniformly so in the Ancient Syriac. (Hoff. § 122, 6.)

Note 2.—Such forms as (2) Such John 4:34, (2) All 2. (2) Such forms as (2) Such forms as (3) Such form

6. Suffix Pronouns.

These are few in number and simple in their form, and are in general the same for verbs, nouns and prepositions. The following is a list of them.

a. Personal Pronouns of the Objective Case.

Remarks.

The suffixes and of are confined to verbs. of and of are used only in Koordistan. It will be seen that the suffix of the first person singular, having a vowel, must always be sounded, unlike the corresponding suffix of the ancient language. The modern differs from the ancient (Hoff. § 42, Annot. 1.) also in having verbal suffixes after the third person plural. Beside o, of, we have what is equivalent to a suffix in the forms given farther on, under the head of Verbs with Suffixes.

b. Possessive Pronouns.

These are the same in form with personal suffixes of the objective case. Thus, for example, with a house:

4. Interrogatives.

These are or wis, who? (m. and f.) (ancient is); whose? what? which of the two? (m. and f.) (ancient 122); and 222, which of the two? (m. and f.) (ancient 122); and 222, how much, or how many? as in the ancient language.

Note 1.—In one part of the plain of Oroomiah, in Salmas, in Gawar, and perhaps other districts, who is prononuced was. so or is very generally contracted in vulgar usage into pass, now or one, especially when preceding a noun. which of them? is vulgarly contracted into iminey. We hear also rarely of (m. and f.) instead of which of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two, they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which of the two they say which is no doubt a contraction of which is not contracted in the two they are the two they are the two they are they are the two they are the two they are they ar

Nore 2.— in the ancient language is sometimes applied to things. See Luke 8: 30, בישׁמָּבָּ . So in the Hebrew נוֹשׁמָבָּי ; but we find no such usage in Modern Syriac.

5. Indefinite and Distributive Pronouns.

These are , any one, every one (vulgar , perhaps derived from , (ale any one, every one; any one, every one; each one. We often hear also look, whomever, or whatever, you please, literally, any one that may.

Note.—It may be hardly necessary to state that \(\), as in the kindred languages, is written defectively, and is to be pronounced kool.

Remarks.

- 2. In Tekhoma, the people say 2007 for this, and 201000 for that. On the plain of Oroomiah, the first of these is used for that, and the other for that yonder. In Bootan they say 2.52 for these, and 20101 for those. Whenever Bootan is referred to, it may be be remembered that it is at the western extremity of Koordistan, and farther removed from us than any other district of the Nestorians.

The plural pronoun 232 is also sometimes prolonged in Koordistan, by the addition of 20, 20, or 230, into 20,32 20,32 or 230,32, without a change of signification. 20,32 is heard at times in Oroomiah.

There seems to be a natural tendency in language to make demonstratives as emphatic as possible. Compare in Anc. Syriac 25000, in Hebrew 7377, 6 auto; in Greek, derselbe in German, cet homme là in French, and this 'ere, that 'ere in vulgar English.

- 3. It is worthy of note, that the ancient feminine 2007 is sometimes heard corrupted into 22, and that too on the plain of Oroomiah. We also sometimes hear 22. Both 22 and 22 are used with masculine as well as feminine nouns. 2207 is also used in such expressions as 22 2007, it is so (it is this); 2207 no. on account of this, etc.
- 4. and is pronounced sometimes with the sound of ow in now, and sometimes, and oftener, simply as long o. σ is pronounced sometimes with the sound of ay in aye, and oftener as a in fate. They have always, however, the sounds of ō and ā when used as demonstratives.

3. Relatives.

• is the only relative, and is of both genders and numbers. So it is in the ancient language. The use of this relative in grammatical construction will be explained in the Syntax.

ETYMOLOGY.

PRONOUNS.

1. Separate Personal Pronouns.

Note.—It will be observed that there is no distinction of gender in the second and third persons plural. Not so in the ancient language.

These personal pronouns, with the exception of on, and and, are not used in the objective case. And these, especially the first two, are generally accompanied by the noun to which they refer. Compare the usage in the Ancient Syriac with and and (Hoff. § 41, 3), and in Hebrew (Nordh. § 859, † note).

Nore.—of and of are sometimes spoken, both in the nominative and objective cases, as if written of and the contract of the con

2. Demonstrative Pronouns.

These are 1012, this (m. and f.), out, that (m.), out, that (f.), these (m. and f.), and will, those (m. and f.).

I am ashamed, has the accent on the syllable 2, as if were not written.

PUNCTUATION.

Our system of punctuation is imperfect, compared with that of the English. The only characters we have introduced, which are not found in the Ancient Syriac (Hoff, § 23, 1), are the Greek semicolon inverted, as the sign of a question, the note of exclamation, and the parenthesis.

NESTORIAN MANUSCRIPTS.

Manuscript works among the Nestorians are sometimes very beautifully written, and the best type can never exceed, and perhaps not even rival, them in elegance.

The part of the same of the sa

MI HAMMON ON THE TWO CASE THE TRACTION STREET, STREET,

- La Contract of the Contract

troper to minorial the speciment and each of the few Law and t

Total Total Total Total Allend Mond

on la orient become out to del with

The representation given above of the sounds of the Syriac language differs from that often made in grammars of the Ancient Syriac, e. g. Hoff. § 12, 3. There is, however, reason to suppose that the Nestorians understand the pronunciation of their language better than it is possible for European scholars to understand it. The Ancient and the Modern Syriac are now pronounced nearly according to the same rules, and there has probably been no essential change in these rules, especially in Koordistan, for a thousand years.

TÄLKANA.

An oblique mark drawn over a letter, not under, as in the Jacobite Syriac, shows that a letter is not sounded, e. g. 22 pronounced azin; 22, pronounced m'dēta. Occasionally, other diacritical marks are used, as in the words 25, 25, which are explained in grammars of the ancient language.

ACCENT.

It is almost a universal rule, that the primary accent is on the penult, and the secondary accent on the pre-antepenult. So strong is the tendency in this direction that a beginner in English will come and ask for the Peepo'v-day, meaning by this the little book called "Peep of Day." It is, however, to be noted that, in the pronunciation of verbs, the auxiliary of the word, though written separately. Thus, in low hi, he might come, low with the subjunctive mood, an essential part of the word, though written separately. Thus, in low hi, he might come, low with separately. So too when the pronunciation of verbs, the accent is respectively on the syllables la and low. So too when the pronunciation of verbs, the accent is respectively on the syllables la and low. So too when the pronunciation of verbs, the accent is respectively on the syllables la and low. So too when the pronunciation of verbs, the accent is respectively on the syllables la and low. So too when the pronunciation of verbs, the accent is respectively on the syllables la and low. Compare low land of Ancient Syriac, which takes the accent on low. The auxiliaries low, etc., do not follow this rule, e. g. low low.

last syllable of plurals, and in o, ., ... When it follows the latter, it lengthens it into ... At times the 2 in such cases falls out, as in the preterite of verbs of final 2, e. g.

When 2 is preceded by a letter without a vowel, but has one of its own, it has a tendency to give its vowel-sound to the preceding letter, and rest in it; e. g. 223, to be pronounced not b'ennee, but bennee. So 2513 = baha. So in Hebrew (Nordheimer's Grammar, § 88, 3). Compare also in regard to 2, Hoff. § 31, 3.

The suffix of, neither on nor is sounded. At the end of words of is generally quiescent, as in the Hebrew; and we often feel at liberty, e.g. in words introduced from other languages, to substitute 2 for it, as really a better representative of the sound. This may account for our writing

the verb on, or, he is, she is, 24, 24.

a.—This may be, and is rarely, the initial letter of a verbal root. It is found often as the middle radical, and sometimes at the end. Take, for example, \(\) \(

vowel-sound, but has a sound of its own resembling short c, e. g. 220, a wall, pronounced goodda. Compare Hoff,

§ 12, 1, and job and similar words in Hebrew.

may in certain cases be treated as a quiescent, the Modern Syriac agreeing in this respect with the Ancient, though in such cases it affects the vowel-sound, e. g. , I heard. Here, too, admits a vowel which cannot take in Hebrew. So last, doing.

Some letters are otiant in Modern Syriac, being generally, if not always, those retained for the sake of etymology, e. g. in while, which is the sake of etymology, e. g.

- 5. 5. , 6. Zkapa before \exists or 6 has the sound of \bar{o} , and is not distinguishable in the modern from \exists $\dot{-}$, e. g. \dot{a} , \bar{o} - $d\bar{e}$, they may do; \dot{a} , \bar{o} - $r\bar{e}$, they may enter; \dot{a} , \dot{o} - $d\bar{e}$, they may enter; \dot{a} , \dot{o} - $d\bar{e}$, Joseph; \dot{a} , \dot{o} - $d\bar{o}$, \dot{o} , \dot{o} - $d\bar{o}$, \dot{o} - $d\bar{o}$, \dot{o} - $d\bar{o}$, \dot{o} - $d\bar{o}$ - $d\bar{o}$
- 6. ——Zkapa before has the sound of ey in they, and often does not differ from ——, e. g. 14.66, weyta, being; 25.56, kreyta, reading. In such cases, may also have a vowel of its own, and be sounded like our y, e. g. 26.56, k'seyyatee, covers.
- 7. 5 ,, o , , 4 ... Short zlama before 5, o, or 4, has a sound nearly like that of ew in Lewis, e. g. 125, honey, not exactly divsha nor doosha; 1150, straw, not tivna nor toona; sounded, the ocean; 11505, a Cyrenian; sounded, cyprus; 1205, quick, etc.
- 8. . This has been alluded to in a preceding note. See under Hhwasa.
- 9. 40.—If o is followed by 4, the latter has either no effect on the syllable, or the sound is nearly that of ui in ruin, e. g. 201900, a winnowing fan, pronounced rooshta (nearly).

It may be stated as a general rule, that ... and a, prefer the vowel ..., as in the ancient language and the Hebrew.

SOME PECULIARITIES OF 2, 0, . AND &.

2.—It has already been mentioned that 2 quiesces occasionally in -, and lengthens it. It quiesces far more frequently in -, as in the final syllable of in -, are in the final syllable of quiesce in -, as in the

manded; i, rumlee, he rose; limas, toomumma, completed. But a following -, lengthens it into -.

5. and are affected rarely, if at all.

6. is in many cases unchanged. When, however, these letters are followed by or coalescing in the preceding vowel + (see next section under +), the vowel-sound is not generally a simple one, as in other cases, but resembles the sound of ei in height, e. g. 1444, teira, a bird; 2444, eina, a fountain, an eye; 2444, keisa, a tree. So with : 2444, keimat, a price; 2444, teina, mud.

FURTHER MODIFICATION OF SIMPLE VOWELS.

- 1. = ... P'tahha followed by = has the sound of ō, e. g.
- 2. ...—P'tahha followed by does not often occur; never in our more recent books. But, wherever found, it has nearly the sound of ō, e. g. A•A, totishoon, search ye, now written A•A See § ...
- 3. ——This has in general the sound of ey in they, e. g. 2. 2, eyga, then; 2. 2, eynē, which of the two; 2. 3, beyta, a house; 2. 4, leylee, the night; 2. 4, sheyna, peace. Exceptions, for the sake of etymology, are 2. 4, where, pronounced ēka; 2. 4 = līt, there is not; 2. 4 = akh, as. a capital city, is pronounced nearly peitahht. Compare also what is said above of 2, 4, etc., followed by 2.

MODIFICATION OF VOWEL-SOUNDS.

The letters \bullet , \bullet , \bullet , and \bullet , and, to a considerable extent, also \bullet , \bullet and \bullet , modify the sound of some of the vowels which are connected with them in the same syllable. The general tendency of these letters is to make the vowels joined with them somewhat like short u, though this is not the uniform effect. As it is essential to a correct pronunciation that this subject be understood, some examples will here be given to illustrate it. The sounds of course cannot be perfectly represented in English. Observe that $\bar{a}=a$ in hat; a=a in saw; a, without a mark over it, a=a in father; a=a in hat; a=a in h

2. With -, Abai, hhūdrit, thou mayest walk about; is būtna, she may conceive; sa, swūkh, we are; Liab, Mūrya, the Lord; is b, kūr'yana, a reader.

These letters very often give the sound of â. Thus we have the hadre, he may sin; tashee, he may conceal; tashee, he may strain; tashee, he may strain; tashee, he may strain; tashee, he may read; tash, kâree, he may read; tash, râma, high.

3. With -, no effect is generally produced.

4. With —, the vowel sound is in most cases \tilde{u} : محمدة, hhūshlē, I went; محمدة pâlūt, he may go out; محمدة, يقدم ten; محمدة, Mūsreen, Egypt; عمده , p'kūdlee, he com-

Hhwasa.—This is in sound like a very long e in English. The has sometimes belonging to it another vowel, in which case it performs the double office of a consonant (y) and a fulcrum for hhwasa, e. g. hought, pronounced hhēyal; , of us, pronounced dēyan. The word his in which the etymology is preserved, is sounded thus: it. In the perfect participle feminine, 1st Class, we have, for example, in hraided, pronounced as if written have had so of similar cases.

The sheva was no doubt employed by the Nestorians of old, though, so far as we can judge from the disposition of the vowels in the ancient language, with less frequency than in the modern. Those grammarians who, according to Hoffman (§ 15, Annot.), wish to class "inter absurdos" any who speak of a sheva in Ancient Syriac, should

properly themselves be classed there,

cook. Compare the Hebrew בינקב.

we successfully trace out their origin. Others are more or less corrupted, though not properly made over; and still others retain very much of their original form and sound. In the latter case, we intend always to refer to the language from whence they came, to ascertain the true spelling.

The varieties in dialect present another obstacle not easily surmounted. As familiarity is acquired with the language spoken, in all the dialects, reasons are often found for changing orthography

which was supposed to be definitely settled.

Long Zlama .- The sound of - is not exactly that of long e, nor of long a, but something between these sounds, approaching a little nearer to that of e than of a.

Short Zlama .- This vowel, though generally i, sometimes approaches in sound to & When followed by . its sound

resembles -, e.g. . hear.

The same rule which has been mentioned for the doubling of a consonant after -, applies also to -. Thus in 23, a

bear; 120, a hoof; 250, smoke; the 3, 20 and s, are respectively doubled in pronunciation. The fact that the daghesh must always, as in Hebrew, be preceded by a short vowel, needs no explanation.

It may be well to state, under this head, that of, a and & occasionally admit of daghesh forte in the Ancient Syriac,

after a short vowel, but not a.

R'wahha .- This is long o, but is often undistinguishable in pronunciation from o, which has the sound of oo in poor, but at times inclines also to the sound of long o. When precedes, o should follow; when - precedes, o should follow.

Note 1 .- As the Nestorians generally use and a, especially in the neighborhood of Mosul, there is no doubt that the former corresponds to in Hebrew, and the latter to a.

Note 2.—Unlike 7 in Hebrew, 6 is so far an essential part of the vowel, that the latter cannot be written without it. The same re-

mark may be made of . in hhwasa.

Note 3.—Hoffman, § 13, 4, speaks of these vowels as sometimes ü, but the Nestorians know no such usage. In the examples he adduces, as isaul , Now, Sala etc., the sound is as given above.

Note 3.—A few words, such as Lioni, lioni, ithe first syllable) and Lioni, derived from the ancient language, are exceptions to the above rule. The sound of — in these words is like that of —, and the following consonant is not doubled.

P'tahha is lengthened, when followed by 2, of or 2, as in the second syllable of accept, where is to be pronounced like in So in light; accept, an arm; as a serf.

Sometimes the sound of -, in a mixed syllable, beside the cases hereafter specified, nearly approaches that of short u, e. g. isai, pronounced *ŭthra* or *ŭtra*.

Zkapa has properly the sound of a in father, but, in order to give uniformity to the spelling of like forms, occasional deviations have been made from this rule. Thus, we have we will be to the second, although in the first has nearly the sound of e in met, in the second, the sound of a in father, and in the third, the sound of a in ball.

Note 2.—It may here be remarked, once for all, that several serious difficulties are in the way of an orthography which shall perfectly represent the sound of each word. Many words, as, for instance, of and of, have a different sound from what they had formerly; and yet, for the sake of etymology, it is considered important to retain the original spelling. It is often a matter of much doubt how far we are permitted to go in defacing the escutcheon of words, and obliterating all traces of their ancestry. One who had not fully considered the subject, might often think we were arbitrary, where good reasons for a variation may be assigned; e. g. Anc.

The difficulty is still greater in regard to words which have been transferred from other languages, the Turkish, the Persian, the Koordish, and the Arabic. Even if we were thoroughly acquainted with these languages, as we are not, the words derived from them in Modern Syriae are often completely disguised, and years pass before

VOWELS.

and the	Names.	Notation.	Power.
	كَمْنَ P'tahha	+ + 6 4 6	a in hat.
Many of	عُفْو Zkapa	Letter for	a in father.
Progr	Zlama (lon	g) -	between e in elate and a in hate.
1.20	Zlama (sho	rt) -	i in pin.
	كُنْهُ R'wahha	6	o in note.
	الأخراء R'wâsa		oo in poor.
	Hhwâsa	directions.	e in me.

Note.—The names of — and — in Ancient Syriac grammars are just the reverse of those here given, but, as it seems more proper to call — hard, the Nestorians follow the usage noted above.

P'tahha has generally the sound of short and close a. In the great majority of cases, when a consonant follows it (excepting 2, 5, 5, and cases specified on pp. 10, 11), which has a vowel of its own, that consonant is doubled in pronunciation, e. g. 11, these; 125, a wave; true; where s, 2 and 5 are each doubled.

Note 1.—There is no doubt that at least the Eastern Syrians formerly used the daghesh forte, though, as now, without any distinguishing mark. Compare Hoffman's Grammar of the Ancient Syriac, § 17, Annot. 1. Assemann states that in many cases 2 is followed by a dagheshed letter, but this is not the usage now, except in and then with questionable propriety.

Nore 2.—It is perhaps unnecessary to state that 2, of and 2, are letters too weak to receive the daghesh. The usage is the same in the Hebrew. Unlike the Hebrew, however, the Modern Syriac may double ... and 3, and does so constantly, e. g. ..., to envy; 1, to make alive; pronounced respectively bahk-hhul, mahh-hhee. So too 22, to wallow; 22, deaf; pronounced garril, karra.

referred to in the following pages, the reader will understand by it the rude Tatar dialect of this province, which has not even been reduced to writing, and is therefore noted in the Syriac character.

o, used for connecting words and clauses (the Hebrew 7), is pronounced nearly like oo in hood, but with a more rapid enunciation.

or is equivalent to z in azure, or s in pleasure. These characters are rarely used.

a, unaspirated, has often the sound of k in kind, as pronounced by Walker, a y being quickly inserted after k.

a has the sound of ch in cherry and rich.

s is sometimes pronounced like so, when it precedes so or so, e.g. is a store-room; is, to stagger; is, lazy; is swagger, etc. So in Persian. So in English in the words imbitter, impatient. so is also occasionally written instead of s, as is also occasionally so occasionally s, as is also occasionally s.

A, 2 and a, are readily confounded by a foreigner in certain connections, but are at once distinguished by a native. We may take as an illustration 2, the hand, and 2, a feast; or 2228, a fig, and 2228, mud. The difference in these words may seem slight, but, unless the ear is trained to make nice distinctions, a foreigner will be often misunderstood, even if he does not fall into ludicrous blunders.

A has been used more or less to represent the f and ph of other languages, but, as the Nestorians pronounce this sound with difficulty, and it never occurs in words truly Syriac, we have for some years past dropped it in our books. A coa-

lesces with certain vowels, as hereafter stated.

g.—When this letter is used, the syllable fills the mouth, as it were, more than when so is used.

B .- A very hard k, which can be represented by no anal-

ogy in English.

A, when unaspirated, is equivalent to the English t, is a harder t, and sounded farther back in the mouth. A, if aspirated, has the sound of th in thick. This aspiration, so common in the ancient language, is quite lost on the plain of Oroomiah, but is retained in Koordistan.

connection with the next letter: of with 2 and o; o with 2, o, o, a and A.

5, \$\, 5, 5, \$\, \text{A}, \text{ are susceptible of aspiration as in the ancient language. A large point above the letter (daghesh lene of the Hebrew) which is often omitted, especially at the beginning of words, denotes that the letter is not aspirated in pronunciation. A similar point below shows that it is aspirated. It is to be noted, however, that \$\mathbf{A}\$, unaspirated, is written without any point. When aspirated, it is written \$\mathbf{A}\$.

Note.—It would not be an easy matter to lay down the rules by which these letters are aspirated in Modern Syriac. Nor is it necessary to attempt it, as the aspiration is indicated in nearly every case by the point below the letter. Wherever one of these letters is unaspirated in a verbal root, it is unaspirated throughout the conjugation, and vice versa.

⇒, when aspirated, has nearly the sound of the English w, sometimes inclining to v, and can hardly be distinguished from a. The latter must, however, be regarded as the weaker consonant. Cases will be mentioned farther on, in which ⇒ coalesces with the preceding vowel and loses its power as a consonant.

A, when aspirated, has the sound of gh (the Persian E), and is perhaps more deeply guttural than A, which seems to a beginner to resemble it.

has the sound of the English j. Until the last two or

three years, we used it also to express ch. See a.

The aspirated a is not much, if at all, used in the province of Oroomiah. In the mountains of Koordistan, its proper sound is that of th in these, but it is said in one or two cases to have the sound of th in thin.

In has a more decided and full pronunciation than the English h, without approaching in sound to L (hh). The latter cannot be distinguished in pronunciation from L. Their equivalent nearly is found in the German L (L (L (L)).

Note.—The Nestorians pronounce ... , , etc., with much stress of voice, in consequence of which the sound of their language is at first unpleasant to an English ear. The Turkish of Northern Persia in this respect resembles the Syriac, and is very unlike the cultivated language of Constantinople. Whenever the Turkish is

ORTHOGRAPHY AND ORTHOEPY.

THE ALPHABET.

The letters of the alphabet are the same in number and bear the same names as in the Ancient Syriac, and generally have the same power. New forms, however, have been given to \(\frac{1}{2}\), \(\frac{1}{2}\) and \(\frac{1}{2}\), as will appear by the following table.

InitiaL 2	Medial.	Pinal. Initi	ial. Medial. Final.
- 7	+	7	Before final 2 }
14.00	a great and the		the state of the
		9	A STATE OF THE SECOND STATE OF THE SECOND
	6	7 × 9	
-		49 A	h { Before final 2 } &

The Estrangela is still employed by the Nestorians for the title-pages of books and other occasional uses.

The letters 2, 2, 9, 2 and 3, are never united with the succeeding letters. of and are occasionally written in

^{* 2} is used in some manuscripts as initial, medial, or final. The same may be said of 2: but 2 can only be used as a final letter, or at the end of a syllable; never as an initial letter. 2 and 2 are used indifferently according to the fancy of the writer.

who has had much experience in labor of this kind, and is perfectly familiar with the grammar of the Ancient Syriac.

My design has been to trace up the language, as now spoken, to the Ancient Syriac, and I presume no reader will complain of the frequent references made to Hoffman's large and valuable grammar. As some may find occasionally Ancient Syriac words written in a manner different from that to which they are accustomed, it may be well to suggest that the Syriac of the Jacobites, which has generally been the Syriac of European grammars, differs somewhat from the Syriac of old Nestorian books. The latter are of course the standard with us,

It may seem unnecessary to some to link in the Hebrew with the Modern Syriac, and I have had myself many doubts about the expediency of doing it. But, considering how many Hebrew scholars there are in America, who would take pleasure in glancing over the following pages, and how few of them are at home in Ancient Syriac, it seemed to me not inappropriate to adopt the course I have. The references to Nordheimer's Hebrew Grammar certainly add little to the size of the work, even if they do not at all increase the interest of the reader.

Every thing serving to develop the Ancient Aramean of these regions is worthy of investigation. And it has occurred to me, as not at all unlikely, that the Nestorians use many words, and perhaps grammatical forms, in their daily intercourse, which have never found their way into grammars and lexicons, and yet are very ancient, and owe their origin to the Aramean, which was once so extensively spoken in Persia and made even the court-language.—Ezra 4: 7.8.

I at first designed to give in an appendix an outline of the Jews' language as now spoken in this province. It is nearly allied to the Modern Syriac, and Jews and Nestorians can understand each other without great difficulty. But whether these languages had a common origin, within the last few centuries, or whether they are only related through the Ancient Syriac and Ancient Chaldee, we have not yet the means of determining. The discussion of this subject, which is necessarily omitted now, may be resumed hereafter. THE RAYS OF LIGHT, a monthly periodical, devoted to Religion, Education, Science and Miscellanies. Fourth volume now in progress.

In press, an edition of the New Testament in Modern

Syriac, and BAXTER'S SAINT'S REST.

Ready for the press, SCRIPTURE TRACTS, of the American Tract Society, and GREEN PASTURES, an English work, consisting of a text of Scripture, with a practical exposition,

for each day in the year.

Our schools have been gradually increasing in number. till the present year. We now have about eighty villageschools and flourishing Male and Female Seminaries. Of course, the number of intelligent readers is rapidly on the increase, and the modern language is assuming a permanent form. It should still, however, be considered as imperfect. It is difficult to give in a precise manner either its orthography, its etymology or its syntax, because the language is not to-day just what it was yesterday, nor just what it will be to-morrow. Until the publication of the Old and New Testaments, there was no standard of usage. It was difficult to say which dialect should have the preference. The same uncertainty in a measure still remains. If we assume that the dialect which is nearest to Ancient Syriac should be the standard, this will necessarily be unintelligible to a large portion of the people. We generally use the language in our books which is spoken on the plain of Oroomiah, unless there are obvious reasons for variation in a particular case.

Rev. Mr. Holladay, one of our missionary associates, prepared a very brief, though excellent sketch of the grammar of the Modern Syriac, about the year 1840. He also aided much in translating works for the press. His health and that of his family obliged him in 1845 to leave us for America, where he still resides, near Charlottesville, Va.*

Much time has been bestowed on the preparation of the following grammar; although, as it has been written with indifferent health and amid the pressure of missionary duties

indifferent health and amid the pressure of missionary duties and cares, it has not been subjected to so thorough revision as it would have been under other circumstances. The Syriac has been written by Deacon Joseph, our translator,

^{*} Mr. Holladay has kindly consented to superintend the printing of this grammar. Count. or Pust.

SCRIPTURAL HISTORY OF JOSEPH AND THE GOSPEL OF JOHN, in Modern Syriac. 316 pp. 8vo.

THE GOSPEL OF MATTHEW, in Modern Syriac. 192 pp.

12mo.

Tracts on Faith, Repentance, the New Birth, Drunkenness, and The Sabbath, by Mr. Stocking, in Modern Syriac.

THE FAITH OF PROTESTANTS, in both Ancient and Mod-

ern Syriac, in separate volumes. 164 pp. 8vo.

SCRIPTURE QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS, in Modern Syriac. 139 pp. 8vo.

First HYMN BOOK. 10 pp. 12mo.

THE DAIRYMAN'S DAUGHTER, in Modern Syriac. 136 pp. 8vo.

USEFUL INSTRUCTIONS, in Modern Syriac.

THE FOUR GOSPELS, in Modern Syriac. 637 pp. 8vo.

THE NEW TESTAMENT, in both Ancient and Modern Syriac, the translation being made by Dr. Perkins from the Peshito, with the Greek differences in the margin. 829 pp. 4to.

SCRIPTURE HELP OR MANUAL, in Modern Syriac. 192

pp. 8vo.

BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS, in Modern Syriac. 712 pp. 8vo.

QUESTIONS ON BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS, in Mod-

ern Syriac. 99 pp.

Second Scripture Manual, and a larger Hymn Book, in Modern Syriac. 181 pp. 8vo.

THE SHEPHERD OF SALISBURY PLAIN, in Modern Syriac.

70 pp. 8vo.

THE YOUNG COTTAGER, in Modern Syriac. 98 pp. 8vo.
Smaller Arithmetic, in Modern Syriac. 24 pp. 8vo.
Larger Arithmetic, in Modern Syriac. 192 pp. 8vo. By
Mr. Stocking.

A GEOGRAPHY, in Modern Syriac. 302 pp. 8vo. By Dr.

Wright.

THE LORD'S PRAYER, TEN COMMANDMENTS and CATE-CHISM FOR CHILDREN, in Modern Syriac. 78 pp. 8vo.

A SPELLING BOOK, in Modern Syriac. 54 pp. 8vo.
THE OLD TESTAMENT, in both Ancient and Modern Syriac,
the latter being translated from the Hebrew by Dr. Perkins.
1051 pp. large 4to.

SPELLING BOOK, with SCRIPTURE READINGS, in Modern

Syriac. 160 pp. 8vo.

ing importunity, a place among the Nestorian apprentices, that he too might learn to print. The first book which we printed in the modern language, was a small tract, made up of passages from the Holy Scriptures. As I carried the proof-sheets of it from the printing-office into my study for correction, and laid them upon my table before our translators, Priests Abraham and Dunkha, they were struck with mute rapture and astonishment, to see their language in print: though they themselves had assisted me, a few days before, in preparing the same matter for the press. As soon as recovery from their first surprise allowed them utterance, 'It is time to give glory to God,' they each exclaimed, 'that we behold the commencement of printing books for our people: a sentiment to which I could give my hearty response."

The first printing in the Nestorian character was an edition of the four Gospels published by the British and Foreign Bible Society in 1829, the type being prepared in London from a manuscript copy of the Gospels obtained from Mar Yohannan, by the eccentric traveller Dr. Wolff, several years before, and taken by him to England for that purpose. This volume is all that has ever been printed in the modern language of the Nestorians, otherwise than by the agency of our mission-press, with the exception of one or two small Papal tracts, published a few years since at Constantinople, with miserable type prepared under the supervision of the

Jesuits in that city.

Since the arrival of our press in 1840, it has been busily employed in printing books for the Nestorians, in both their

ancient and modern language, mostly in the latter.

Dr. Perkins has furnished the following list of our more important publications, arranged nearly in the order in which they have been issued from the press.

THE PSALMS, as used in the Nestorian churches, with the

Rubrics, in Ancient Syriac. 196 pp. 4to.

INSTRUCTIONS FROM THE WORD OF GOD, in Modern Syr-

iac. (Extracts from the Bible.) 77 pp. 12mo.

THE ACTS AND THE EPISTLES, in Ancient Syriac. THE GREAT SALVATION, a tract in Modern Syriac. SIXTEEN SHORT SERMONS, in Modern Syriac.

A PRESERVATIVE FROM THE SINS AND FOLLIES OF CHILD-

HOOD AND YOUTH, by Dr. Watts, in Modern Syriac.

AIDS TO THE STUDY OF THE SCRIPTURES, in Modern Syriac. 109 pp. 8vo.

from the city attended. They all took their stand in a semicircle around the manuscript card suspended on the wall, which Priest Abraham with my assistance had prepared; and as they learned their letters and then began to repeat a sentence of the Lord's prayer, for the first time, with a delight and satisfaction, beaming from their faces, equalled only by the novelty of their employment, I could understand something of the inspiration of Dr. Chalmers, when he pronounced the Indian boy in the woods, first learning to read, to be the sublimest object in the world."—Residence in Persia,

p. 250.

In another connection, Dr. Perkins, speaking of the preparation of the cards for that missionary school, says: "There was no literary matter for its instruction and aliment, save in the dead, obsolete language. I therefore immediately commenced translating portions of the Scriptures from the Ancient Syriac copies, by the assistance of some of the best educated of the native clergy. We first translated the Lord's prayer. I well remember my own emotions on that occesion. It seemed like the first handful of corn to be cast upon the top of the naked mountains; and the Nestorian priests who were with me, were themselves interested above measure to see their spoken language in a written form. They would read a line and then break out in immoderate laughter, so amused were they, and so strange did it appear to them, to hear the familiar sounds of their own language read, as well as spoken. We copied this translation of the Lord's prayer on cards for our classes. Our copies were few. We therefore hung up the card upon the wall of the school-room, and a company of children would assemble around it, at as great a distance from the card as they could see, and thus they learned to read. We next translated the ten commandments, and wrote them on cards in the same way, and then other detached portions of the Word of God; and thus continued to prepare reading matter by the use of the pen, for our increasing number of schools, until the arrival of our press in 1840. This event was hailed with the utmost joy by the Nestorians, who had long been waiting for the press, with an anxiety bordering on impatience; and it was no less an object of interest and wonder to the Mohammedans. They too soon urgently pressed their suit, that we should print books for them also; and a very respectable young Meerza sought, with unyield-

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

It is an interesting fact that, although the Nestorians of Persia have for many centuries been conquered and outnumbered, and have had very little share in civil affairs, and their brethren in the Koordish Mountains have enjoyed only a doubtful independence, they have preserved to the present time a knowledge of their vernacular language. In Persia, most of the Nestorians are indeed able to speak fluently the rude Tatar (Turkish) dialect used by the Mohammedans of this province, and those of the mountains are equally familiar with the language of the Koords. Still, they have a strong preference for their own tongue, and make it the constant and only medium of intercourse with each other. This is the more noticeable, as in modern times, until within a short period, they had no current literature, and the spoken dialect was not even reduced to writing. Their manuscript copies of the Bible and other books were very scarce, and were carefully hid out of sight, covered with dust and mildew. Very few, if any, except the clergy, aspired to be readers, and still fewer were able to read with any degree of intelligence.

The first attempt worthy of record to reduce the Modern Syriac to writing, was made by Rev. Justin Perkins, a Missionary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, at Tabreez, in the winter of 1834-5, in connection with the study of the language, under the instruction

of the Nestorian Bishop Mar Yohannan.

The first attempt to write it in a permanent and useful form, was made by Dr. Perkins in the construction of school-cards, in the winter of 1836, after he and Dr. Grant had settled at Oroomiah. On the 18th of January of that year their first school was commenced. Says Dr. Perkins: "Seven boys

OR PERSONAL PROPERTY OF STREET WATER

AL CENTRAL PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE P

180a 180f

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	Pages.
INTRODUCTORY REMARKS,	3-8
ORTHOGRAPHY AND ORTHOEPY,	9-21
The alphabet, 9; vowels, 12; modification of vowel-sounds, 16;	
some peculiarities of 2, 0, 0, ., and 3, 18; talkana, 20;	
accent, 20; punctuation, 21; Nestorian manuscripts, 21.	
ETYMOLOGY,	22-144
Pronouns, 22-27: personal, 22; demonstrative, 22; relative, 23;	
interrogative, 24; indefinite and distributive, 24; suffix, 25;	
reciprocal, 27.	
Verbs, 27-111: conjugation of 2007, 28; classes of regular verbs,	
34; class first, conjugation of 25, 85; verb with negative	
particles, 43; list of verbs of class first, 45; class second, 51;	
conjugation of 23, 52; list of verbs of class second, 57;	
irregular verbs of class first: first radical 2, 60; second radical	
2 or .; 63; second radical ., 66; first or second radical .,	
66: third radical 2, 68; third radical 3, 72; verbs doubly	
irregular, 74; irregular verbs of class second: verbs of four	
radicals, 78; list of such verbs, 80; causative verbs, 87; second	
radical 3, 89; third radical 2, 90; third radical 3, 91; irreg-	
ular causatives, 92; synoptical table of irregular verbs, 94; pas-	
sive voice, 97; verbs with suffixes, 102; relation of modern to	
ancient verb, 107.	

Article, 112.

emitrod to sales

A AREE AND

ABLUDENT OF THE WARDER

ALERT INTERNATION

The share of the state of the s

A Selfantino de mario de la composición del composición de la composición de la composición del composición de la composición de la composición de la composición de la composición del composición de la composición de la composición del composic

AND THE COURT OF THE PARTY OF T

The state of the s

ARTICLE I.

GRAMMAR

OF THE

MODERN SYRIAC LANGUAGE,

AS SPOKEN IN

OROOMIAH, PERSIA,

AND IN

KOORDISTAN.

BY

REV. D. T. STODDARD,

MISSIONARY OF THE AMERICAN BOARD IN PERSIA.

*Prof. FORRES FALCONER, M. CHAMPOLLION FIGURE. Prof. GEORG WILHELM FRETTAG, His Excellency FUAD EFFENDS, Dr. JULIUS FURRST, *Prof. WILHELM GESENIUS. Prof. JACOB GRIMM. Baron Von Hammer-Purgstall, *Count GRAEBERG DA HEMSOR, Baron ALEXANDER VON HUMBOLDT, *Count AMEDEE JAUBERT, Prof. STANISLAS JULIEN. Rev. Dr. JOHN DUNMORE LANG, Prof. CHRISTIAN LASSEN. Prof. RICHARD LEPSIUS, Prof. JULIUS MOHL, Prof. JULIUS HRINE. PETERMANN, *Dr. JAMES COWLES PRICHARD, Maha Raja Raddhakanta Dava, Prof. REINAUD. Prof. CARL RITTER. Prof. EMILIUS ROEDIGER, *Count IPPOLITO ROSSELLEG, Prof. FRIEDRICH RUBCKERT. His Excellency SAFVET EFFENDS, Prof. GARCIN DE TASST, Prof. C. J. Tonnseno. Sir HENRY W. TORRESS. *Prof. WILHELM MARTIN LIEBB. Dg WETTZ, Basel. Sir J. GARDINER WILKINGON, London. Prof. Horace HAYMAN WILSON,

London. Paris. Bonn, Prussia. Constantinople. Leipzig, Saxony. Halle, Berlin. Vienna. Florence. Berlin. Paris. Sidney, N. S. Wales. Bonn, Prussia. Berlin. Paris. Berlin. Bristol, England. Calcutta. Paris. Berlin. Halle, Prussia. Pisa, Tuscany. Coburg. Constantinople. Paris. Upsal. Calcutta.

Rev. DWIGHT W. MARSH, Rev. FRANCIS MASON, Prof. MAX MÜLLER, Hon. PETER PARKER, M. D., Rev. Dr. JUSTIN PERKINS, *Rev. Dr. DANIEL POOR,

JAMES W. REDBOUSE,

Rev. ELIAS RIGGS, Prof. RUDOLPH ROTH, Rev. WILLIAM G. SCHAUFFLEB, Rev. WILLIAM W. SCUDDER, *Dr. AZABIAH SMITH, Rev. Dr. Eli Smith, Rev. WILLIAM H. STEELE, Rev. DAVID T. STODDARD, Rev. WILLIAM TRACY, Rev. WILLIAM M. THOMSON, Rev. WILLIAM WALKER, Prof. ALBRECHT WEBER, Prof. GUSTAV WEIL, Rev. M. C. WHITE, M.D., Dr. SAMUEL WELLS WILLIAMS, Rev. JOHN L. WILSON, Rev. MIRON WINSLOW, WILLIAM WINTHROP, Rev. Austin H. Wajgir, M.D., Missionary in Mostl. 64

Oxford, England,

U. States Commissioner to China.

Burma.

Missionary in Persia-

Ceylon. Principal of the Bureau of Interpreters of the Ottoman Imperial Diwan.

Missionary in Turkey. Tübingen, Würtemberg. Missionary in Turkey.

India.

Turkey.

Syria.

Newark, N. J.

Missionary in Persia. India.

Syria.

West Africa.

Berlin.

Heidelberg, Baden.

New Haven.

Missionary in China.

New York.

Missionary in India.

Consul of the U. States in Malta.

Missionary in Persia.

HONORARY MEMBERS.

Maha Raja Arûnya Krishna Bahadur, JAMES BIRD, Dr. Otto BOKHTLINGK, Sir John Bowning, Prof. FRANZ BOPP, *Prof. Eugène Burnour, RICHARD CLARKE, Prof. GEORG HEINE, AGG, VON EWALD,

Calcutta. Bombay. St. Petersburg. Hongkong. Berlin. Paris. London. Göttingen.

CORRESPONDING MEMBERS.

Rev. Dr. J. C. Adamson, Rev. David O. Allen, Rev. Henry Ballantine, Dr. James R. Ballantine, Rev. Cephas Bennett, Rev. William A. Benton,

Hon, Charles W. Bradley, Rev. Dr. Elliah C. Bridgman,

JOHN P. BROWN,

Rev. Nathan Brown,
Dr. Heinrich Brugsch,
*Rev. James C. Bryant,
Rev. Ebenezer Burgess,
Rev. Albert Burhnell,
Rev. Simeon H. Calhoun,

Mons. J. Con,

Rev. E. B. Canss. Rev. HARRISON G. O. DWIGHT, Rev. Cornelius V. A. Van Dyck, M.D., Dr. HENRY A. DE FOREST. Prof. GUSTAV FLUEGEL, Rev. WILLIAM GOODELL, Rev. LEWIS GROUT, Dr. J. G. GUNTHER, Rev. CYRUS HAMLIN, Rev. HENRY R. HOISINGTON, Prof. C. A. Holmbon, Dr. S. R. HOUSE, Rev. J. W. Johnson, Rev. GROBGE JONES, U.S. N. *Rev. John T. Jones, *Rev. ADONIRAM JUDSON, Prof. MIREA KASKM BEG. CHEV. KHANIKOFF, *Rev. HENRY LOBDELL, M.D., Rev. D. J. MACGOWAN, M.D.,

Philadelphia, Missionary in India.

Benarea.
Missionary in Burma.
Syria.
Consul of the U. States at Ningpo, China.
Missionary in China.
Dragoman of the U. States Legation at the Ottoman Porte.
Missionary in Asam.
Berlin.
Missionary in South Africa.

Missionary in West Africa.

"Syria.

First Dragoman of the French
Embassy at the Ottoman Porte.
Missionary in Burma.

"Turkey.

"Syria.

Meissen, Saxony.

Missionary in Turkey.

"South Africa.
Roxbury, Mass.
Missionary in Turkey.
Williamstown, Mass.
Christiania, Norway.
Missionary in Siam.

"China.

Missionary in Siam.

Burma.

St. Petersburg.

Russian Consul-General at Tabriz.

Missionary at Mosül.

in China.

Rev. MARK MURPHY, Prof. JOHN J. OWEN, Rev. THEODORE PARKER, Rev. Dr. Solomon Peck, GREGORY A. PERDICARIS, Dr. CHARLES PICKERING, *Hon. JOHN PICKERING, Sev. Dr. SWAN L. POMBOY, GEORGE W. PRATT, WILLIAM A. REYNOLDS, Jr., Rev. CHANDLER ROBBINS, Rev. Dr. EDWARD ROBINSON, Prof. EDWARD E. SALIBBURY, Prof. Schele de Vere. CHARLES SHORT, Prof. J. M. SMEAD, Rev. Dr. H. B. SMITH, EVANGELINUS A. SOPHOCLES, Prof. JESSE A. SPENCER, WILLIAM W. STONE, Prof. CALVIN E. STOWE. *Prof. Moses Stuant, Rev. JAMES B. TAYLOR, *Rev. OLIVER A. TAYLOR. SAMUEL H. TAYLOR, *Rev. DANIEL TEMPLE, Prof. THOMAS A. THACHER, Rev. SELAH B. TREAT, Rev. Dr. SAMUEL H. TURNER, WILLIAM W. TURNER, Rev. FERDINAND DE W. WARD, Rev. Pres. FRANCIS WAYLAND, *NOAH WEBSTER, Prof. WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, Hon, SIDNEY WILLARD, Dr. Jos. WILSON, Jr., U.S. N. Rev. GEORGE W. WOOD, Rev. Pres. LEONARD WOODS, Jr., Rev. Pres. THEODORE D. WOOLSEY, JOSEPH E. WORCESTER,

Staten Island. New York, Boston.

Newark, N. J. Boston.

New York.
New Haven.
Boston.
New York.
New Haven.
Charlottesville, Va.
Philadelphia.
Williamsburg, Va.
New York.
Cambridge, Mass.
New York.

Andover, Mass.

Richmond.
Manchester, Mass.
Andover,
Reading,
New Haven.
Boston.
New York.
Washington.
Geneseo, N. Y.
Providence.
New Haven.

Cambridge, Mass.

New York.
Brunswick, Me.
New Haven.
Cambridge, Mass.

YOL Y.

HOD, EDWARD EVERETT. Prof. Cornelius C. Felton. CHARLES FOLSOM. JOHN M. FORBES. Rev. Dr. CONVERS FRANCIS. FRANCIS GARDNER. Prof. JOSIAH W. GIRBS. GRORGE R. GLIDDON. Rev. DAVID GREEN, Prof. W. HENRY GREEN, WILLIAM W. GREENOUGH. Prof. ARNOLD GUYOT. Prof. JAMES HADLEY. RICHARD K. HAIGHT. HORATIO E. HALE, Prof. FITZ-EDWARD HALL, Prof. GESSNER HARRISON, Rev. Dr. FRANCIS L. HAWKS, STANISLAS HERNISE. WILLIAM B. HODGSON, Rev. A. L. HOLLADAY, Rev. F. W. HOLLAND. HENRY A. HOMES, JAMES J. JARVES, *Rev. Dr. S. FARMAR JARVIS, JOSEPH W. JENKS. Rev. Dr. WILLIAM JENES, Prof. C. C. JEWETT, *Prof. James L. Kingsley, CHARLES KHAITSIR, Prof. GEORGE M. LANE, Prof. FRANCIS LIEBER. Prof. John L. Lincoln, Lieut, WILLIAM F. LYNCH, U.S. N. Rev. WILLIAM A. MACY. Hon, GEORGE P. MARSH, Rev. Dr. W. H. McLLVADOR, Rev. JAMES L. MERRICK, Rev. J. W. MILES. *EDWARD MOORE. *Dr. SAMUEL G. MORTON, *Rev. Dr. JAMES MURDOCK,

Cambridge, Mass.

Boston.
Cambridge, Mass.
Boston.
New Haven.
Philadelphia.
Windsor, Vt.
Princeton, N. J.
Boston.
Princeton, N. J.
New Haven.
New York.

Boston.

Benares, India. Charlottesville, Va. New York.

New York.
Charlottesville, Va.
East Cambridge, Mass.
Albany.
Boston.
Middletown, Ct.
Boston.

Washington.
New Haven.
Boston.
Cambridge, Mass.
Columbia, S. C.
Providence.

China.
Burlington, Vt.
Rochester, N. Y.
South Amherst, Mass.
Charleston, S. C.
Newport, R. I.
Philadelphia.
New Haven.

LIST OF THE MEMBERS

OF THE

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY.

CORRECTED TO OCTOBER, 1856.

CORPORATE MEMBERS.

EERA ABBOTT, Jr., Prof. G. J. ADLER, Rev. WILLIAM R. ALGER. Dr. HENRY J. ANDERSON, Rev. Dr. RUFUS ANDERSON, Prof. ETHAN A. ANDREWS, Prof. A. N. ARNOLD, Prof. E. P. BARBOWS, JOHN R. BARTLETT. Prof. CHARLES BECK. Rev. HIRAM BINGHAM. Rev. SAMUEL R. BROWN, ELIHU BURRITT. Rev. J. F. CLARKE. Dr. Joseph G. Cogswell, ALEXANDER I. COTHEAL. Prof. ALPHRUS CROSSY, Prof. HOWARD CROSSY, Hon. CALEB CUSHING. Prof. GEORGE E. DAY. EPES S. DIXWELL SAMUEL F. DUNLAP. *PETER S. DUPONCEAU, *Rev. Dr. BELA B. EDWARDS, Prof. Romeo Elton. *Hon. ALEXANDER H. EVEREIT, Cambridge, Mass.
New York.
Boston.
New York.
Boston.
New Britain, Ct.
Newton Centre, Mass.
Andover, Mass.

Cambridge, Mass. New Haven. Owasco, N. Y. Worcester, Mass. Roxbury, Mass. New York.

Newburyport, Mass. New York. Washington. Cincinnati. Cambridge, Mass. New York. Philadelphia. Andover, Mass. Exeter, England. Boston. AND STREET PROPERTY OF THE PRO NO DESCRIPTION OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY The second secon Mr. Cotheal, of New York, spoke of a forthcoming and now nearly completed edition of the Makamat of Hariri, with notes, by the Sheikh Nasif el-Yazijy.

Dr. M. C. White, of New Haven, exhibited specimens of Chinese native lexica, and explained their method and character.

NEW MEMBERS.

The following members have been added to the Society since the last notice of new members was published.

1. Corporate Members.

Prof. E. P. Barrows, of Andover, Mass, Rev. Convers Francis, D.D., of Cambridge, Mass. Rev. W. H. McIlvaine, D.D., of Rochester, N. Y. Mr. W. A. Reynolds, Jr., of New Haven. Dr. Joseph Wilson, Jr., of the U. S. Navy.

Corresponding Members.
 Dr. S. R. House, of Bangkok, Siam.

62 ...

A Semi-annual Meeting was held in New Haven, on the 8th and 9th of October, 1856. The President was absent, and the chair was taken by Rev. Pres. Woolsey, the only Vice-President present.

The following communications were made to the Society, after the reading of the correspondence of the past five months:

- On the Varieties of Human Language, as illustrated and exemplified by characteristic specimens of single languages of different families; by Prof. Gibbs, of New Haven.
- Contributions from the Atharva-Veda to the Theory of Sanskrit Verbal Accent; by Prof. Whitney, of New Haven.
- Was Publius Sulpicius Quirinius Praeses of Syria more than once? being in the main an abstract of A. W. Zumpt's discussion of the question in the second volume of his Commentationes Epigraphicae; with a notice of its bearing upon the authenticity of Luke ii. 2; by Rev. Pres. Woolsey, of New Haven.
- On Hindû Astronomy, being a translation from the Sanskrit of the Sûrya-Siddhânta, with an introduction and notes, and a history of the science in India; by Rev. E. Burgess, formerly Missionary in India, now of Centreville, Mass.
- On the History of the Ionians prior to the Ionian Migration, being an abstract and critical examination of the views of Prof. Ernst Curtius, of Berlin, as given in his work Die Ionier vor der Ionischen Wanderung; by Prof. Hadley, of New Haven.
- Leisure Moments in Hebrew Grammar; a discussion of a few difficult points in the exegesis of the Old Testament, and the grammar of the Hebrew; by Prof. W. Henry Green, of Princeton: presented by Prof. Gibbs.
- Translations of two Hebrew documents, the one an account, by R. Eliezer ben Nathan, of the sufferings of the Rhine Jews from Christian bigotry at the time of the first Crusade; the other a letter to the German Jews, from Isaac of France, advising them to emigrate to the East; by Prof. W. Henry Green, of Princeton; presented and read in part by Prof. Whitney.
- On the Mongol, or Turanian, Family of Languages and Nations, by Prof. Whitney.

An Annual Meeting was held in Boston, on the 14th of May, 1856. In the absence of the President, the Society was called to order by the Rev. Dr. Jenks, Vice-President, who then resigned the chair to the Rev. Dr. Anderson.

After the transaction of preliminary business, and the reading of correspondence, the following persons were chosen officers of the Society for 1856-57:

Rev. Dr. E. Robinson	of	New York.
Rev. Dr. W. Jenks	4	Boston.
Rev. Pres. T. D. Wools	ey	of New Haven.
Prof. C. Beck	of	Cambridge.
" E. E. Salisbury	41	New Haven.
, " James Hadley	4	a contract of the
Mr. Ezra Abbott, Jr.	4	Cambridge.
a a	4	4
Prof. W. D. Whitney	144	New Haven.
Rev. Dr. R. Anderson	64	Boston.
Prof. C. C. Felton	44	Cambridge.
Rev. T. Parker	- 46	Boston.
	4	THE PART OF
	u	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
	Rev. Dr. W. Jenks Rev. Pres. T. D. Wools Prof. C. Beck E. E. Salisbury Mr. Ezra Abbott, Jr. Prof. W. D. Whitney Rev. Dr. R. Anderson Prof. C. C. Felton Rev. T. Parker Dr. C. Pickering	Rev. Pres. T. D. Woolsey Prof. C. Beck "E. E. Salisbury "A James Hadley Mr. Ezra Abbott, Jr. "Prof. W. D. Whitney Rev. Dr. R. Anderson Prof. C. C. Felton Rev. T. Parker Dr. C. Pickering "A Woolsey "A

On recommendation of the Board of Directors, article VII of the Constitution was amended to read:

The Secretaries, Treasurer, and Librarian shall be ex officio members of the Board of Directors, etc.

Rev. W. R. Alger read to the Society specimens of Oriental poetry, rendered into verse by himself, from various translations.

Rev. Dr. Anderson spoke with regard to his recent journey to India.

Rev. Mr. Treat exhibited and remarked upon a copy of the Polyglotta Africana. 3rd. Persons not members shall also, on special grounds, and at the discretion of the Librarian, be allowed to take and use the Society's books, upon depositing with the Librarian a sufficient security that they shall be duly returned in good condition, or their loss or damage fully compensated.

This report was, upon motion, accepted, and the rules proposed by the Committee were adopted.

The following papers were presented:

On the root PRACH in Greek (in the word Deomponos); by Prof. James Hadley, of New Haven.

On the Philosophy of Buddhism; by Rev. Francis Mason, of Burmah.

On Oriental Poetry; by Rev. W. R. Alger, of Boston.

On Archaeological Researches in the Acropolis of Athens, being a translation of a paper by K. S. Pittakys, Secretary of the Archaeological Society of Athens; by Prof. A. N. Arnold, of Newton.

On Chinese Literature, being an abstract of Prof. Wilhelm Schott's Sketch of a Description of the Chinese Literature, Berlin, 1854; by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

Prof. Salisbury, of New Haven, spoke with regard to the disposition which had been made upon the Phenician monument of Sidon, and the present condition of the work of deciphering the inscription upon it.

Dr. S. R. House, of Bangkok, Siam, presented a Map of the Siamese rivers, plotted from actual surveys made by himself, and exhibited various Siamese documents, pictures, and curiosities, with explanatory remarks respecting them, and with statements concerning manners and conditions in Siam.

The Board of Directors proposed the following Bye-Law, which was unanimously adopted:

If any Corporate Member shall for two years fail to pay his assessments, his name may, at the discretion of the Directors, be dropped from the list of Members of the Society. Fresh son 'Histoire do la Médecine Relge avant le XIXme Elecia, e par C. Broeckx. . . . Gand, Bruxelles, et Mone : 1882. Svoc.
Let of works printed by, and it preparation for, the Criscotal Translation Fund of Great Science and Iraland. Svo. pp. 16. Teopies.
The Museum. A Catalogue research of rare, saturable, and currous books, offered, ..., he described Constant. Landon: 1886. See

SELECT MINUTES OF MEETINGS OF THE SOCIETY.

A Semi-annual Meeting was held in New Haven, on the 17th and 18th of October, 1855. The President, Rev. Dr. Robinson, in the chair.

The Librarian reported, on behalf of the Library Committee, that, in accor lance with the vote of the Society at the last Annual Meeting, its Library and Cabinet had been removed to New Haven, and deposited in the rooms of the Library of Yale College; and that such progress as the time permitted had been made in the work of arranging, cataloguing, and labelling the books. They farther reported the following Rules for the Management of the Library, viz:

1st. The Library, in its place of deposit, shall be accessible for consultation to all Members of the Society, at such times as the Library of Yale College, with which it is deposited, shall be open for a similar purpose; farther, to such other persons as shall receive the permission of the Librarian, or of the Librarian, or Assistant Librarian, of Yale College.

2nd. Members of the Society shall be allowed to draw and remove books from the Library under the following conditions, to wit: the person receiving such books shall give his receipt for them to the Librarian, pledging himself to make good any detriment the Library may suffer from their loss or injury, the amount of said detriment being in every case to be estimated and determined by the Librarian, with the assistance of the President, or of one of the Vice-Presidents; and he shall return such books within a time not exceeding three weeks from their reception, unless by special agreement and assent of the Librarian the term shall be extended.

VOL. V.

xxxviii

Essai sur l'Histoire de la Médecine Belge avant le XIX^{me} Siecle, par C. Broeckx Gand, Bruxelles, et Mons : 1837. 8vo.

List of works printed by, and in preparation for, the Oriental Translation Fund of Great Britain and Ireland. 8vo, pp. 16. 2 copies.

The Museum. A Catalogue raisonné of rare, valuable, and curious books, offered . . . by Bernhard Quaritch. London: 1855. 8vo, pp. 32.

Various German catalogues of antiquarian books.

A parcel of copper coins: three antique, with Cufic inscriptions; one of Shah Alum Beg; the rest recent coinage of British India, the Dutch Possessions, and a Malay state. Also, a parcel of Chinese cash.

WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, Librarian.

Esop's Fables, written in Chinese by the learned Mun Mooy Seen-Shang, and compiled in the present form (with a free and a literal translation) by his pupil Sloth [Robert Thom, Esq.] Canton: 1840. Folio.

A Peep at China, in Mr. Dunn's Chinese Collection; with miscellaneous notices relating to the institutions and customs of the Chinese, and our commercial intercourse with them. By E. C. Wines. Philadelphia; 1839. 8vo, pp. vi. 103.

First Annual Report of the Morrison Education Society: read 27th

Sept. 1837. Canton: 1837. 8vo, pp. 29.

Proceedings relative to the formation of a Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge in China. Canton: 1835. 8vo. pp. 13.

A slip from the office of the North-China Herald, containing a reprint of an article in the London Athenaum, No. 1218, for March 1st, 1851, on the word to be employed in Chinese for expressing the Christian idea of God. Shanghae: 1851.

A native Chinese Almanac, for the 26th year of Tao-Kwang (A. D.

1846). 8vo size.

A Chinese Tract, The Two Friends, by Rev. Wm. Milne, D. D. Hong-Kong: 1844. 8vo size.

A Chinese Tract, The Different Deaths of Good and Bad Men.

Hong-Kong: 1844. 12mo size.

A Chinese Tract, The Birth of Teen-How, Queen of Heaven, by

Rev. W. Medhurst, D. D. Svo size.

Buddhist pictorial description of the Brahmin and Nat countries; of Meynmo mountain, its lakes and rivers; of the four great islands or continents; of the sixteen countries where Gaudama appeared; of the inferior states of being below man; and of the states of punishment still lower down, under Meynmo mountain. On 60 double strips of palm leaf, each 2½ by 20 inches. Burman.

A Burman tract, containing a Catechism of Religion, etc. Maulmein:

1836. Svo.

A Burman tract, the Investigator, by Rev. Mr. Wade. 12mo, pp. 24. Brahmunical Magazine. The Missionary and the Brahmun, No. 2. Serampore: 1821. 8vo. Bengali and English.

The Gospel Magazine [Monthly periodical, in Bengall and English].

Nos. 7-12. June-November, 1820. Calcutta. 8vo.

Samacara-Darpana. [A Bengali newspaper, 5th No., for June 20, 1818.] Calcutta. Folio, pp. 4. 2 copies.

A Sheet, 20 by 15 inches, giving in large characters the Bengali

alphabet and numerals, 3 copies.

Alubb el-Khabr el-Aujedy wa el Bahr ez-Zakhir el-Elma'iy. A collection of traditionary accounts respecting the life and character of the Prophet Mohammed; with commentary in margin. By Abû 'Îsa Mohammed . . et-Tirmidhy. Constantinople. A. H. 1264. Svo size, pp. 128. Lithographed.

Five silver coins, one of Alexander the Great, one of the Seleucide Philip, son of Antiochus VIII. one of the Parthian king Bolagasus, one of the Persian monarch Sapor I. and one of the Ommeide Khâlif Wâlid Ben 'Abd-el-Malek. (See above, p. 270.)

Two little gems, Assyrian relics, the one an opal, plain, the other an

amethyst, with the figure of a lion engraved upon it.

By Rev. D. B. McCartee, M. D., of Ningpo.

Two impressions from the face of the Nestorian monument of Singan fu; about 66 by 33 inches each. (See above, p. 260.)

Two copies of a tract attributed to Lao-tse, lithographed from the manuscript of Commissioner Lin. 8vo size, pp. 6. (See above, p. 261.)

By Rev. J. Perkins, D. D., of Oroomiah.

Anonymous letter in Persian, to Rev. Dr. Perkins, on linen cloth, in green ink. (See this Journal, vol. iii. p. 211.)

By Hon. J. Pickering.

A Catalogue of Arabic, Turkish and Persian Manuscripts. The private collection of Wm. B. Hodgson. Washington: 1830. 12mo, pp. 10.

By the Smithsonian Institution.

Vocabulary of the Jargon, or Trade Language of Oregon. Washington: 1853. 8vo, pp. 24.

By Wm. C. Waters, Esq.

Specimen page of Marathi, Guzerati, and Zend characters, with another page of remarks upon them. 8vo.

By Rev. A. H. Wright, of Oroomiah.

Three leaves, covered with Arabic characters, disposed in the form of stars, written by the Persian religious impostor Bab, while imprisoned at Charee.

By Unknown Donors.

The Chinese Repository. [A monthly Journal.] Vols. 1, 1v, v, vt, 1x, complete; Vol. 111. 9-12; Vol. vii. 1-8; Vol. viii. 7-12; Vol. x. 1-4; Vol. xi. 5-7, 9, 10; and duplicates of 1. 5, 111. 12, 1v. 2, viii. 7. Canton; 1832-1842, 8vo.

iv. 2, viii. 7. Canton; 1832-1842. 8vo. The Indo-Chinese Gleaner. [A quarterly Journal]. Nos. v-x. xiii.

xiv. xvii. xviii. Malacca: 1818-1821. 8vo.

The following Additions to the Library and Cabinet should have been earlier acknowledged. A few of them were passed over by mistake a year since; but the greater part are of earlier date, having been found in the possession of the Society, unacknowledged, upon a recent thorough examination of its property.

By Rev. Cephas Bennett, of Tavoy.

A View of Ecclesiastical History, prepared for the use of the higher Karen schools, and the teachers and pastors of the Karen churches. By E. B. Cross. Vol. I. From the Birth of Christ, to the Reign of Constantine. Tavoy: 1851. 12mo.

By Hon, C. W. Bradley, of Singapore.

A Chinese Map of the World and of China. Peking: 1672. 54 by 29 inches.

By the Committee on the Library.

Report of the Committee on the Library [Boston], in relation to the donations received from the City of Paris, Boston; 1849. Svo, pp. 72.

By W. W. Greenough, Esq.

Geographical Sketch of the Indian Archipelago, 1833. 8vo size.

By Rev. Dr. Lang.

Freedom and Independence for the Golden Lands of Australia; the Right of the Colonies, and the Interest of Britain and of the World. By John Dunmore Lang, D. D., etc. London: 1852. 12mo.

By the late Rev. Henry Lobdell, M. D., of Mosul.

Arabic Manuscript, containing a Genealogy of the family of Adam and Abraham, and a list of the Pashas of Mosul, since A. H. 1000. 4to size, pp. 16.

A manuscript Hebrew Prayer, from the tomb of Nahum, at Al-Kosh, near Mosul, such as pilgrims to the tomb are used to affix to the walls of it.

A bouyourouldou and teskersh or permit and pass, from the Turkish authorities to Dr. Lobdell, for the journey from Mosul to Diarbekr.

Two Assyrian cylinders, one of red jasper, the other of bluish chalcedony, engraved with emblematic devices. (See above, p. 191.)

want blood By the Royal University of Christiania, awallol and

Norsk og Keltisk. Om det Norske og de Keltiske Sprogs indbyrdes Laan. Af C. A. Holmboe, etc. Christiania: 1854. 4to, pp. 25. Das chemische Laboratorium der Universität Christiania, . . . etc., herausgegeben von Adolph Strecker, etc. Christiania: 1854. 4to. Index Scholarum in Universitate regia Fredericiana . . . anno 1854 . . . habendarum. Christiania: 1854. 4to, pp. 16.

Syphilizationen studeret ved Sygesengen. Af Wilhelm Boeck, etc.

Christiania: 1854. 8vo.

By Rev. E. Webb, of Dindigal.

Remarks on some lately-discovered Roman Gold Coins. By Capt.

Drury s. l. and s. a. 8vo, pp. 17.

A Description of Roman Imperial Aurei found near Calicut on the Malabar Coast, and now in the possession of his Highness the Rajah of Travancore. By the Rev. R. Caldwell, B. A., of Tinnevelly. Trevandrum: 1851. 8vo.

By Prof. Albrecht Weber, of Berlin.

Ueber den Semitischen Ursprung des Indischen Alphabetes. Von Dr. A. Weber. [Extract from the Zeitsch. d. Deutsch. Morg. Gesellsch. vol. x.] [Leipzig: 1856.] 8vo, pp. 18.

Målavikå und Agnimitra. Ein Drama des Kälidåsa in fünf Akten.
Zum ersten Male aus dem Sanskrit übersetzt von Albrecht Weber.

Berlin: 1856. 16mo.

By Rev. M. C. White, M. D.

The Chinese Language spoken at Fuh-Chau. By Rev. M. C. White, M. D. [pp. 352-381 of the Methodist Quarterly Review.] [New York:] 1856. 8vo, pp. 32. (5 copies.)

By Prof. W. D. Whitney.

A Review of Dr. Colenso's Remarks on Polygamy, as found existing in Converts from Heathenism. By the Rev. H. A. Wilder, American Missionary. Reprinted from the Natal Star. Durban: 1856. 8vo, pp. 42.

By Rev. John Wilson, D. D. of Bombay.

History of the Suppression of Infanticide in Western India under the Government of Bombay; including notices of the provinces and tribes in which the practice has prevailed. By Rev. John Wilson, D. D., etc. Bombay: 1855. 8vo.

By William Winthrop, Esq., of Malta.

A large roll of old naval charts, of various seas and coasts.

By Mons. L. Léon de Romy.

Notice sur le Thuja de Barbarie [Callitris Quadrivalvis], et sur quelques autres arbres de l'Afrique boiéale. Par M. L. Léon de Rosny, etc. (Extrait du Bulletin de l'Algérie, etc.) Paris et Alger: 1856, 8vo, pp. 19.

Quelques Observations sur la Langue Siamoise, et sur son Écriture, par M. L. Léon de Rosny, etc. (Extrait du Journal Asiat-

ique.) Paris: 1855. 8vo, pp. 16,

By Prof. E. E. Salisbury.

Asiatick Researches: etc. Printed verbatim from the Calcutta edition. Vols. i-vi. London: 1801. 8vo.

By George R. Sampson, Esq.

A copy of Keying's petition for the toleration of the Christian religion in China. Gilt characters, on scarlet satin, mounted on brocade, 72 by 281 inches, on rollers.

A diploma of office, in Chinese and Manchu. 121 by 102 inches,

on rollers.

By Mr. Chr. D. Seropyan.

Modern Armenian Manuscript; copy of a poem recited by the pupils of the Armenian High School, at Hasköy, near Constantinople, at the Anniversary of the School, Feb. 26th, 1838. Folio. pp. 7.

By the Smithsonian Institution.

Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge. Vols. vii, viii. Washington: 1856. 4to.

Ninth Annual Report of the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, etc. Washington: 1855. 8vo.

By Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Oroomiah.

Sur les derniers Tremblements de Terre dans la Perse Septentrionale, etc., par M. Abich. [Extract from the Mélanges physiques et chimiques of the Imperial Academy of St. Petersburg.] 1855. 8vo, pp. 33.

Lettre de M. Khanykov à M. Dorn. [Communication des noms géographiques qui se trouvent mentionnés dans l'ouvrage de Narchahi.] [Extract from the Mélanges Asiatiques of the Imperial

Academy of St. Petersburg.] 1855. 8vo, pp. 20.

By Messrs. Trubner & Co., of London.

Catalogue of Books, chiefly in the Oriental Languages, constantly on sale by Trübner & Co., 12 Paternester Row. London: 1853. 8vo, pp. 40.

Book of the Treasure of Truths, respecting the Tradition of the Best of Creatures [i. e. Mohammed], by Al-Munawy. s. l. and s. a. incomplete: leaves 1-90, 9 by 6½ inches.

Book of the Qualities of the Prophet, and of his Dispositions and Actions, by At-Tirmidhy; a part of his collection of traditions entitled Aj-Jami', s. l. A. H. 1253. 44 leaves, 9 by 61 inches.

A work on the six cardinal doctrines of Mohammedanism, without title or name of author. s. l. and s. a. 8 leaves,

64 by 44 inches

Book of Proved Advantages and Shining Lights respecting the Kecitation of the Formula of Benediction of the Elect Prophet. s. l. and s. a. imperfect. 16 leaves, 84 by 64 inches.

Chapters 17-25 of the Koran. s. l. and s. a. 40 leaves, 83 by 6 inches.

A portion of the Koran. s. l. A. H. 1231. 23 leaves, 6 by 4 inches.

Extracts from the Koran, including chapters 67 and 76, followed by a prayer. s. l. and s. a. Written on 29 leaves of an American pocket account-book.

Fourteen manuscripts, and portions of manuscripts, containing

chiefly prayers or matter of a devotional character.

Sundry manuscripts, and manuscript fragments, of undefined character and insignificant value.

By the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions.

A Grammar of the Benga Language. By Rev. James L. Mackey. New York: 1855. 12mo, pp. 60.

By Rev. Edward Robinson, D. D.

Theologische Schriften der alten Aegypter, nach dem Turiner Papyrus zum ersten Male übersetzt. Nebst Erklärung der zweisprachigen Inschriften des Steins von Rosette, etc.... Von Dr. Gustav Seyffarth. Gotha: 1855. 8vo.

Grammatica Aegyptiaca. Erste Einleitung zum Uebersetzen altägyptischer Literaturwerke, nebst der Geschichte des Hieroglyphenschlüssels: von Dr. Gustav Seyffarth. Gotha: 1855. 8vo, pp.

xLVI, 120, and 92.

By Prof. E. Rödiger, of Halle.

Bemerkungen über die phonikische Inschrift eines am 19. Januar 1855 nahe bei Sidon getundenen Königs-Sarkophags. Von E. Rödiger. [Extract from the Zeitsch. d. Deutsch. Morg. Gesellsch. vol. ix.] [Leipzig: 1855.] 8vo, pp. 13. Fac-similes of the Hebrew Manuscripts, obtained at the Jewish Synagogue in K'ae-fung-foo. [Contains the 13th, 23d, 30th, and 47th Sections of the Law, or Exodus i. 1—vi. 1; xxxviii. 21—xl. 38. Leviticus xix. xx. Deut. xi. 26—xvi. 17.] Shanghae: 1851. Small 4to size, pp. 149. Xylographed.

By Prof. Richard Lepsius, of Berlin.

Standard Alphabet for reducing Unwritten Languages and Foreign Graphic Systems to a Uniform Orthography in European Letters. By Dr. Lepsius, etc. Recommended for adoption by the Church Missionary Society. London: 1855. 8vo, pp. 73.

By Mrs. E. Lock, of Calcutta.

The Ramayun; translated into Bengalee by Krittee-Bas. Book IL. 2nd edition. Serampore: 1830, 12mo.

The Indian Miscellany; being Selections from the Works of the best original Writers, both instructive and entertaining. Calcutta: 1843. 8vo.

By Mr. J. Long.

A Descriptive Catalogue of Bengali Works, containing a classified list of fourteen hundred Bengali books and pamphlets, which have issued from the press during the last sixty years, with occasional notices of the subjects, the price, and where printed. By J. Long. Calcutta: 1855. 12mo.

By the Madura Mission of the A. B. C. F. M.

The Tamil Quarterly Repository. i. 1, 2, 3, 4. ii. 1, 2. Madras: 1854-55. Royal 8vo. Tamil.

Tamil Hymns in English Metre Chants, consisting mostly of selections from the Sacred Scriptures adapted to appropriate music Sacred Lyrics: or Religious Odes in Tamil Metres. Adapted for Public Worship. Selected principally from the poetical compositions of Vadanaiagan, Tanjore. [Bound in one vol.] Madras: 1853. 8vo. Tamil.

Dr. Cogswell's Theological Class Book, in Tamil. Madras: 1852. 12mo.

By the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries.

Mémoires de la Société Royale des Antiquaires du Nord. 1845-49. Copenhague: 1852. 8vo.

By Dr. Charles Pickering.

Arabic Manuscripts, collected on the eastern coast of Africa, from Zanzibar to Mocha: viz.

A work on tradition, without title, by Al-Athary. s. l. and s. a. 30 leaves, 7½ by 5½ inches.

VOL. V.

By the German Oriental Society.

Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft . . . ix. 3, 4. x. 1, 2, 3. Leipzig: 1855-56. 8vo.

Indische Studien. . . . herausgegeben von Dr. Albrecht Weber, etc.

iii. 2, 3. Berlin: 1855. 8vo.

Veteris Testamenti Aethiopici Tomus Primus, sive Octateuchus Aethiopicus.... instr. Dr. August Dillman.... Fasc. Tertius. Lipsiae: 1855. Small 4to.

By Rev. L. Grout, of Umsunduzi, S. Africa.

A Letter to an American Missionary, from the Bishop of Natal. Natal: 1855. 8vo, pp. 70.

An Auswer to Dr. Colenso's "Letter" on Polygamy. By an American Missionary. Pietermaritzburg: 1856. 8vo, pp. 103.

By Prof. James Hadley.

A Reply to Bishop Colenso's "Remarks on the Proper Treatment of Cases of Polygamy, as found already existing in Converts from Heathenism." By an American Missionary. Pietermaritzburg: 1855. 8vo, pp. 56.

By Baron Hammer-Purgstall, of Vienna.

Geschichte Wassaf's. Persisch herausgegeben und deutsch übersetzt von Hammer-Purgstall. I Band. Wien: 1856. 4to, pp. x, 275 and 296.

By Prof. C. A. Holmboe, of Christiania.

Det Old-Norske Verbum, oplyst ved Sammenligning med Sanscrit og andre Sprog af Samme Æt. Af C. A. Holmboe, etc. Christiania: 1848. 4to. pp. iv. 34.

Norsk og Keltisk. Om det Norske og de Keltiske Sprogs indbyrdes Laan. Af C. A. Holmboe, etc. Christiania: 1854. 4to. pp. 25.

By Dr. S. R. House, of Bangkok.

Autograph letter of S. P. P. M. Mengkut, present King of Siam, to Dr. House, respecting a rain-guage; written in English.

By Rev. J. W. Johnson, of Hong-Kong.

Translation of the Ts'ing Wan K'e Mung, a Chinese Grammar of the Manchu Tartar Language; with introductory notes on Manchu Literature. [By A. Wylie.] Shanghae: 1855. 8vo. pp. ii. 1xxx, 314.

The Jews at K'ae-Fung-Foo: being a Narrative of a Mission of Inquiry, to the Jewish Synagogue at K'ae-Fung-Foo....: with an Introduction, by the Right Rev. Geo. Smith, D. D., Lord Bishop of Victoria. Shanghae: 1851. 8vo, pp. xii. 82.

By Prof. H. Brockhaus, of Leipzig.

Die Lieder des Hafiz. Persisch mit dem Commentare des Sudi herausg. von Hermann Brockhaus. Ersten Bandes Zweites Heft. Leipzig: 1854. Royal 8vo.

By John P. Brown, Esq., of Constantinople.

Hatti-Sherif, or Imperial Decree, of Abd-ul-Mejid, Sultan of Turkey, in favor of religious freedom in his dominions. [1856.] Two copies, one in Turkish and one in French.

By Dr. J. G. Cogswell.

Catalogue of Books in the Astor Library relating to the Languages and Literature of Asia, Africa, and the Oceanic Islands. New York: 1854. 8vo, pp. 424. Lithographed.

By the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

Information respecting the History, Condition and Prospects of the Indian Tribes of the United States. Collected and prepared... by Henry R. Schoolcraft, LL.D. Part V. Philadelphia: 1855. 4to.

By the Commissioner of Patents.

Report of the Commissioner of Patents for the Year 1854. Arts and Manufactures. 2 vols. Washington: 1855. 8vo.

By Richard Cull, Esq., of London.

Acoustics and Logic, in their application to reading aloud. A Lecture delivered in University Hall, Oct. 12, 1855. With an Appendix on the Clergyman's Sore Throat. By Richard Cull, etc. London: 1855. 8vo, pp. 20.

By the Ethnological Society of London.

Journal of the Ethnological Society of London. Vol. iv. London: 1856. 8vo.

The Regulations of the Ethnological Society of London. 1855. 8vo, pp. 15. (2 copies.)

List of the Ethnological Society of London. May 25th, 1855. 8vo,

pp. 7. (4 copies.)
Address to the Ethnological Society of London, delivered at the Annual Meeting of the 25th May, 1855, by John Conolly, etc., President. And a Sketch of the recent Progress of Ethnology, by Richard Cull, Honorary Secretary. London: [1855]. 8vo, pp. 45.

By the French Oriental Society.

Revue de l'Orient, de l'Algérie et des Colonies, Bulletin de la Société Orientale de France. . . . Dec. 1855. Paris, Royal 8vo. The Holy Bible, in Canarese. Joshua to II Chronicles. 8vo. Colossians to Revelations. 8vo.

Arabya Upanyasa. . . . [The Arabian Nights' Entertainments, translated from English into Bengali, by Nilamani Vasaka-kartrka.] Calcutta: çâka 1260 (A. D. 1844.) 8vo, pp. 576.

The Holy Bible, translated into the Hinduee language, by the Rev. William Rowley, Vol. ii. I Chronieles to Malachi.

Calcutta: 1834. 8vo.

The New Testament. . . . Altered from Martyn's Oordoo translation into the Hinduce language, by the Rev. William Rowley,

Calcutta: 1826. 8vo.

Bagh o Bahar, consisting of entertaining Tales in the Hindustani language, by Mir Amman of Dibli, etc. Third Edition . . . by Duncan Forbes, LL.D., etc. London: 1851. Royal 8vo, pp. iv.

257, (120).

The East India Gazetteer; containing particular descriptions of the empires, kingdoms . . . , etc. of Hindostan, and the adjacent countries, India beyond the Ganges, and the Eastern Archipelago; together with sketches of the manners, customs . . . , etc. of their various inhabitants. By Walter Hamilton. London: 1815. 8vo, pp. xv. 862.

Memoir of the Rev. C. T. E. Rhenius, comprising extracts from his Journal and Correspondence, with details of missionary proceedings in South India. By his Son. London: 1841. 8vo, pp. xii.

627.

Simplification des Langues Orientales, on Méthode nouvelle et facile d'apprendre les langues Arabe, Persane et Turque, avec des carac-tères Européens, Par C.-F. Volney. Paris : 3 (of Republic : A. D. 1795.) 8vo, pp. 136.

The Psalms of David, in Coptic and Arabic. London: 1826.

Small 4to.

The Four Gospels, in Coptic and Arabic. London: 1829. Small 4to. A w mlow-shade, of woven paper; Chinese manufacture,

A fan of Chinese manufacture, having upon one side a plan of the city of Canton.

An image of Osiris, ancient Egyptian, with hieroglyphic inscription: 101 inches high.

The bowl of a common Egyptian chibouk, or smoking-pipe.

Three silver dollars, of Chinese, Japanese, and Formosan coinage; all very rare.

A Siamese tical, of pure silver, worth sixty cents.

An eighth, a quarter, a half, and a whole Rupee, coinage of the East Indian Company.

A set of copper and small silver coins, the current money of modern Egypt

posted in the streets and on the walls of the city, January, 1856.

On red paper, 161 by 10 inches.

The Chinese War: an account of all the operations of the British forces, from the commencement to the treaty of Nanking. By Lieut. John Ouchterlony, etc. 2nd Edition. London: 1844. 8vo.

Elkitâb, etc. The Holy Bible, in High Malay, romanized. London:

1821. 8vo, pp. 1060 and 345.

Injil Alkudus, etc. The New Testament, in High Malay, Arabic character. Harlem: 1820. 8vo.

Kitab Alkudus, etc. The New Testament in Malay [dialect of the Straits]. Singapore: 1853. 8vo.

A letter, manuscript, in the Malay language, to the Sultan of Rhio.

The New Testament, in Javanese. 8vo, pp. 760, xvi.

" in Siamese; translated by Rev. J. T. Jones,

D. D. Bangkok: 1849-53. 12mo.

A sheet of Siamese, as specimen of a new fount of type, of large

size, made by J. H. Chandler. [Bangkok.]

The Hongkong Government Gazette. New Series. Vol. I. Nos. 51 and 52; containing the treaty between Great Britain and Siam, of April 18, 1855, and the supplement to that treaty, of May 13, 1856. Victoria: 1856. Folio, pp. 12.

A sheet containing the Singhalese alphabet, the single letters and

their various combinations.

Singhalese Spelling Book. . . . Colombo: 1856. 12mo, pp. 48.

"Reading Book. Part L . . . 1851. pp. 59. Part IL . . .

1852. pp. 113. Colombo. 12mo.

Singhalese Arithmetic, for the use of Native Schools. Part I. . . . Colombo: 1852. 12mo, pp. 36.

Singhalese Tracts:-

An Abridgement of the Church of England Liturgy, read by the Wesleyans. [Colombo]: 1853. 12mo, pp. 12.

Wesleyan Catechism. Colombo: 1851. 12mo, pp 23.

The Advantages of Devil Ceremonies. [Colombo]: 1851. 12mo, pp. 4.

The Holy Bible, translated into Singhalese. The Pentateuch and Joshua. Colombo: 1854. 12mo, pp. 579.

The History of Ceylon, from the earliest period to the present time. By John Pereira, etc. Colombo: 1853. 12mo. Singhalese.

A Pali Grammar, in Singhalese, on fifty strips of palm leaf, 14 by 13 inches.

Thirty-nine colored drawings, 13 by 16 inches, illustrating the superstitious ceremonies of the Singhalese; by a native artist.

A colored drawing, 104 by 16 in hes, by a native Singhalese artist, representing the figures symbolizing the Signs of the Zodiac.

Stories, in Tamil. 8vo.

By the Asiatic Society of Paris.

Journal Asiatique 5me Série, Tomes v. vi. Paris: 1855. 8vo.

By Rev. H. Ballantine, of Bombay.

Sacred Songs. . . . Published by the American Mission. Bombay: 1855. 8vo. Marāthi.

By Hon, N. P. Banks.

Message from the President of the United States to the two Houses of Congress at the commencement of the First Session of the Thirty-fourth Congress. Parts I, II, III. Washington: 1855. 3 vols. 8vo.

By the Batavian Society of Arts and Sciences.

Verhandelingen van het Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen. Deel xviii, xx, xxi, 1, xxi, 2. 1842–1847. 8vo. Deel xxii-xxv. 1849–1853. 4to. Batavia.

Tijdschrift voor Indische Taal-, Land-, en Volkenkunde. Uitgegeven door het Batav. Gen. van Kunsten en Wetenschappen, onder Redaktie van P. Bleeker, etc. Jaargang I, Aflevering 1-12, 1852-1854. Jaargang II, Aflevering 1-4, 1854. Batavia. 8vo.

By the Bombay Auxiliary Brit. and For. Bible Society.

Jubilee Commemoration at Bombay of the British and Foreign Bible Society, 21st Dec., 1853. Including a historical view of the translation and circulation of the Scriptures by the Bombay Auxiliary Society. Bombay: 1854. 8vo, pp. 92.

By the Bombay Branch of the Roy. As. Society.

Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society. Nos. xvi. xviii. xix. Bombay: 1852-54. 8vo.

By Sir John Bowring, of Hong-Kong.

A Letter on the Population of China. By Sir John Bowring. [Article L of Transactions of the China Branch of the Royal Assatic Society.] [Hong-Kong:] 1855. 8vo, pp. 16.

By Hon. Chas. W. Bradley, of Singapore.

The Chinese Repository. [A monthly Journal.] Vols. xi-xiii, xv-xviii. Canton: 1842-49. 7 vols. 8vo.

A General Index of Subjects contained in the twenty Volumes of the Chinese Repository; with an arranged list of the articles. Canton: 1851. 8vo, pp. clxviii.

A Manifesto issued by the Chinese of Canton, warning Dr. Peter Parker, U. S. Commissioner to China, not to come to that city;

ADDITIONS, Erc.

By the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Proceedings of the Amer. Ac. of Arts and Sciences. Vol. III, pp. 1-144. Boston: 1852-55. Svo.

By the Secretaries of the A. B. C. F. M.

Observations on the Fevers of the West Coast of Africa. By Henry

A. Ford, M. D. New York: 1856. 12mo, pp. 48.

Reports and Letters connected with special meetings of the Mahratta and Tamil Missions of the A. B. C. F. M., in Feb., Mar., Ap'l., May, and June, 1855. Also Reports of the Syrian Mission and of a Conference at Constantinople. [Printed at Bombay, Madras, Calcutta, and Boston: 1855-1856.] 8vo.

By Prof. A. N. Arnold.

Resumé des Actes de la Société Archéologique de Grèce. 2^{me} Edition. Athens: 1847. 8vo.

Actes de la douzième Réunion Générale de la Soc. Arch. de Grèce. Athens: 1848. 8vo, pp. 31.

Actes de la treizième Réunion Générale de la Soc. Arch. de Grèce. Athens: 1849. 8vo, pp. 37.

Organisme de la Soc. Arch. de Grèce. Athens: 1848, 8vo, pp. 16.

By the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland.

Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. xv. Part 2. London: 1855. 8vo.

Thirty-second Annual Report of the R. A. S. of G. B. and I. London: 1855. 8vo, pp. 16.

List of Members, Committees, etc., of the R. A. S. of G. B. and L.

London: 1855. 8vo, pp. 16.

Vestiges of Assyria. Sheet 1st. Ichnographic Sketch of the Remains of Ancient Nineveh, with the Enceinte of the modern Mosul. Sheet 2nd. Showing the positions and plan of the ancient cities of Nimrud and Selamiyeh. Sheet 3d. Map of the Country included in the angle formed by the River Tigris and the Upper Zab. From trigonometrical surveys made by order of the Government of India in . . . 1852, by Felix Jones, etc. . . , aided by J. M. Hyslop, etc. . . . Three sheets, 50 by 30 inches. London: 1855.

A DIDIMED NS, Era

Decree and the American American of their and Sciences, Dec. on the pa-

M. A. DONELL'S D. T. CO. A. A. L. S.

Characterist on the Force Palls West there of Africa. By Henry A. Frank M. D. New York of the Charactery on the New York of the Charactery on the New York of the New York of

men and turni Mannes of the at the C.M. in Fabruary Mary, Apr. May and the Spring Mannes of the Spring Mannes and the Spring Mannes and the Spring Mannes and the Spring Mannes and Mannes

By Prof. A. F. Armold,

Resource des Artes de la Société Archeologique de Gréce. 27º Edi-

Agree do la distinción bidución tiendrale de la Sociación de Crieco.

A los por la la companion de la companion de Crieco.

A los por la la companion de la companion de Crieco.

A los por la companion de la companion de Crieco.

A los por la companion de Crieco.

the manual de la Secretaria de research Administrativo de la propertie de la companya de la comp

Annal of the Reynl Annale Service When Marin and Indust.

J. Kener H. O. Vo. S. A. H. and Mark Street Street

where the state of the state of the forest of the nicher Momaterial and the state of the state of the nicher Momaterial and the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the state of the state of the state of the state
of the state of the sta

ADDITIONS

TO THE

LIBRARY AND CABINET

OF THE

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY,

SEPTEMBER, 1855-Остовев, 1856.

VOL. V.

By Unknown Donors.

An Address to the Alumni of the University of the City of New York June 28, 1853. By Prof. J. W. Draper, M. D. New York: 1853. 8vo, pp. 30.

An Address before the Association of the Alumni of the Univ. of the City of New York, June 28, 1852. By C. S. Henry, D. D. New

York: 1853. 8vo, pp. 27.

WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, Librarian.

The second secon

LIBRARY AND CO.

By Rev. S. J. Smith, of Bangkok.

Grammatica Linguae Thai, auctore D. J. Bapt. Pallegoix, etc. Bangkok: 1850. 4to.

Laws of Siam. Vol. i. Royal 8vo. Siamese.

The Gospel according to Matthew. Translated from the Greek; revised by S. Mattoon. Bangkok; 1853. 12mo, pp. 92. Siamese. The Gospel according to Mark. (As above.) 1851. pp. 71. The Gospel according to Luke. (As above.) 1854. pp. 96.

The Gospel according to John. (As above.) 1854. pp. 96.
The Gospel according to John. (As above.) 1851. pp. 88.

Acts, translated from the Greek by J. T. Jones, D. D. 3rd edition. Bangkok: 1853. 12mo, pp. 77. Siamese.

Romans. (As above.) pp. 78-110.

Siamese Tracts, by Rev. J. T. Jones, D.D. Bangkok: 1853. 12mo.

Book of Parables. 5th edition. pp. 48. Instructions of the Lord Jesus. 2nd edition. pp. 58. The Golden Balance. 4th edition. pp. 36.

By Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Oroomiah.

O Peremezhayushtshikhsya, etc. [Of the varying Changes of Level of the Caspian Sea.] By N. Khanikof. 8vo, pp. 87. Russian.

By M. Garcin de Tassy, of Paris.

Mémoire sur les Noms Propres et les Titres Musulmans. Par M. Garcin de Tassy. (Extr. de l'Année 1854 du Journ. As.) Paris: 1854. 8vo, pp. 93.

Les Femmes Poetes dans l'Inde. Par M. Garcin de Tassy. (Extr. de la Revue de l'Orient, etc., nro. de Mai 1854.) Paris : 1854. 8vo, pp. 10.

By Mr. H. W. Wales.

Kalidasa's Ring-Çakuntala. Herausgegeben, übersetzt, und mit Anmerkungen versehen, von Dr. Otto Boehtlingk, etc. Bonn: 1842. 8vo.

Franz Bopp über das Conjugationssystem der Sanskritsprache, etc. Herausgegeben . . . von Dr. K. I. Windischmann. Frankfort am Main: 1816. 8vo.

Elementa Persica. Edidit Georgius Rosen. Berloni: 1843. 16mo.

The Present State of the Cultivation of Oriental Literature. A Lecture... by Prof. H. H. Wilson. London: 1852. 8vo, pp. 25.

By Dr. J. Wilson, Jr., U. S. N.

Fourteen small books printed in Japan.

A Descriptive Catalogue of the Historical Manuscripts, in the Arabic and Persian Languages, preserved in the Library of the R. A. S. of G. B. and I. By Wm. H. Morley, etc. London: 1854. 8vo.

Essay on the Architecture of the Hindús. By Rám Ráz, etc. With ferty-eight Plates. London: 1834. 4to, pp. xiv. 64.

By the Royal Society of Northern Antiquarians.

Société Royale des Antiquares du Nord. Aperçu, etc., le premier

Janv., 1852. 8vo, pp. 8. (2 copies).

The Discovery of America by the Northmen, and The Connection of the Northmen with the East. [Brief sketches, by Prof. C. C.

Rafn.] 8vo, pp. 4. (4 copies).
Meddelelser angraende Evangeliets Udbredelse i China. Udgivet paa den chinesiske Missionsforenings Vegne af Chr. H. Kalkar, etc. Nos. 1-12. 1851-52. Kjöbenhavn. 8vo, pp. 96.

By Prof. E. E. Salisbury.

Nebzeh min Divân esh-Sheikh Nâşif el-Yâzijy, etc. [A portion of the poems of ——.] . . . Beirût : A. H. 1269 — A. D. 1853. 8vo. Catalogue des Livres Imprimés et Manuscrits composant la Bibliothèque de fen M. Eugène Burnouf. . . . Paris : 1854. 8vo.

Journal de Constantinople. 8me Année. Nos. 455, 462, 470, 577-

79, 586, 587. 1853 and 1855.

Courrier de Constantinople, 10 Sept., 6 Dec., 20 Dec., 1853, 10 Jan., 1854.

L'Impartial. Journal de Smyrne. 3me Année. Nos. 708, 721, 723. 1853.

Holisso Anumpa Tosholi. An English and Choctaw Definer. . . . By Cyrus Byington. New York: 1852. 12mo.

The Books of Joshua, Judges, and Ruth, translated into the Choctaw Language. . . . New York: 1852. 16mo.

The New Testament . . . translated into the Choctaw Language.

... New York: 1848. 12mo, pp. 818.
Vba Anumpa Mak, etc. A Book of Questions on the Gospel of Mark, in the Choctaw Language. . . . By Rev. Alfred Wright, etc. New York: 1852. 12mo.

Vba Anumpa Luk, etc. A Book of Questions on the Gospel of Luke, in the Choctaw Language. . . . By Rev. Alfred Wright,

etc. New York: 1852. 12mo.

By Mr. Chr. D. Seropyan.

Arphiagan Hahasdani, etc. [The Glories of Armenia, a poem, in Ancient Armenian, by Hohannes Merzayyan, of Van.] Ortaköy, near Constantinople: 1836. 8vo, pp. 640. Tseen-Me Tsing Jing S. [Hymn Book, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] Nying-po: 1851. 16mo size, pp. 24.

Se-lah teng Hæn-nah. [Story of Sarah and Hannah, in Ningpo Coll.,

romanized]. Nying po: 1852. 24mo size, pp. 12.

Sön-Fah. [First sheets of an Arithmetic, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] 8vo size, pp. 1-16.

Di-Li Shū, etc. [Geography and History, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] Parts i.-iv. (in three vols., three copies of Part iv.) Nying-

po: 1852. 8vo size, pp. 185.

Di-Gyiu Du, etc. [A Geography, in questions and answers, with maps; in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] Nying-po: 1853. Folio. A Geography, by R. I. Way, of the Presb. Mission, Ningpo. [Ning-po:] 1853. 8vo size. (2 copies.) Chinese.

Questions on Select Portions of Old Testament History; with a Bib-

lical Map. Ningpo: 1852. 8vo size. Chinese,

By the Patent Office.

Report of the Commissioner of Patents for the year 1853. Part i.

Arts and Manufactures. Washington: 1854. 8vo.

By Rev. J. Perkins, D. D., of Oroomiah.

Ancient Syrise MS., in the Nestorian character, of the History of Alexander; with a manuscript English translation, by Rev. J. Perkins, D. D.

The Persian Flower: a Memoir of Judith Grant Perkins, of Oroo-

miah, Persia. Boston: 1853. 12mo.

By Rev. Henry N. Rankin, of Ningpo.

Mô-t'æ Djūn Foh-ing Shū. [Gospel of Matthew, in Ningpo Colloquial, romanized; translated by Rev. W. P. Martin and Rev. W. A. Russell.] Nying-po: 1853. 8vo size.

Lu-kyūð Djun Foh-ing Shū. [Gospel of Luke, in Ningpo Coll., ro-

manized.] Nying-po: 1853. 8vo size.

Jah.'en Djün Foh-ing Shü. [Gospel of John, in Ningpo Coll., romanized; translated by Rev. Messrs. Martin and Russell.] Ningpo: 1853. 8vo size.

By Professors Roth and Whitney.

Atharva-Veda Sanhità. Herausgegeben von R. Roth und W. D. Whitney. Erste Abtheilung. [Text.] Berlin: 1855. 8vo.

By the Royal Asiatic Society.

The Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland. Vol. xvi. Part 1. London: 1854. 8vo.

Terjemeh-i-shesh mekâl, etc. [Persian version of Nasir-ed-din's Six Tracts of the Book of the Recognizance of Euclid.] Calcutta: 1824. 8vo.

A Collection of Maps (ten), explained in Persian. Oblong folio. El-muntakhabat el-arabiyyeh. The Arabic Reader, or Select Extracts from various Arabic Writers. Calcutta: 1828. 8vo.

Sitteh makalat min kitab tahrir el-Auklidis, etc. [Six Tracts of the Book of the Recognizance of Euclid, by Nasir-ed-din, of Tus.] Calcutta: 1824. 8vo.

Flora Burmanica, or a Catalogue of Plants, indigenous and cultivated, in the valleys of the Irawaddy, Salwen, and Tenasserim.... by Rev. Francis Mason. Tavoy: 1851. 12mo.

By Prof. Max Müller, of Oxford.

Suggestions for the assistance of Officers in learning the Languages of the Seat of War in the East. By Max Müller, M.A., etc. With an Ethnological Map, drawn by Augustus Petermann. London: 1854. 8vo.

Proposals for a Missionary Alphabet, submitted to the alphabetical conferences held at the residence of Chev. Bunsen in Jan., 1854. By Max Müller, M. A., etc. London: 1854. 8vo, pp. 53.

Letter to Chevalier Bunsen, on the Classification of the Turanian Languages; by Max Müller, M. A., etc. [London: 1854.] 8vo.

By Rev. J. Murdock, D.D.

Discoveries in Chinese, etc. . . . By Stephen Pearl Andrews. New York: 1854. 12mo.

By the Nestorian Mission of the A. B. C. F. M.

The Old Testament in the Ancient and Modern Syriac, the former the Peshito version, the latter a new translation from the Hebrew; in parallel columns. Oroomiah, Persia: 1853. 4to.

By the Ningpo Mission of the Board of For. Missions of the Presb. Church in the U. States.

A list of all the different Sounds in the Ningpo Colloquial, romanized. 8vo size, pp. 7.

Initials and finals of the Ningpo Colloquial, romanized. 1 p. folio size.

A Primer in Ningpo Colloquial, romanized. 8vo size, pp. 54.

Ih-Peng Shu etc. [Life of our Saviour in Ningro Coll

Ih-Peng Shu, etc. [Life of our Saviour, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] Nying-po: 1851. 8vo size.

Ts ing Tao, etc. [Rev. N. Hall's Tract: Come to Jesus, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] Nying-po: 1853. 12mo size, pp. 47.

Lu Hyiao-Ts. Nying-po: 1852. pp. 9. Ih-pe Tsiu. Nying-po: 1852. pp. 12. [Stories of Frank Lucas and the Cup of Wine, in Ningpo Coll., romanized.] In one vol. 16mo size. Tavarikh-i-Hind, etc. Marshman's History of India, translated into

Urdú. Calcutta: 1852, 12mo.

Tavarikh mutakaddimin o mutakhkherin kl, etc. [Ancient and Modern History, in Hindustani.] Calcutta: 1852. 12mo. Mufid-i-sibyan. Hindustáni Reader. Vol. i. . . . 1851. Vol. ii. . . .

1846. Vol. iii. . . . 1847. Calcutta, 12mo. Selections, Historical, Literary, and Scientific. Calcutta: 1845.

12mo, Hindustani,

Makasid-i-'ulum, etc. A Treatise on the Objects, Advantages, and Pleasures of Science, by Lord Brougham. Transl. into Urdu by Syed Mohomed Meer, etc. Calcutta: 1841. 12mo.

An Introduction to the Santal Language; consisting of a Grammar, Reading Lessons, and a Vocabulary. By Rev. J. Phillips. Calcutta: 1852. 16mo. (Bengali character.)

Santal Primer. . . . Calcutta: 1850. 12mo, pp. 24. (Bengall

Sequel to the Santal Primer. . . . Calcutta: 1850. 12mo, pp. 44. (Bengali character.)

A Primer of the Khasia Language. . . . Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 11. (Roman character.)

Introductory Lessons in Oriya, for the use of schools. 3rd edition,

improved Calcutta: 1838. 12mo, pp. 24. Neeti Cotha; or Fables in the Oriva Language, for the use of schools.

... Calcutta: 1832. 12mo, pp. 46.

Elements of Natural Philosophy, in a series of familiar dialogues. Vol. i. . . . Calcutta: 1840. 12mo. English and Oriya.

Elements of Natural Philosophy, designed for the Instruction of Indian Youth. Part i. . . 1830. Part ii. . . . 1832. Calcutta. 8vo. The Persian Primer, in three Parts: Elements, Accidence, and Fa-

bles. . . . Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 72. Persian. Kava'id-i-Farsi, etc. . . . or Rules in Persian Grammar. 3rd edition. Calcutta: 1853. 12mo, pp. 52. Persian.

Reáz-ul-Sanáih, or Garden of Arts: an abridgment of Persian rhetorie . . . by Mahá-Rájá Káli-Krishna Bahádur, etc. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo, pp. 80. Persian.

The Persian Reader; or Select Extracts from various Persian Writers. Vol. i. . . . 1824. Vol. ii. . . . 1824. Vol. iii. . . . 1825.

Tujnees ool Loghat, or Discrimination between Words similar in form, but different in meaning. 3rd edition. Calcutta: 1826.

8vo, pp. 14. Persian. Ifadeh-el-mubtedi, etc. Tálcelat of Mowluvee Hubban. Calcutta:

1820. 8vo, pp. 25. Persian.

Khulâşet-i-fahriset-i-nemăi, etc. A Summary Index to the Bengal Civil Code, . . . arranged by W. H. Trant, Esq., C. S., and Mowluvee Niamut Ulee, etc. Calcutta: 1820. 8vo. Persian.

Ganitanka pustaka. Arithmetic, for the use of Schools. By the late Rev. M. T. Adam. Revised edition. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo,

pp. 92. Hindi.

Bhasha lilavati. [An Arithmetic, in Hindi.] Calcutta: 1852, 12mo. Padårthavidvåsåra, etc. Elements of Natural Philosophy and Natural History, in a series of familiar dialogues. Calcutta: 1846. 12mo. Hindi.

Outlines of Geography and Astronomy and of the History of Hindustan. Extr. from Pearce's Geog., with intr. chapter by L. Wil-

kinson, etc. . . . Calcutta: 1840. 12mo. Hindi,

Bhugola darpana, etc. Geography, in question and answer. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo. Hindi.

Bharatavarshiya itihasa, etc. Marshman's History of India. Transl.

into Hindi. Calcutta: 1852, 12mo.

Upadeça katha, etc. Stewart's Historical Anecdotes, with a Sketch of the History of England, and her Connection with India. Transl. by Rev. W. T. Adam. Hinduwee. 2nd edition. Calcutta: 1837. 8vo, pp. 48.

A Treatise on the Benefits of Knowledge; etc. . . in Hindui. . . .

Calcutta: 1839. 12mo, pp. 29. Hindi kosha, etc. A Dictionary of the Hindee Language, compiled by Rev. M. T. Adam. Calcutta: 1839, 8vo. Hindi.

Kitāb-i-tahajji, etc. Hindustání Spelling-Book, in two Parts. Parts

i. ii. Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 99.

Kavā'id-i-zubān-i-urdū, etc. (Gilchrist's) Urdū Risālah, or Rules of Hindustani Grammar. Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 77.

Pleasing Stories in Urdú, for the use of Children. Calcutta: 1848.

12mo, pp. 24.

Fables in Urdú, for the use of Schools. Part i. 1848. Part ii. . . . 1852. Calcutta. 12mo, pp. 36, 35.

Larkun ka darpan, etc. Looking-glass for Children. Calcutta:

1846. 12mo, pp. 36. Hindustani.

Natural Philosophy-Mechanics. . . . Calcutta: 1843. 12mo. Usul 'ilm-i-hisab, etc. Elementary Treatise on Arithmetic, in Urdu; accommodated to the European system. Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 87. Hindustani,

Miftah al-aflak, etc. An Easy Introduction to Astronomy. Calcutta:

1846. 12mo. Hindustani.

Maps (twenty), illustrative of Miss Bird's Astronomy. Oblong 4to. (Explained in Hindustani.)

Avval jughrafiyah, etc. [An elementary Geography, in Hindustani.] Calcutta: 1853. 12mo, pp. 85.

Mirat al-akalim, etc. Geography, in question and answer. Calcutta: 1845. 12mo. Hindustant.

Safar nameh, etc. [Travels of Mungo Park, translated into Hindustani.] Calcutta: 1853. 12mo.

Pakshira vivarana. Ornithology. No. I. By Ram Chunder Mitler. Calcutta: 1844. 12mo, pp. 48. Bengali. Barna-Mala. [A Bengali Primer.] Part i. 7th edition. 1853.

(2 copies.) Part ii. 1846. Calcutta. 12mo, pp. 36, 56.

Níti Kathá, or Fables, in the Bengáli Language. First Part. 13th edition, 1852. Second Part. 8th edition, 1850. Third Part. 4th edition. 1851. Calcutta. 12mo, pp. 40, 36, 36.

Stricikshavidhayaka, etc. Hindu Female Education advocated from the examples of illustrious women, both ancient and modern,

Calcutta: 1851. 12mo, pp. 45. Bengalt.

Manoranjana itihasa, etc. Pleasing Tales, etc. Calcutta: 1850. 12mo, pp. 35. Bengáli.

Thakuradadara ushtravishayaka itihasa. [Stories of the camel.]

Calcutta: 1851. 8vo, pp. 8. Bengalt. Thakuradadara hastivishayaka itihasa. [Stories of the elephant.]

Calcutta: 1851. 8vo, pp. 8. Bengali.

A System of Logic; written in Sanscrit by the venerable sage Boodh, and expl. in a Sunse, comm. by the very learned Viswonath Turkaluncar. Transl. into Bengalee by Kashee Nath Turkopunchanun. . . . Calcutta: 1821. 8vo.

Elements of Natural Philosophy and Natural History, in a Series of Familiar Dialogues. Designed for the instruction of Indian Youth. By William Yates. 2nd edition. . . . Calcutta: 1834. 8vo.

Jyotirvidya. An Easy Introduction to Astronomy, for young persons. Composed by James Ferguson, F. R. S., and revised by David Brewster, LL.D. Transl. into Bengalee by William Yates. Calcutta: 1833. 8vo.

Pracina itihasa samuecaya. An Epitome of Ancient History, etc.

Calcutta: 1830. 8vo. Bengali.

The Abridgment of Dr. Goldsmith's History of Greece; transl. into Bengalee for the use of schools and private students. By Khettro Mohun Mookerjea. . . . Calcutta: 1833. 8vo.

Hindui Primer. . . . Calcutta: 1851. 12mo, pp. 12.

Hindi Spelling-Book. . . . Calcutta: 1851. 12mo, pp. 80.

Hindi bhashaka vyakarana. A Hindi Grammar, for the instruction of the young; in easy questions and answers. Calcutta: 1853. 12mo, pp. 68.

Niti Katha, or Fables, in the Hindui language, for the use of schools. 1st Part. . . . 1846. 2nd Part. 1845. Calcutta. 12mo, pp.

24, 18, Çiçubodhaka. Hindui Reader. Vol. i. . . . 3rd edition. 1851. Vol. ii. 1846. Vol. iii. 1838. Calcutta. 12mo.

Manoranjana itihasa. Pleasing Tales, etc. Calcutta: 1846. 12mo, pp. 23. Hindl.

VOL. V.

Hitopadeçah, etc. [The Hitopadeça, by Vishnu-Çarman.] Calcutta: 1851. 12mo. Sanskrit.

Lilâvati, etc. [An Arithmetic, by Bhâskara-Âcârya.] Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 84. Sanskrit.

Vijaganitam, etc. [An Algebra, by Bhaskara-Acarya.] Calcutta:

1853. 12mo. Sanskrit. Vyåkaranasårah, etc. A Grammar of th

Vyakaranasarah, etc. A Grammar of the Sanscrit Language, designed for the use of native students; by Madhub Chundur Pandit. Calcutta: 1824. 12mo. Bengáli.

Vangabhâshâvyâkarana, etc. A Grammar of the Bengáli Language, by Shri Braja Kishor Gupta. Calcutta: 1853. 12mo. Bengâli. Jâudiya vyâkarana. A Grammar of the Bengáli Language; by the late Rammohun Roy. Calcutta: 1851. 12mo. Bengâli.

Abhidhana, etc. Bengali Dictionary, for the use of schools. Cal-

cutta: 1853. 16mo. Bengali.

Sarasangrahah. Vernacular Class-Book Reader, for colleges and schools. Transl. into Bengali by the late Rev. Wm. Yates, D. D. 2nd edition, revised. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo.

Hitopadeça, etc. [The Hitopadeça of Vishnu-Çarman, transl. into

Bengali.] Calcutta: 1851. 12mo.

Vangadeçera purăvrtta, etc. Marshman's History of Bengal, in Bengali. Calcutta: 1853. 12mo.

Satya itihasasara, etc. Sketches of Celebrated Characters in Ancient

History. Calcutta: 1853. 12mo. Bengáli.

Paçvavali. Animal Biography; or Instructive and Entertaining Lessons respecting the Brute Creation; compiled by the late Rev. J. Lawson. Calcutta: 1852. 12mo. Bengali.

Bhūgola vrttānta. Geography, interspersed with information, historical and miscellaneous. By the late Rev. W. H. Pearce. Cal-

cutta: 1846. 12mo. Bengali.

Arithmetic, comprising the five fundamental Rules, with Tables, etc.
... illustrated by examples. For the use of Bengalee schools.
By J. Harle. . . . Calcutta: 1846. 12mo. Bengalt.

Bhumi parimana vidya. Elements of Land-surveying, on the An-

glo-Indian Plan. Calcutta: 1846. 12mo. Bengalt.

Anka pustaka. May's Ganita, being a collection of arithmetical tables, etc. Calcutta: 1852. 12mo, pp. 50. Bengali.

Patra-Kaumudi; or Book of Letters, etc. etc. . . . Calcutta: 1851. 12mo, pp. 88. Bengali.

Bengáli Primer. 12mo, pp. 12.

Introductory Bengáli Spelling-Book, with reading lessons. . . . 8th

edition. Calcutta: 1848. 12mo, pp. 24.

Vangabhashara vyakarana. A Grammar of the Bengali Language, adapted to the young, in easy questions and answers. By the late Rev. J. Keith. Calcutta: 1846. 12mo, pp. 59. Bengali. The Proverbs of Solomon, in Sanscrit. Calcutta: 1842. 12mo. The Book of the Prophet Isaiah, in Sanscrit. Calcutta: 1844. 12mo. The New Testament . . . in Sanscrit, Transl. . . . by the Cale. Bapt. Missionaries, with Native Assistants. 2nd edition. Calcutta: 1851. 8vo, pp. 700.

The Four Gospels with the Acts of the Apostles, in Sanscrit. Cal-

eutta: 1847. 8vo.

The New Testament . . . , in the Hindustani Language [Arabic character]. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries, with Native Assistants. Calcutta: 1844. 8vo, pp. 720.

____ the same. Calcutta: 1847. 8vo, pp. 613.

- the same. 6th edition. Calcutta: 1851. 12mo, pp. 536. The Four Gospels and the Acts, in Hindustant [Arabic character]. Transl. . . . by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries. Calcutta: 1846. 8vo.

--- the same. Calcutta: 1849. 12mo. - the same. Calcutta: 1850. 12mo.

The New Testament in the Hindi Language [Devanagari character]. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries, with Native Assistants. Calcutta: 1848. 8vo, pp. 643.

- the same . . Kaithi character. Calcutta: 1850. Svo, pp. 840. The Four Gospels with the Acts of the Apostles, in Kaithi. [pp.

1-475 of the preceding.] Calcutta: 1853. 8vo.

The Holy Bible . . . , in the Bengali Language. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt, Missionaries, with Native Assistants. Calcutta: 1845. Royal 8vo, pp. 1144.

---- the same. .. 2nd edition. Calcutta: 1852. pp. 812, 268. The Psalms of David, in Bengali. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries. Calcutta: 1848. 12mo. Isaiah and Daniel, in Bengáli. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt. Missiona-

aries. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo. The New Testament . . . in the Bengali Language. Transl. by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries, with Native Assistants. Calcutta: 1846.

Royal 8vo. --- the same. 8th edition. Calcutta: 1846. 12mo.

The Four Gospels with the Acts of the Apostles, in Bengali. Calcutta: 1849. 8vo.

The New Testament . . . translated . . . into Persian, at Sheeraz, by Rev. Henry Martyn, B. D., etc. . . . with the assistance of Meerza Suevid Alee, of Sheeraz. Calcutta: 1851. 8vo, pp. 719.

The Four Gospels and the Acts of the Apostles, in Persian. Calcutta: 1850. 8vo.

Sanskriamaladih. The Sanscrit Reader; or Easy Introduction to the Reading of the Sanscrit Language; by the late Rev. Wm. Yates, D. D. 2nd edition, enlarged. Calcutta: 1847. 12mo.

Siamese Slate Book, prepared for writing with a pencil, from Bangkok. Chinese and Foreign Gazette; by Dr. D. J. Macgowan. Nos. 1-3.

Ningpo: 1854. 8vo size, each 8 pp. Chinese.

String of Pearls, from Far and Near (a Chinese monthly periodical).

Vol. ii. Nos. 1-8 (in seven Nos.). 1854. 12mo size, each 24 to
32 pp.

Goddess of Mercy Classic. pp. 32. Chinese and Japanese.

A Japanese book, presented by a school-boy to an officer of the U.S. Expedition to Japan. 16mo size, pp. 27.

Two Japanese books, in the character used only by women. 12mo

size, pp. 8, 13.

Part of a Bali Grammar, on strips of Talipot palm-leaf. 33 strips, of 2½ by 21½ inches.

By Rev. Dr. Legge, of Hong-Kong.

The Notions of the Chinese concerning God and Spirits: with an examination of the Defense of an Essay on the Proper Rendering of the words Elohim and Theos, into the Chinese Language, by Wm. J. Boone, D. D., etc.; by the Rev. James Legge, D. D., etc. Hong Kong: 1852. 8vo.

By Lippincott, Grambo & Co., of Philadelphia.

Specimen of Lippincott, Grambo & Co.'s Complete Pronouncing Gazeteer of the World, etc. Philadelphia: 1853. Royal 8vo.

By Mr. J. Livingston.

A circular, Prospectus of a new edition of American Portrait Gallery, published by John Livingston, New York. 8vo, pp. 16.

By the late Rev. H. Lobdell, M. D., of Mosail.

Seven Arabic Tracts, mostly single leaves, published by the American Mission at Mosûl.

By Mrs. E. Locke, of Calcutta.

A Series of Rough Sketches of Oriental Heads. [Drawn from life and lithographed by Colesworthy Grant, Esq., of Calcutta.] No.

—. 3 plates and 2 lith. pages. Royal 8vo. Calcutta.

By Rev. Francis Mason, of Tavoy.

The Holy Bible, in the Sanscrit Language. Vol. i. containing the five books of Moses and the book of Joshua. Vol. ii. containing the hist, books, from Judges to Esther. Translated . . . by the Calcutta Baptist Missionaries, with Native Assistants. Calcutta: 1852. 8vo.

The Book of Genesis and part of Exodus, in Sanscrit. Translated by the Calc. Bapt. Missionaries. Calcutta: 1843. 12mo.

Dayûdrâjena krtâni gîtâni, etc. [The Psalms of David, in Sanskrit verse.] Calcutta: 1844. 12mo.

Das Kamel; von Dr. Freiherrn Hammer-Purgstall, etc. (Aus d. vi. B. d. D. d. phil.-hist, Cl. d. Kais, Acad. d. Wiss, bes, abged.)

Wien: 1854. 4to, pp. 84.

Ueber die Arabische Geographie von Spanien; von Dr. Freiherrn Hammer-Purgstall, etc. (Aus d. Dec.-Hefte d. J. 1854 d. S. d. phil-hist. Cl. d. Kais. Acad. d. Wiss. bes. abged.) Wein: 1854. 8vo, pp. 64. (2 copies.)

By Dr. S. Hernisz.

A Guide to Conversation in the English and Chinese Languages, for the use of Americans and Chinese in California and elsewhere. By Stanislas Hernisz, M. D., etc. Boston, Cleveland (Ohio), and London: 1854. Oblong 4to. (2 copies.)

By Rev. P. R. Hunt, of Madras.

The Tamil Quarterly Repository. Vol. i. No. 1, Jan. 1854. Royal 8vo, pp. 40. Tamil.

By the Imperial Academy of St. Petersburg.

Sanskrit-Wörterbuch, herausg. von der Kais. Acad. der Wissenschaften, bearb. von Otto Boehtlingk und Rudolph Roth. Bogen 21-St. Petersburg: 1854. 4to.

By the Imper. Publ. Libr. of St. Petersburg.

Catalogue des Manuscrits et Xylographes Orientaux de la Bibl. Imper. Publique de St. Petersbourg. St. Petersbourg: 1852.

By Rev. L. Jewett, of Nellore.

The History of Jesus Christ, etc. Madras: 1353. 12mo. Telugu.

By Rev. J. W. Johnson, of Hong-Kong.

Nine Siamese Tracts, from the A. M. A. Press, Bangkok, viz: The Miracles of Jesus. 4th edition. 1853. 12mo, pp. 82.

44 History of Elijah. Catechism on Prayer; by J. Caswell. 3rd edition. 1851. 12mo,

pp. 36. Dialogues on the Killing of Animals; by J. Caswell. 3rd edition. 1851. 12mo, pp. 35.

Old Testament History, etc.; by D. B. Bradley. 3rd edition.

1853. 12mo, pp. 50.

Bible History. 6th edition. 1853. 16mo, pp. 36. Instructions of the Lord Jesus; by Rev. J. T. Jones, D. D. 2nd

edition. 1853. 18mo, pp. 58.

The Golden Balance; by Rev. J. T. Jones, D. D. 4th edition.

1853. 18mo, pp. 36. Book of Parables; by Rev. J. T. Jones, D. D. 5th edition. 1853. 18mo, pp. 48.

By Mr. Erskine, son of the Author.

A History of India under the two first Sovereigns of the House of Taimur, Báber and Humáyun; by William Erskine, Esq., etc. In two volumes. Vols. i. ii. London: 1852. 8vo.

By the Ethnological Society of London.

Journal of the Ethnological Society of London. Vols. i. ii. iii. Lon-

don: 1848-54. 8vo.

A Manual of Ethnological Inquiry; being a series of questions concerning the human race, adapted for the use of travellers and others in studying the varieties of man. London: 1852.

8vo, pp. 15. (6 copies.)

Address to the Ethnological Society of London, . . . 26th May, 1854, by Sir B. C. Brodie, etc. Followed by a Sketch of the Recent Progress of Ethnology, by Richard Cull, etc. London. 8vo, pp. 25.

Probable Origin of the American Indians, with particular reference to that of the Caribs. A paper read before the Ethn. Soc., 15th March, 1854. By Jas. Kennedy, Esq., etc. London: 1854. 8vo, pp. 42.

By the German Oriental Society.

Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft . . . viii.

3, 4, ix. 1, 2. Leipzig: 1854-55. 8vo.

Veteris Testamenti Aethiopici Tomus Primus, sive Octateuchus Aethiopicus. . . . instr. Dr. August Dillman. . . . Fasc. Secundus. . . . Lipsiæ: 1854. sm. 4to.

By Mr. W. W. Greenough.

Prabodha Chandrodaya, Krishna Misri Comoedia. Sanskrite et Latine edidit Hermannus Brockhaus. Fasc. Prior, continens textum Sanscritum. Lipsize: 1855. 8vo.

Malay Tracts: Singapore: Am. Miss. Press. No. 2. Explanation of

the Ten Commandments. 1835. 8vo, pp. 28.

Modern Greek Tracts: Didaskalia Khristianikė. Smyrna: 1835.
12mo, pp. 12.

'Omilia para . . . N. Bamba. 'Ermoupolis: 1834. 12mo, pp. 10.

Eight odd Numbers of Turkish and Maltese Newspapers.

A sheet exhibiting a synoptical view of all the conjugations of the Hebrew verb.

By Rev. L. Grout, of Umsunduzi, S. Africa.

Incwadi ka Paule etc. . . . Epistle of Paul to the Romans. Port Natal: 1854. Svo, pp. 54. Zulu.

By Baron Hammer-Purgetall, of Vienna.

Literatur Geschichte der Araber, etc. . . . von Hammer-Purgstall. 2te Abtheilung. 5ter Bd. 6ter Bd. Wien: 1854-55. 4to. perimens of Japanese paper, of various qualities, and used for ring purposes, as for blowing the nose, for writing, and for wrap pecimen of the bark of the Broussonetia papyrifera, or Paper, alberry, of Japan; also, a specimen of paper-twine, made from the same.

A Japanese coin, called yen-to, value 1 mace or 100 cash, equal que dime in U.S. currency, bearing the name of the Emperor of Japan.

By Prof. H. Brockhaus, of Leipzig.

Die Lieder des Hafiz. Persich mit dem Commentare des Sudi herausg. von Hermann Brockhaus. Ersten Bandes erstes Heft. Leipzig: 1854. pp. xii. 72.

By Mr. John P. Brown, of Constantinople.

Original Firman by which Hussain Bey was appointed Ferrash, or Sweeper-out of the Holy Places of Mekka and Medina, with authority to appoint his lieutenant to do the same for him. Dated A. H. 1206, Rejeb 15th.

By the Canton Mission of the A. B. C. F. M.

Commentary on Genesis. 1851. 8vo size. Ohinese. The Four Gospels. do. do. Commentary on Matthew. 1848. do. Catechism of Scripture Doctrine. 1851. 12mo. do. Summary of Doctrine, in Trimeters. 1851. do. Hymns and Psalms. 1849. 8vo size. do. do. Jesus the True God. 16mo size. do. Crucifixion of Jesus. do. do. The New Birth. do. Dissuasive from Use of Opium. 12mo size. do. do. Christian Almanae, for 1852. 8vo size. Treatise on Astronomy. 1849. do. Treatise on Political Economy. 1847. do. Description of the United States. 1846. do. do.

All the above printed at the press of the A. B. C. F. M. in Canton.

By Prof. George E. Day.

Pauli Epistola ad Philemonem speciminis loco ad fidem versionum orientalium veterum una cum earum textu originali græce edita a Jul. Henr. Petermann, etc. Berolini: 1844. Metallo expressum in instituto lith. reg. 4to, pp. iv. 56.

By the Court of Directors of the Hon. East India Company.

A Catalogue of the Arabic, Persian, and Hindústány Manuscripts of the Libraries of the King of Oudh, compiled under the orders of the Government of India by A. Sprenger, M. D., etc. Vol. i. containing Persian and Hindústány Poetry. Calcutta: 1854. 8vo, pp. viii. 645. J hua, Judges, i. and ii. Samuel, i. and ii. Kings, i. and ii. Cl les. Karen. Royal 8vo.

, Nehemiah, Esther, Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, Song

lomon. Karen. Royal 8vo.

Jospels by Matthew and Mark, in Pwo Karen; translated from e Sgau by Karens, and revised by Rev. F. Mason, and D. L.

Brayton. . . . Tavoy : 1852. 12mo.

Questions on Matthew, with explanatory notes and practical remarks, in Pwo Karen; by D. L. Brayton. . . . Tavoy: 1852. 12mo.

Notes on the Epistle to the Hebrews, in Karen; by E. L. Abbott.

. . . . Tavoy: 1851. 12mo.

Thesaurus of Karen Knowledge forming a complete Native Karen Dictionary, with definitions and examples, illustrating the usages of every word. Written by Sau Kau-too, and compiled by J. Wade. Vol. iv. Tavoy: 1850. 12mo. (2 copies.)

Karen Calendar and Annual for 1849; by Rev. E. B. Cross. The same for 1850. The same for 1851. (All bound in one vol.)

Tavoy: 1848-50. 12mo.

Abbott's Arithmetic. . . . 2nd edition. Tavoy: 1852. 16mo, pp. 33. Karen.

The Catechism; by J. Wade. 5th edition. Tavoy: 1852. 16mo, pp. 16. Karen. (2 copies.)

The Child's Catechism, No. 2; by M. H. Brayton. Tavoy: 1852. 16mo. Karen.

The Elders. . . . By F. Mason. . . . 3d edition. Tavoy: 1852. 16mo. Karen.

A brief View of the Elements of Christianity, in Pwo Karen; by D. L. Brayton. Tavoy: 1852. 16mo, pp. 32.

Materia Medica and Pathology. [By Rev. F. Mason.] Tavoy: 1848.
16mo. Karen.

By the Bombay Br. of the Roy. As. Society.

The Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society. Edited by the Secretary. Nos. xvIII. xix. Bombay: 1853-54. 8vo.

By Hon. Charles W. Bradley, of Singapore.

The New Testament in Chinese. Translated from the Greek for the Am. and For. Bible Society, by J. Goddard. Ningpo; 1853, 8vo size. [Part 1st, containing the Gospels and Acts.]

A Key to Divination by the Bamboo. 8vo size. Chinese.

An Elementary Geography of China. do. do.

A Japanese illustrated book, with illuminated cover; brought from
Hakodadi by the U. S. Expedition to Japan. 12mo size, pp. 20.

A Japanese painting, representing the native idea of female beauty; brought from Samudi by the same.

ADDITIONS, ETC.

By the Am. Antiq. Society.

Proceedings of the American Antiquarian Society, in Boston, April 25, 1855. Boston: 1855. 8vo, pp. 36.

By the Armenian Mission of the A. B. C. F. M.

Old and New Testaments in Modern Armenian, with References. (Revised and edited by Rev. E. Riggs.) Smyrna: 1853. pp. 1175.

By the Asiatic Society of Bengal.

Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal. Edited by the Secretaries. No. ccxxxvii. (No. vi. 1853). Calcutta: 1853. 8vo. Bibliotheca Indica. Nos. 58-61. Calcutta: 1853.

No. 58. A Dictionary of the Technical Terms used in the Sciences of the Musalmans. Fasciculus 1st. 4to.

No. 59.... The Conquest of Syria, commonly ascribed to al-Waqidi. Fasciculus 1st. 8vo.

No. 60. Túsy's List of Shy'ah Books and 'Alam Alhodá's Notes on Shy'ah Biography. Fasciculus 1st. 8vo.

No. 61. A Biographical Dictionary of Persons who knew Mohammad, by Ibn Hajar. Fasciculus 1st. 8vo.

By the Asiatic Society of Paris.

Journal Asiatique 4me Série, Tome xx. 5me Série, Tomes i. ii. (2 copies) iii. iv. Paris: 1852-54. 8vo.

By Rev. Cephas Bennet, of Tavoy.

The Holy Bible, containing the Old and New Testaments, in Sgau Karen.... Translated by Francis Mason. Third edition. Tayoy. Karen Miss. Press: 1853. Royal 8vo.

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, in Sgau Karen. . . . Translated by Francis Mason. Third edition. Tavoy,

Karen Miss. Pres: 1853. Royal 8vo.

The Pentateuch . . . in Sgau Karen. . . . Translated by Rev. F. Mason. First edition. Tavoy, Karen Miss. Press: 1852. Royal 8vo. YOL. V.

EDERONAL VAN CAMINET

THE PROPERTY OF THE SAULETY.

ADDITIONS

TO THE

LIBRARY AND CABINET

OF THE

AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY,

August, 1854-August, 1855.

NEW MEMBERS.

The following gentlemen have become members of the Society since the publication of the last List of Members.

1. Corporate Members.

Rev. W. R. Alger, of Boston.

" A. N. Arnold, late Missionary in Greece.

J. F. Clarke, of Roxbury, Mass.

Mr. S. F. Dunlap, of New York.

Prof. W. H. Green, of Princeton, N. J.

Rev. A. L. Holladay, of Charlottesville, Va.

" F. W. Holland, of East Cambridge, Mass.

Mr. H. A. Homes, of Albany.

Rev. J. W. Miles, of Charleston, S. C.

Prof. Schele de Vere, of Charlottesville, Va.

2. Corresponding Members.

Rev. J. W. Johnson, Missionary in China.

Chevalier Khanikoff, Russian Consul-General at Tabriz.

*Rev. H. Lobdell, M. D., Missionary at Mosûl.

" D. J. Macgowan, M. D., Missionary in China. Prof. Max Müller, of Oxford. The officers of the last year were re-elected, with the exception that Prof. W. D. Whitney of New Haven was chosen Librarian in the place of Mr. Folsom, in consequence of the vote of the Society to remove the library.

The following papers were communicated:

A Report of what has been done in this country towards reading the Phonician Inscription discovered at Sidon in January, 1855; by Prof. E. E. Salisbury, of New Haven.

Communications on the subject, received from Prof. W. H. Green of Princeton, Rev. Dr. W. Jenks of Boston, and Mr. W. W. Turner of Washington, were submitted to the Society. Rev. Dr. Murdock of New Haven also expressed his views; and some remarks bearing on the date of the inscription were made by Dr. C. Pickering.

Letter from Rev. J. L. Porter of Damascus to Dr. Robinson, containing Greek Inscriptions. With Remarks on the Inscriptions, by Rev. Pres. Woolsey.

On the Topography and Antiquities of Cale-Syria North of Baalbek, being a portion of a forth-coming new volume of Biblical Researches; by Rev. Dr. Robinson, of New York.

On the Sanskrit Accent, being a review of a work recently published by Prof. Bopp of Berlin on the Sanskrit accent as compared with the Greek; by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

Observations on a Tour in Kurdistân; by the late Rev. H. Lobdell, M. D., Missionary at Mosûl.

Remarks upon Two Assyrian Cylinders received from Dr. Lobdell of Mosúl; by Prof. E. E. Salisbury, of New Haven.

Review of a "Guide to Conversation in the English and Chinese Languages" by Dr. Stanislas Hernisz; by Rev. M. C. White, Missionary in China.

Additional Remarks on the Division of Zulu Discourse into Words; by Rev. L. Grout, Missionary in S. Africa.

Some remarks were also made by Prof. Felton, of Cambridge, on the Present State of the Modern Greek Language and Literature.

Rev. B. J. Bettelheim, M. D., Missionary in the island of Loo-Choo, having been introduced to the Society, made some observations respecting the Japanese language and literature. The subject of a change in the amount of the assessment, annually levied upon members of the Society, being taken up, it was moved by Rev. Pres. Woolsey, seconded, discussed, and unanimously resolved: "That the members of the Society pay henceforth the sum of five dollars annually into its treasury, instead of two dollars as hitherto; and that the amount required to constitute a life-member, be seventy-five dollars,"

The condition of the library, and the expediency of its removal from its present place of deposit, having been brought to the notice of the Society by the Corr. Secr., the following resolution was offered by Dr. Beck, debated, and unanimously voted: "That it is the opinion of the meeting now assembled, that a removal of the library of the Society from Boston to New Haven would be, under the present circumstances, expedient and desirable; and that the subject be referred, for further consideration and decision, to the next meeting to be held in Boston."

An Annual Meeting was held in Boston, on the 23d and 24th of May, 1855. The President of the Society in the chair.

Prof. Whitney made a brief report in behalf of the committee on the library; and the subject of the removal of the library to New Haven was taken up. It was voted: "That the partial report made by the committee on the library be accepted, and the committee discharged." It was also voted, without dissent: "That the library of the Society be removed to New Haven." The Librarian, together with Professors Salisbury and Gibbs, were appointed to carry into effect the vote respecting the removal of the library, and to prepare rules for the use of the same, and a catalogue of the books; with authority to draw on the treasury for such funds as may be needed for these purposes.

On motion of Dr. Beck, it was voted: "That the thanks of the Society be communicated to Mr. Folsom for his faithful and useful services as Librarian during the period in which the library has been under his care in the Boston Athenæum."

SELECT MINUTES OF MEETINGS OF THE SOCIETY.

A Semi-Annual Meeting was held in New Haven, on the 18th and 19th of October, 1854. The President of the Society, Rev. Dr. Robinson, in the chair.

The following papers were communicated:

The Alchemy of Happiness by the Arabian Philosopher Mohammed Al-Ghazaly, translated from the Turkish with Notes; by Mr. Henry A. Homes, of the State Library, Albany.

On the Identification of the Site of Ancient Pella, being a portion of a forth-coming new volume of Biblical Researches; by Rev. Dr. Robinson, of New York.

On the Avesta, or the Zoroastrian Scriptures; by Prof. W. D. Whitney, of New Haven.

On the Armenian Version of the History of Alexander the Great, supplementary to a Paper on the Syrian Version;* by Rev. Pres. Woolsey, of New Haven.

On the Armenian Tradition as to the Resting-Place of Noah's Ark; by Rev. H. G. O. Dwight, Missionary in Turkey. With some remarks upon Mr. Dwight's paper, by Prof. J. W. Gibbs of New Haven.

A Table of Scripture Proper-Names with their Equivalents in Perso-Kurdish, with an accompanying letter on the character of the language of the Assyrian inscriptions; by Rev. H. Lobdell, M.D., Missionary at Mosul.

On the Alphabetic Representation of the Sandwich Island Languages; by Rev. H. Bingham, of New Haven.

The Corr. Secr. also read extracts from a letter of Chevalier Khanikoff, Russian Consul-General at Tabriz, to Baron von Humboldt, on the variations of the level of the Caspian Sea.

^{*} See Journ. Am. Or. Soc. vol. iv. pp. 357, ff.

COMMITTEE OF PUBLICATION

FOR 1855-1856.

EDWARD E. SALISBURY, JOSIAH W. GIBBS, CHARLES BECK, WILLIAM D. WHITNEY.

ISCELL	ANIES:	
L		Page.
	1. From a Letter from Rev. A. H. Wright, M. D., of Oramiah,	423
	2. From a Letter of Rev. W. M. Thomson to Dr. DeForest	425
	3. From a Letter from Prof. U. Lassen, of Bonn,	425
	4. From a Letter from Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Orûmiah,	426
215	5. From a Letter from W. W. Turner, Esq.,	426
11	. Ideas respecting an Alphabet suited to the Languages of	(f.A.
	Southern Africa, by Prof. C. A. Holmboe, of Christiania,	
	Norway,	427
Ш	. Notice of Die Ionier vor der Ionischen Wanderung von Ernst	
	Curtius, (by J. H.)	430
	A Fried of Market Philadelia of Tourish via Apartonia Africa	
	& More Laters from To Song! Fromas of Principle	
	A From Letter Jones to Machinest Letters are	
	The state of the s	
	S. From a folio from the E 1810S, of Discount, faile.	
750	the Front is Letter from Nov. Dr. A. Small, of Smeller	
	the President and the Postern Bulliage to Dis-	
	the state of the s	
	tricomers Bernstein Roman (or H. B. S.).	5
	A all of lot small or many constant on the A.	
	Want of son work of the son will be	
	the rate divines on the Second Supreme on the Zone	III TEA
	while Dominion by Kintsas D. Wintpart Probests of	
	Service of Tale College, Street, Probest of	
	The transfer and the Armen's Arme to the transfer of	VI and
	STATES OF THE STATES OF MATTER D. Matter, Lines and	
	OR THE REAL PROPERTY.	

	Fage.
2. Hernizz's Guide to Conversation in English and Chinese,	
and Andrews's Discoveries in Chinese, (by M. C. White,)	218
3. Roth and Whitney's Edition of the Atharva-Veda, (by	
E ÉS,	226
VL Phanician Inscription of Sidon, (by E. E. S.,)	227
VII. The Sidon Inscription, with a Translation and Notes, by Wil-	
liam W. Turner,	245
VIII, Extracts from Correspondence:	
1. From a Letter from Rev. D. T. Stoddard, of Orumiah,	259
2. From a Letter from Rev. D. B. McCartee, M. D., of Ningpo,	260
3. From a Letter from Rev. A. H. Wright, M. D., of Orûmiah,	262
4. From Letters from Rev. L. Grout, in S. Africa,	263
5. From a Letter from Rev. A. Bushnell, in Equatorial	
Africa,	264
6. From Letters from Rev. Dr. J. Perkins, of Orimiah,	265
7. From Letters from the late Rev. H. Lobdell, M. D., of	
Mosúl,	267
8. From a Letter from Rev. E. Webb, of Dindigal, India,	271
9. From a Letter from Rev. Dr. E. Smith, of Beirût,	272
10. From a Letter from Rev. F. Mason, Missionary in Bur-	
mah,	278
11. From a Letter from Prof. C. Lassen, of Bonn,	278
Supplementary Builliographical Notice, (by E. E. S.,)	274
ART. IL-ON THE NESTORIAN TABLET OF SE-GAN FOO, by Mr. A.	
WYLIE,	275
ART. III.—ON THE AVESTA, OR THE SACRED SCRUPTURES OF THE ZORO-	-
ASTRIAN RELIGION, by WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, Professor of	
Sanskrit in Yale College,	337
ART. IV.—CONTRIBUTIONS FROM THE ATHARVA-VEDA TO THE THEORY OF	1
SANSKRIT VERBAL ACCENT, by WILLIAM D. WHITNEY, Pro-	
fessor of Sanskrit in Yale College,	385
The second of th	ocu

CONTENTS

OF

FIFTH VOLUME.

	age.
SELECT MINUTES OF MEETINGS OF THE SOCIETY, i-iii, xxxix-:	
New Members, iv,	glitt
LIST OF MEMBERS, Corrected to October, 1856,	xlv
Additions to the Library and Cabinet, Aug. 1854—Aug. 1855, v- Sept. 1855—Oct. 1856, xxiii-xxi	xxii xviii
ART. L-GRAMMAR OF THE MODERN SYRIAC LANGUAGE, AS SPOKEN IN OROOMIAH, PERSIA, AND IN KOORDISTAN, by Rev. D. T. STODDARD, Missionary of the American Board in Persia,	1
Miscellanies:	
I. Letter from Rev. J. L. Porter of Damascus, containing Greek	
Inscriptions, with Pres. Woolsey's Remarks on the same,	183
II. Armenian Traditions about Mt. Ararat, (by Rev. H. G. O. Dwight,)	189
III. Remarks on two Assyrian Cylinders received from Mosúl, (by	
E. E. S.,)	191
IV. Vestiges of Buddhism in Micronesia, (by J. W. G.,)	194
V. Bibliographical Notices:	
1. Bopp's Comparative Accentuation of the Greek and Sans-	
krit Languages, (by W. D. W.,)	195

CINTRAL ARCHAEOLOGIGAD LIBRARY, NEW DELHI. Am. No. ... 2.4 5.05. Date 15- 10.56. 891.05 /J.A.O.S.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1856, by the AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY, in the Clork's Office of the District Court of Connecticut.

Avenues to the London are Course, Aug 1856-Aug 1856... v-and BUTTER-TOT BORE TO BEEN AND

I - GERRARY OF THE MORES STREET, LANGEST AS ESCHESS IN On owner, Printer and in Montanting by Rev. D. T. Services Ministracy of the American Board in Pering Co.

Later from Later L. Porter of Decounts continues Grand Convergence with New Yorkey's No. of the same, . . . 168

PRINTED BY E. HAYES, NEW HAVEN, CONN.

HIT

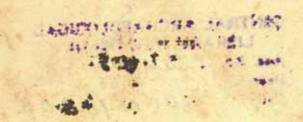
Illix FI

111 Bounded on the Angelias Collector recentlying Hopfollow

Some Companion Administration of the Great and Steam

Kappykal

JOURNAL



AMERICAN ORIENTAL SOCIETY.

24505

FIFTH VOLUME.

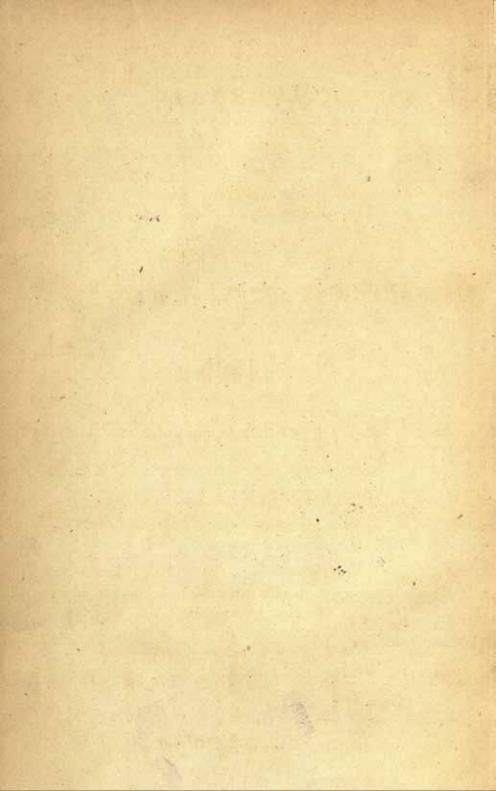
891.05 J.A:0.5.

NEW YORK:

PUBLISHED FOR THE SOCIETY

GEORGE P. PUTNAM & Co., 10 PARE PLACE.







GOVERNMENT OF INDIA

DEPARTMENT OF ARCHAEOLOGY

CENTRAL ARCHÆOLOGICAL LIBRARY

CALL NO. 891.05 / J.A.O.S. ACC. NO. 24505

D.G.A. 79. GIPN—S1—2D. G. Arch.N. D./57—25-9-58—1,00,000

BIBL. BEHTLINGK.

Và 99